A FRENCH GRAMMAR,

FOR THE USE OF

ENGLISH STUDENTS

DESIROUS

OF RAPIDLY ACQUIRING THE MEANS

OF SPEAKING

THE FRENCH LANGUAGE

WITH FLUENCY AND PURITY,

UPON AN ENTIRELY NEW PLAN.

By J. V. DOUVILLE,

Professor of the French Language.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

London:

PUBLISHED BY BOOSEY AND SONS, BROAD-STREET, EXCHANGE;

MARTIN BOSSANGE AND CO. GREAT MARLBOROUGH-STREET

AND 124, REGENT-STREET; AND BY THE AUTHOR,

2, LAWRENCE-LANE, CHEAPSIDE.

1824.

ENTERED AT STATIONERS' HALL.

MARCHANT, PRINTER, INGRAM-COURT, FENCHURCH-STREET.

INTRODUCTION.

The peculiar adaptation of the French language for the communication of our ideas, in familiar intercourse, has given it such intrinsic value in the estimation of all other European nations, that to the statesman, the merchant, and the frequenter of fashionable society, as well as to the traveller, and the student of polite literature, it has long been a language of indispensable necessity. As such, the exposition of its elementary principles has engaged more extensive and general investigation than, perhaps, any other language, either ancient or modern. But whether the writers upon this subject, who have devoted their labours to the proficiency of the English student, have failed in perceiving the direct course to their more immediate object, the *speaking* of the language, or whether they have purposely directed their attention to the more easy portion of their task, by applying themselves rather to make an Englishman well acquainted with the critical niceties of French authors, than to enable him to enter into conversation, and maintain a correspondence with French persons, is a question which I shall not here discuss; though it is from a conviction of such being the case, that the present

work has been undertaken: I shall rather proceed to point out, as briefly as possible, the several divisions of this publication, and the object which my efforts have chiefly aimed at accomplishing.

The first part of the work is appropriated to the Orthography of the language, which is in strict accordance with the latest decisions of the French Academy, and the present practice of the most eminent Grammarians. The pronunciation is, also, in conformity with the same critical standard,—the true, correct sound of each word being clearly defined, both in regard to reading and speaking in public, while the modern practice of the fashionable circles in Paris, with respect to some variations and niceties of expression which occasionally occur in polite conversation, is most accurately pointed out.

The department of Etymology being necessarily the foundation of that perfect acquaintance with the language which every well educated person ought to possess, the learner's attention is most particularly directed to the acquisition of that department, in all its branches. To promote this desirable object, nothing has been left undone. The various modifications of each class of words are presented to the student's view, while their formation into simple sentences is exhibited in a manner so perspicuous and attractive as to indelibly impress them on his memory. Much must, however, be left to the good sense of the pupil, guided by the skill of his master, to form such combinations as are in consonance with his own ideas for the expression of his wants, emotions, or passions; but in doing this he will derive much benefit from my arrangement of the Verbs. His further progress in French conversation will be greatly facilitated, if the teacher question him after the following manner on sentences of familiar discourse, such sentences being partly formed by introducing any one of the Pronouns in conjunction with a Verb, which the pupil is to translate into French, at first

or nearly so, until he has acquired a sufficient fluency, and then into accurate French: for instance, supposing the Verb under consideration to be *parler,* the sentences may be:—I have had the pleasure to speak to your sister, *j'ai eu le plaisir de parler à votre sœur.* Have you spoken to her? (1st. literally,) *avez-vous parlé à elle?* (2. correctly,) *lui avez-vous parlé?* Has not Mr. D*** spoken to her? (1st. literally,) *Mr. D*** n'a-t-il point parlé à elle?* (2. correctly,) *Mr. D*** ne lui a-t-il point parlé?* No, he has not spoken to her; (1st. literally,) *non, il n'a pas parlé à elle;* (2. correctly,) *non, il ne lui a pas parlé;* and so on through all the Simple and Compound Tenses, taking care to introduce, by degrees, the use of the Subjunctive Mood, and varying the sentences from the Affirmative to the Negative and Interrogative forms of the Verb. Without this practice, the utmost proficiency in conjugating the Verbs will scarcely be of any avail for speaking French; but, by adopting it, and a similar *drilling* upon the other parts of speech, due attention being paid by the teacher to a correct pronunciation, a pupil may acquire the language with as much facility, purity, and elegance of expression, as if he studied it even in Paris. It may be further observed on this subject, that the student should begin to learn the Verbs from the very commencement of his writing exercises, as he will thus be gradually initiated into an acquaintance with the French idioms, thereby acquiring a surprising readiness in that great desideratum,—conversation in the French language.

The second part of this work, forming the second volume, comprises the French Syntax, according to the rules of the French Academy, and the opinions of the best and most recent French Grammarians. It may, also, be noticed, as peculiar to this work, that in the arrangement of these materials every thing belonging to the same head has been collected under one article, by which

plan the usual trouble of referring to various places is obviated. The exercises and rules of the whole of the Grammar, but more particularly of this part, must be considered chiefly as an index to conversation in the absence of the master. It is presumed, they will be found sufficiently elucidatory of all the most difficult idioms, and replete with those delicacies of expression in which the French language so peculiarly abounds, thus enabling the learner not only to bear his part in the conversation of persons of intelligence and fashion, but to have a full relish for the beauties of French authors, and a just conception of the merits of their compositions.

A Treatise on French Poetry is introduced into the second volume, which is followed by a classified Vocabulary,—a compendium of the sentences most useful in familiar discourse, besides numerous models of notes, letters of compliment and business, with the forms of documents most usually required in affairs of commerce;—exercises (in French) of grammatical analysis;—and, for the particular use of such English gentlemen as are, generally speaking, unacquainted with French, but who, on their visit to the metropolis of France, may be desirous to make themselves well understood, and to avail themselves of the opportunity of acquiring some knowledge of the language, a collection has been made, in the form of dialogue, of all the phrases, directions, observations, &c. that commonly occur in a journey from Calais to Paris, and on the return.

Such is an outline of the work by which I propose to facilitate the acquisition of the most useful of all modern languages, and, confidently trusting that it will be found to justify my pretensions, I respectfully submit it to the public.

CONTENTS

OF THE

FIRST VOLUME.

PART THE FIRST.

Orthography.

	PAGE
Of Grammar in General.—The French Alphabet.——The Names and Sounds of the Letters	ix
Of the Sounds of the Vowels	x
Of the different Nasal Sounds	xi
Of Dipthongs	*ib.*
Of Consonants, and their different Sounds	xiii
Of the words in which *h* is mute	xvi
Of Prosody	xxvi
Of Accent	*ib.*
Of Quantity	xxvii
General Rules on Quantity	*ib.*
A List of the principal *Homonymes*	xxviii
Characteristic Marks or Accents	xxix
Of the Acute Accent	xxx
Of the Grave Accent	*ib.*
Of the Circumflex Accent	xxxi
Of the Apostrophe	xxxii
Of the Hyphen	xxxiii
Of the Cedilla	xxxiv
Of the Diæresis, Parenthesis, Quotations, and Abbreviations	*ib.*
Of Capital Letters	xxxvi
Of Punctuation	xxxvii
Observations on the Terminations of Words that are spelt alike in English and French	xxxviii
Observations on the Difference of spelling the Greek and Roman proper Names in English and French	xxxix

PART THE SECOND.

Etymology.

General View of the Parts of Speech	xl

Preliminary Observations.

Of the Indefinite, Definite, and Partitive Articles	1
Of the Personal Pronouns	*ib.*
Of the Possessive Pronouns	2

CONTENTS.

PAGE

Of the Demonstrative Pronouns 2
Of Relative Pronouns........ 3
Of Determinate Interrogative Pronouns .... *ib.*
Of Indeterminate Interrogative Pronouns .... *ib.*

CHAPTER I.

Definition of the Articles 4
Of the Indefinite Article .... *ib.*
Of the Definite Article 6
Of the Partitive Article 8

CHAPTER II.

Of Substantives 10
Of the Gender of Substantives 11
Rules for learning the Gender of Substantives, with Exceptions........ *ib.*
General Observations on the Gender of Substantives 13
Of Number in Substantives 17
Rules for the Plural of Substantives, with Exceptions .... *ib.*
Of the Substantives which have no Plural, and of those which have no Singular 18
Of the Plural of Compound Words........ 19

CHAPTER III.

Of Adjectives 22
Of the Gender of Adjectives, with Exceptions .... *ib.*
Plural of Adjectives 26
Degrees of Comparison 27
Of Numeral Adjectives 31
Of the Cardinal Numbers .... *ib.*
Examples of the Cardinal Numbers with the Word *fois* 35
Of the Ordinal Numbers 36
Examples of the Ordinal Numbers with the Word *fois* 38

CHAPTER IV.

Of Pronouns 40
Of Personal Pronouns .... *ib.*
Of the Personal Pronouns which are the Subject of the Verb, with particular Observations 41
Of the Personal Pronouns which are the Object of the Verb 43
Of Adjective Pronouns 47
Of Possessive Pronouns........ 48
Of Demonstrative Pronouns 53
Of Relative Pronouns........ 57
Of Indefinite Pronouns 62

CHAPTER V.

PAGE
Of Verbs 65
Of the different Sorts of Verbs .... ib.
Of Numbers and Persons in Verbs 68
Of Moods 69
Of Tenses, and Observations on them 70
Of Conjugations 74
Of the Auxiliary Verbs *Avoir* and *être* .... ib.
Of the Compound Tenses formed with *Avoir*, and of those formed with *être* .. 75
Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb *Avoir*, Affirmatively 76
Conjugation of the same Negatively 80
Conjugation of the same Interrogatively 83
Conjugation of the same Interrogatively and Negatively 85
Recapitulation of the Verb *Avoir* in its Four different Ways 87
Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb *être* 90
Regular Conjugations 93
First Conjugation, (*Parler*, to speak,) with its additional Tenses 94
Second Conjugation, (*Finir*, to finish,) with its additional Tenses 98
A List of the Regular Verbs of the Second Conjugation 102
Third Conjugation, (*Recevoir*, to receive,) with its additional Tenses 104
Fourth Conjugation, (*Entendre*, to hear,) with its additional Tenses 108
A List of the Regular Verbs of the Fourth Conjugation 112
First Conjugation of Pronominal (otherwise called Reflected) Verbs (*Se Promener*, to walk) 113
Second Conjugation of Reflected Verbs (*Se Réjouir*, to rejoice) 117
Third Conjugation of Reflected Verbs (*S'Apercevoir*, to perceive) 122
Fourth Conjugation of Reflected Verbs (*Se Rendre*, to surrender) 126
A List of Verbs which, though not admitting the Pronouns *one's self, myself, thyself, himself, herself*, &c. in English, are Reflected in French 130
Of Pronominal Unipersonal (otherwise called Impersonal) Verbs 132
Conjugation of Pronominal Unipersonal Verbs (*Se Vendre*, to sell,) .... ib.
Verbs ending in the Present of the Infinitive in *ayer, eyer, oyer, uyer, cer, éer, ger, ier, eler, eter*, and *uer*, and their Conjugations 134
Irregular and Defective Verbs 143
First Conjugation of Irregular Verbs, (*Aller*, to go,) .... ib.
Observations on *être allé*, &c. often incorrectly used instead of *Avoir été*, &c... 147
Conjugation of the Pronominal Verb *S'en Aller*, to go away .... ib.
Irregular Verbs of the Second Conjugation 151
Irregular Verbs of the Third Conjugation 166
Irregular Verbs of the Fourth Conjugation 173
Unipersonal (otherwise Impersonal) Verbs 193
First Conjugation of Unipersonal Verbs (*Neiger*, to snow) .... ib.
Second Conjugation (*Saillir*, to project) 194
Third Conjug[illegible] (*y Avoir*, to be there, *Falloir*, to be necessary, *Pleuvoir*, to rain, [illegible] 195

CHAPTER VI.

PAGE
Fourth Conjugation (*éclore*, to hatch, &c.) 198
Of Negations and Interrogations 199
Distinction between *pas* and *point*, and different ways of expressing *not*, *no*, *not that*, *no more*, *neither*, *nor*, *never*, *by no means* .... ib.
Cases in which *ne* is used before a Verb without *pas* or *point* after, though there is no Negation in English 204
Of the different Modes of Interrogation in which the Pronouns forming the Subject of the Verb are placed after it 209

CHAPTER VII.

Of Adverbs 213
Of the Place of Adverbs 214

CHAPTER VIII.

Of Prepositions 216
Different Modes of expressing in French the Prepositions *from*, *to*, *about*, *over*, *on*, *upon*, *in*, *against*, &c. 217
Of the Place and Repetition of Prepositions 225

CHAPTER IX.

Of Conjunctions and Interjections 227
Observations on the Conjunctions *et*, *ni*, and *que* .... ib.
Of Interjections 231

CHAPTER X.

Of French Idioms 233
Cases in which the Tenses of *to be* are expressed by those of *Avoir* .... ib.
Cases in which the Tenses of *to be* are expressed by the corresponding Tenses of the Impersonal *y Avoir* 236
Cases in which the Tenses of *to be* are expressed in French by the corresponding Tenses of the Verbs *Faire*, *Se Porter*, *en être*, &c. 240
Cases in which the Tenses of *to be*, preceded by *it*, are expressed in French by *il est*, *il était*, *il sera*, &c. and by *c'est*, *c'était*, *ce sera*, &c. 243
Of the Verb *Avoir mal à*, *au*, *à la*, *à l'*, or *aux* 247
Of the Verb *must* expressed in French by the Impersonal *il faut*, *il fallait*, &c. 248
Of the Defective Verbs *may*, *can*, *will*, *shall*, *would*, *could*, *should*, *might*, and *ought* 250

FRENCH GRAMMAR.

French Grammar is the art of speaking and writing the French language with propriety.

It is divided into four parts, Orthography, Etymology, Syntax, and Prosody.

PART THE FIRST.

ORTHOGRAPHY.

Orthography teaches the nature and power of letters, the manner of pronouncing them, and the just method of spelling words.

The letters of the French alphabet are twenty-five in number, namely:

A B C D E F G H I J K L M
N O P Q R S T U V X Y Z;

which, according to their alphabetical name, are called:

A	B	C	D	E	F	G	H	I	J	K	L	M
ah,	*bay,*	*say,*	*day,*	*ay,*	*eff,*	*jay,*	*ahsh,*	*ee,*	*jee,*	*kah,*	*ell,*	*emm,*

N	O	P	Q	R	S	T	U	V	X	Y	Z;
enn,	*o,*	*pay,*	*ku,*	*air,*	*ess,*	*tay,*	*u,*	*vay,*	*icks,*	*ee-grec,*	*zed;*

but which, when pronounced with more immediate reference to their proper sounds in words, are as follows:

A ....*Ah* ....as in............*Age.*
B ....*Be* ....as in............*Besoin.*
C ....*Ke* ....as in............*Cabane.*

D	De	as in	*Demoiselle.*
E	Eu	as in	*Europe.*
F	Fe	as in	*Fenêtre.*
G	Gue	as in	*Guenille.*
H	He	as in	*Heurter.*
I	I	as in	*Ici.*
J	Je	as in	*Jeune.*
K	Ke	as in	*Kermès.*
L	Le	as in	*Leçon.*
M	Me	as in	*Mener.*
N	Ne	as in	*Neuf.*
O	O	as in	*Oracle.*
P	Pe	as in	*Petit.*
Q	Ke	as in	*Querelle.*
R	Re	as in	*Recherche.*
S	Se	as in	*Semaine.*
T	Te	as in	*Tenir.*
U	U	as in	*Usure.*
V	Ve	as in	*Venir.*
X	Kse	as in	*Axe.*
Y	I	as in	*Yeux.*
Z	Ze	as in	*Zéphyr.*

Letters are divided into vowels and consonants. The vowels are five in number, namely—*A, E, I, O, U;* all the other letters are consonants.

GENERAL OBSERVATIONS ON THE SOUNDS OF THE LETTERS.

ARTICLE I.

Of the Vowels.

Among the different gradations of sound which vowels produce in different words, and which can only be learnt by practice, we shall distinguish two general ones: a *slender sound* such as we have given in the Alphabet, and a longer one, which, though generally marked with the circumflex accent, is in several words not so distinguished, and must consequently be acquired by practice.

Examples of the Sounds of the Vowels.

A short....as in.....*amateur;* ..and long....as in....*âge.*
I short....as in.....*titre;* ....and long....as in....*sire.*
O short....as in.....*oracle;* ..and long....as in....*ôter.*
U short....as in.....*utile;* ....and long....as in....*flûte.*

The letter *e* has three sensibly different sounds: the *open* or *long*, the *acute*, and the *mute*.

The *open* or *long* is in some words marked with the *grave*, and in others with the *circumflex accent*, but in many it has no such characteristic, as in—*succès, même, chef;* the cases, therefore, in which *e* is so pronounced can only be known by use and observation.

The *acute sound* is marked with the acute accent, as in *vérité, prémédité*, &c.

The *mute*, as the term implies, having no sound, or rather being but faintly heard when employed, has consequently no mark or accent, as in *homme, je redemande*, &c.

§. 1.

Of the Nasal Sounds.

When the Vowels *a, e, i, o, u,* come before the Consonants *m* and *n*, they form what are called nasal sounds; this, however, only occurs when *m* and *n* are at the end of words, or when, being in the body of a word, they are followed by any other Consonant than *m* or *n*, for two *m*'s or two *n*'s, in several instances, destroy the nasal sound, though in some others they retain it, as in *ennui, ennuyer, emmener*, &c. in which *m* and *n*, though followed by another *m* or *n*, preserve their nasal sound.

At the end of foreign words, terminating with *m* and *n*, these letters have not any nasal sound, though preceded by a Vowel, as *Jerusalem, Amen*, which are pronounced with the natural sound of *m* and *n*.

The termination ENT in the Third Person Plural of Verbs has not any nasal sound, thus—*ils aiment, ils parlèrent*, &c. are pronounced —*il* or *i zaime, il parlère*, and not *il zaiman, il parlèran*, &c.

A, e, i, o, u, admitting various combinations before *m* and *n*, form several different nasal sounds, of which the following are the principal, which are pronounced as follows:

Am	*an*	as in	*Ambassadeur.*
Aim	*ein*	as in	*Faim.*
Em	*en*	as in	*Embrasser.*
Im	*ein*	as in	*Imbécille.*
Om	*on*	as in	*Ombre.*
Um	*eun*	as in	*Humble.*
An	*an*	as in	*Ancien*
Ain	*ein*	as in	*Pain.*
Ean	*an*	as in	*Jean.*
En	*an*	as in	*Ennui.*
Ein	*ein*	as in	*Sein.*
Eun	*un*	as in	*à jeun.*
Eon	*on*	as in	*Pigeon.*
Ien	*ien*	as in	*Le mien.*
On	*on*	as in	*Oncle.*
Un	*un*	as in	*Défunt.*

§. 2.

Of Dipthongs.

A *Dipthong* is the union of two or more Vowels in the same Syllable, which, when pronounced, convey to the ear a double sound,

though they are pronounced with a single emission of the voice, as in the word *Dieu*, in which we distinctly hear the sound of *i* and *eu*. The principal ones are as follows:

Ai	as in	*aih! mail.*
Eoi	as in	*villageois.*
Ia	as in	*diacre.*
Iai	as in	*niais.*
Ié	as in	*pied.*
Iè	as in	*lumière.*
Ieu	as in	*Dieu.*
Io	as in	*pioche.*
Ion	as in	*occasion.*
Ien	as in	*rien.*
Ien	as in	*patient.*
Ian	as in	*viande.*
Iou	as in	*chiourme.*
Oi	as in	*loi.*
Ouai	as in	*ouais.*
Oë	as in	*moëde.*
Oue	as in	*ouest.*
Oin	as in	*soin.*
Ouin	as in	*baragouin.*
Ouan	as in	*louange.*
Oui	as in	*Louis.*
Ui	as in	*lui.*
Uin	as in	*Juin.*
Ua	as in	*suage.*
Uai	as in	*suaire.*
Ue	as in	*écuelle.*

Observe.—A Dipthong must not be confounded with a coalition of two or more Vowels in the same Syllable, producing a single sound, as—*ai, ae, aie, au, eai, ei, ey, ao, eau, eo, ie, eu, œu,* and *ue,* in the following words:

1. *Ai,* which in *j'ai, je chantai, je lirai,* and in the Preterite, or Future, of other Verbs, is pronounced like *é* acute, thus—*jé, je chanté, je liré,* &c.

It is also sounded like *è* open in the termination of the Imperfect and Conditional of all Verbs; as—*j'avais, j'aimais, je dirais,* and in the words *Anglais, Écossais, Français, Groënlandais, Hollandais, Irlandais, Lyonnais, Polonais,* and some others; also in the middle of words, as—*maître, maison,* &c. which are pronounced as if they were spelled *j'avès, j'aimès, je dirès, Anglès, Écossès, Francès, Groënlandès, Hollandès, Irlandès, Lyonnès, Polonès, mètre, mèson,* &c.

In *faisant* and the first syllables of *faisais, faisait, faisions, faisiez, faisaient, ai* takes the sound of *e* mute, whilst it is pronounced like *a* in *douairière,* as if these words were spelled—*fesant, fesais,* &c. and *douarière.*

2. *Aie, eai, ei, ey,* in either the middle or at the end of words, are sounded like *e* open, as in *haie, démangeaison, seigneur, bey,* &c.

3. *Ae* in *Caën* (ville) is pronounced as if *Caën* were spelled without *e,* thus—*Can.*

4. *Ao* in *paon, paonne, faon, Laon,* (ville,) is pronounced as if there were no *o,* thus—*pan, pane, fan, Lan;* whilst in *Août, Aoriste, Saône, taon,* (poisson); *o* alone is sounded, the *a* being mute, thus—*ou, oriste,*

sône, ton; but in *aoûté,* Participle of the Verb *aoûter,* to ripen, both *a* and *o* are each sounded.

5. *Au* and *eau* at the end of words are sounded like *o* long, as in—*aloyau, bateau,* which are pronounced *aloyô, batô.*

6. *Ie* is sounded like *i,* and *ue* like *u,* in the different Tenses and Persons of the Verbs which end in *ier* and *uer* in the Present of the Infinitive, as—*je prie, je prierai, je prierais,* &c. which are pronounced—*je pri, je prirai, je prirais,* and *je remue, je remuerai, je remuerais,* &c. which are pronounced *je remu, je remurai, je remurais,* &c.

7. *Eu* is sounded like *u* in *j'eus, tu eus, il eut, nous eûmes, vous eûtes, ils eurent, que j'eusse,* &c. but it retains its natural sound, *eu,* in *Europe, Euridice, Eucharistie, heureux, heureuse, St. Eustache,* &c.

8. *Œu* takes the sound of *eu* in *sœur, mœurs, œuf.*

9. *Gea, geo, geure,* without any accent over the *e* after *g,* are sounded *ja, jo, jure;* therefore, *il jugea, Georges, geôlier, gageure,* &c. are pronounced as if they were written, *il juja, jorges, jôlier, gajure,* &c.

ARTICLE II.

Of Consonants.

As Consonants are not always sounded the same as in the Alphabet, we shall point out the cases in which they deviate from their natural pronunciation.

§. 1.

B.

B always preserves its natural sound, *be,* except at the end of the words *plomb* and *à plomb,* in which it is mute; if it is doubled in a word, only one is pronounced, as in—*abbé, sabbat,* which are pronounced *abé, saba.*

§. 2.

C.

C, besides its natural sound, *ke,* has also the accidental sound *se,* when coming in the beginning or middle of words before *e* and *i,* as in *ceci, cela,* which are pronounced *sesi, sela.* It is likewise sounded *se* before *a, o, u,* when having a cedilla placed under it, as in—*façade, garçon, reçu,* which are pronounced *fasade, garson, resu.*

It is sounded *gue* in *second,* and its derivatives *secondement, seconder,* which are pronounced *segon, segondeman, segonder.*

It has the sound of *ch*, in *violoncelle* and *vermicelle*, which are pronounced as if they were spelled *violonchelle, vermichelle.*

When *c* comes before *q* in the middle of words, it is not sounded, as—*acquérir*, which is pronounced *aquérir*, or, which is the same, *akérir*.

When *c* is doubled in the middle of words, only one is pronounced, as in—*accabler, acclamation, accomplir, accréditer, accuser*, &c. but when *c* is doubled before *e* and *i*, the first *c* takes its natural sound *ke*, and the second the accidental *se*, as in—*accident, accès*, &c. which are pronounced *aksident, aksès*.

Finally, *c* is not sounded in *arsenic, broc, croc, clerc, échecs*, (jeu,) *estomac, porc, tabac*, and a few other words, which are pronounced as if they were spelled—*arseni, bro, cro, cler, éché, estoma, por, taba*, &c. but, to avoid mistakes, it is to be observed that *c* retains its natural sound *ke*, in—*avec, bec, échec*, (perte,) and also in *donc* in the beginning of a sentence, or in the middle of it, when coming before a vowel or an *h* mute, or even before a consonant, if we express any strong passion; as—*votre père est dans la misère, donc vous devez l'aider ;—votre ami est donc arrivé ?—jusqu'à quand prétendrez-vous donc me dicter des lois ?* &c. which are pronounced: *votre père est dans la misère,* donke *vous devez l'aider ;—votre ami est* donk *arrivé ;—jusqu'à quand prétendrez-vous* donke *me dicter des lois?* but in any other case, the *c* in *donc* is mute, as in *allons donc nous promener ; quand viendrez-vous donc ?* &c. which are pronounced *allons* don *nous promener ; quand viendrez-vous* don ? as if there were no *c* in *donc*.

§. 3.

D.

D has always its natural sound *de* in the beginning of words, and also in the middle of them, if it comes before a consonant, as—*dame, admission*, &c.

When it is doubled in a word, only one is sounded, except in *addition, reddition*, and *adduction* in which both are pronounced.

D final in Adjectives which immediately precede their respective Substantives beginning with a vowel or an *h* mute, is sounded like *t*, and joined to the Substantives, as—*un grand acteur ; un grand homme ;* which are pronounced *un gran tacteur un gran t'omme.*

D has also the sound of *t* at the end of the Third Person Singular of the Present of the Indicative of Verbs, when followed by the Pronouns *il, elle*, or *on*; it being likewise joined to them in pronunciation; as —*entend-il? coud-elle bien? répond-on ainsi?* which are pronounced —*enten-til? cou-telle bien? répon-ton ainsi?*

At the end of the proper names *David, Joad, Obed*, &c. and also in *sud*, (a point of the compass,) *d* preserves its natural sound *de*.

In all other cases *d* is mute at the end of words.

§. 4.

F.

F has always its natural sound *fe*, in the beginning, middle, and at the end of words; as in—*feu*, *confiance*, *œuf*.

The Noun of Number *neuf* must however be excepted, in which *f* is sounded *v* when coming immediately before a substantive beginning with a vowel or an *h* mute, to which it is joined in pronunciation, as—*neuf ans*, *neuf hommes*, which are pronounced *neu-vans*, *neu-vhommes*; but *f* is not sounded when it comes before a word beginning with a consonant or an *h* aspirated; as—*neuf chevaux* which is pronounced *neu-chevaux*.

We must also except *clef*, *cerf*, *éteuf*, in which *f* is mute: these words being pronounced *clé*, *cer*, *éteu*.

When *f* is doubled in the middle of words, only one is pronounced; as in—*officier*, *offrir*, *affaiblir*, which are pronounced *oficié*, *ofrir*, *afaiblir*.

§. 5.

G.

G has its natural sound *gue* in the beginning and middle of words, when followed by the vowels *a*, *o*, *u*, or the consonants *d*, *h*, *l*, *m*, *r*, as in *gâteau*, *gosier*, *aigu*, *Magdebourg*, *glorieux*, *augmenter*, *agréable*, &c. except in *gangrène*, which is pronounced *kangrène*; but it takes the accidental sound *j* before *e* and *i*, as in—*gelée*, *gibier*, &c. which are pronounced *jelée*, *jibier*.

When *g* is followed by *n* in the middle of words, it takes the liquid sound *gne*, as in—*agneau*, *assignation*, *assigner*, *compagnie*, *compagnon*, *imprégner*, *signer*, &c. except in *imprégnation*, *stagnation*, and a few others in which *g* and *n* retain their natural sound *gue* and *ne*, thus—*impreg-nation*, *stag-nation*, &c.

Signet is pronounced *sinet*, as if there were no *g*.

If *g* is doubled in a word, only one is sounded, except when in *suggérer*, and in any other word in which the second *g* is followed by *e* marked with an acute accent, thus (*é*,) in which case the first *g* is pronounced *gue* and the second *je*, thus—*sug-jérer*.

G final is never pronounced in *coing*, *poing*, *étang*, *faubourg*, *hareng*, *legs*, *doigt*, *vingt*, *seing*, by whatever word they may be followed.

G final in the foreign names *Agag*, *Doëg*, retains its natural sound *gue*.—In *bourg* it is pronounced like *k*, thus—*bourk*.

In all other words *g* final is mute, when followed by a word beginning with a consonant or *h* aspirated, as in—*rang noble*, which is pronounced *ran noble*; but it is sounded like *k* upon the next word, when it begins with a vowel or *h* mute, as—*un rang honorable*; *suer sang et eau*, which are pronounced *un ran konorable*; *suer san ket eau*.

§. 6.

H.

H is pronounced with its natural aspirate sound *he* at the beginning of words, except in the following and their derivatives, in which it is mute.

Habile,
Habit,
Habiter,
Habitude,
Haleine,
Hameçon,
Harmonie,
Hebdomadaire,
Héberger,
Hébété,
Hécatombe,
Hégire,
Héliotrope,
Hématologie,
Hémisphère,
Hémistiche,
Hémorragie,
Herbe,
Herbage,
Hérésie,
Hériter,
Hermite,
Hermine,
Héroïne,
Héroïque,
Héroïsme,
Hésiter,
Hétérodoxe,
Hétérogène,
Heure,
Heureux,
Hexagone,
Hexamètre,
Hier,
Hiéroglyphe,
Hirondelle,
Histoire,
Histrion,
Hiver,
Holocauste,
Homélie,
Homicide,
Hommage,
Homogène,
Homme,
Honnête,
Honneur,
Hôpital,
Horizon,
Horloge,
Horreur,
Horrible,
Horoscope,
Hospice,
Hospitalier,
Hostie,
Hostilité,
Hôte,
Hôtel,
Hôtellerie,
Hôtesse,
Huile,
Huissier,
Huître,
Humain, e.
Humble,
Humecter,
Humeur,
Humidité,
Humilité,
Hyacinthe,
Hydre,
Hydromel,
Hydropisie,
Hydrophobie,
Hymen,
Hymne,
Hyperbole,
Hypocrisie,
Hypothèse,
Hypothèque.

H is likewise mute at the beginning of proper names of towns, countries, &c. except in *Hollande*, *Hongrie*, *Hainaut*, *Hambourg*, and a few others in which it is fully pronounced *he*; but we say—*de la toile d' Hollande*; *du fromage d' Hollande*; *eau de la reine d'Hongrie*, without pronouncing the *h*.

H coming after *c* is sounded like *sh* in English, as in—*chapeau*, *cheval*, *chose*, *chute*, &c. which are pronounced *shapô*, *sheval*, *shôze*, *shute*.

H final is not sounded, therefore *Almanach* is pronounced *Almana*.

§. 7.

J. and K.

J and *K* always have their natural sound *je* and *ke*.

§. 8.

L.

L generally preserves its natural sound *le* in the beginning, middle, and at the end of words, as in—*leçon*, *parler*, *fil*.

When it is doubled in the middle of words, and preceded by any other Vowel than *i*, only one is sounded, as in *collége*, *collation*, *collationner* (repas), &c. which are pronounced *colége*, *colation*, *colationé*. We must except *Apollon*, *allusion*, *allégorie*, *belligérant*, *belliqueux*, *collaborateur*, *constellation*, *ellébore*, *folliculaire*, *gallican*, *gallicisme*, *oscillation*, *palladium*, *rebellion*, *solliciter*, *syllogisme*, *tabellion*, *valléité*, *collation*, *collationner* (to collate), *collégial*, and their derivatives, in which the two *l*'s are pronounced with their natural sound *le*.

But when *l* is doubled and preceded by *i*, as in the words—*bataille*, *bouteille*, *fille*, *anguille*, *paille*, *pillage*, &c. it has a liquid sound, much resembling that of double *ll* in the English word *brilliant*, or of *gl* in *seraglio*. We must, however, except *Gille*, *ville*, *mille*, and all words beginning by *ill*; as—*illégitime*, *illustre*, *illusion*, &c. in which the two *l*'s have their natural sound, *le*.

A single *l* at the end of words has likewise a liquid sound, when it is preceded by *i*; as in—*péril*, *écueil*, *orgueil*, *travail*, *sommeil*, *soleil*, &c.; but we must except *baril*, *chenil*, *coutil*, *cul*, *fournil*, *fusil*, *gril*, *nombril*, *outil*, *persil*, *soûl*, *sourcil*, in which *l* is not sounded; we must also except *fil*, *nil*, and *mil* (Noun of Number,) and almost all Adjectives ending in *il*, in which *l* is pronounced with its natural sound *le*.

§. 9.

M.

M always preserves its natural sound *me* in the beginning of words; as in *mer*, *mener*.

In the middle of words *m* has the nasal sound of *n*, when it is preceded by a vowel and followed by a Consonant; as in *compte*, *compter*, *prompt*, &c. which are pronounced *conte*, *conter*, *pron*.

M has likewise the sound of *n* at the end of words, if it is preceded by a Vowel; as in *nom*, *pronom*, *faim*, *parfum*, &c. which are pronounced *non*, *pronon*, *fein*, *parfun*; but in foreign names it retains its natural sound *me*; as in *Priam*, *Amsterdam*, *Rotterdam*, &c. except in *Adam* and *Absalom*, which are pronounced *Adan*, *Absalon*.

When *m* is doubled in the middle of words, only one *m* is sounded, which is pronounced with its natural sound *me*; as in *commode*, *commis*, *commissaire*, *grammaire*, *grammairien*, &c. which are pronounced *comode*, *comis*, *comisaire*, *gramaire*, *gramairien*. We must except *Ammon*, *Emmanuel*, *commensurable*, *commémoration*, *grammatical*, *commotion*, *commuer*, and their derivatives, as also all words beginning by *imm*, as *immense*, *immédiatement*, in which the two *m*'s preserve each their natural sound *me*.

§. 10.

N.

N has always the sound *ne* in the beginning and middle of words, when it is followed by a Vowel; as in—*nourrice*, *mener*, &c. except in *enivrer*, *enorgueillir*, and their derivatives, which are pronounced as

if they were spelled with two *n*'s, the first having the nasal sound, and the second the natural one *ne*, thus—*an-nivrer*, *an-norgueillir*.

When *n* is doubled in the middle of words, only one *n* is pronounced, in which case it retains its natural sound *ne*, and the first syllable of the word becomes short; as in *anneau, année, innocence,* which are pronounced *ano, anée, inocence.* From this rule we must except *ennui, ennuyer, ennoblir*, in which the two *n*'s are sounded, the 1st with the nasal sound, and the second with the natural one; thus—*an-nui, an-nuyer, an-noblir*, whilst in *annales, annexes, inné, innové, innomé, Cincinnatus, Linnée, Porsenna,* both the *n*'s retain their natural sound *ne.*

Solennel, hennir, hennissement, are pronounced *solanel, hanir, hanissement.*

N, followed in a word by any other Consonant than *n*, has always the nasal sound; as in—*encre, ingrédient,* &c.

N final, preceded by a Vowel, is always pronounced with the nasal sound, in a word which is either used by itself, or which comes before another word beginning with a consonant, or an *h* aspirated; as in *passion, ambition, nation célèbre,* &c. except in foreign words, in which it is pronounced with its natural sound *ne*; as in—*Amen, Éden, Hymen,* &c. &c.

But *n* final, coming before a word beginning with a Vowel, or an *h* mute, requires, besides its nasal sound *ne*, that another *n* should be added, in pronunciation, to the beginning of the next word, in all the following cases:—

1. At the end of Adjectives immediately followed by their respective Substantives, as in *ancien ami, bon homme,* which are pronounced *ancien-nami, bon-n'omme;* but at the end of Adjectives which are followed by any other word than their respective Substantives, as likewise at the end of all Substantives, *n* is pronounced with its nasal sound only, without adding the additional *n* to the next word, even when it begins with a Vowel or an *h* mute; as in—*passion aveugle; cela est certain et indubitable,* which are pronounced simply with the nasal sound, *passion aveugle; cela est certain et indubitable*; and not *passion-naveugle; cela est certain-net indubitable.*

2. After the Possessive Pronouns *mon, ton, son;* as—*mon âme, mon intime ami,* which are pronounced *mon-nâme, mon-nintime ami.*

3. At the end of *un*, coming before a Substantive or an Adjective to which it refers, as—*un homme, un ancien ami,* which are pronounced *un-n'omme, un-nancien-nami;* but never when it comes before any other word, as it has then its nasal sound only; as—*il y en eut un assez hardi;* and not *il y en eut un-nassez hardi.*

4. In *on* coming before a Verb affirmatively used, as—*on aime, on honorera,* which are pronounced *on-naime, on-n'onorera;* but in interrogative sentences *on* coming after the Verb or its Auxiliary, has merely its nasal sound; as—*a-t-on eu soin de lui?* and not *a-t-on-neu soin de lui?*

5. In *en* followed by a word with which it is immediately connected by the sense, as—*en Italie, en un moment, je n'en ai point,* &c. which are pronounced *en-nitalie, en-nun moment, je n'en-n'ai point;* but if *en* is not strictly connected with the next word, the nasal sound only is then used; as—*donnez-m'en un peu;* and not—*donnez-m'en-*

nun peu; because we can make a little pause after *en,* which shows that *en* is not inseparably connected with *un peu.*

6. After *bien* and *rien,* when immediately followed by either an Adjective, a Verb, or an Adverb, which they modify, as—*bien utilement, bien honorable, bien à propos, bien écrire, rien à dire,* which are pronounced *bien-nutileman, bien-n'onorable, bien-nà propos, bien-nécrire, rien-nà dire, &c.*

But when *bien* and *rien* are followed by any other word, or when they are used substantively, they are pronounced with the nasal sound only, without the additional *n* to the next word; as—*il parlait bien et à propos; ce bien est à moi; ce rien a des attraits; le bien et le mal;* and not—*il parlait bien-net à propos; ce bien-nest à moi; ce rien n'a des attraits; le bien-net le mal.*

§. 11.

P.

P has generally its natural sound *pe* in the beginning and middle of words; as in *peuple, Septembre, accepter,* &c. but it is not pronounced in *baptême, Baptiste, baptiser, baptistaire, sept, exempt, compte, compter, dompter, prompt,* and their derivatives; these words being pronounced as if they were spelled *batême, batiste, batiser, batistaire, set, exan, conte, conter, donter, pron,* and in general *p* is not pronounced in the majority of words in which it comes between two Consonants, except in *contempteur, exemption, rédemption, rédempteur,* in which it is sounded.

When *p* is doubled in the middle of words, there is generally only one pronounced, as in—*apporter, appeler,* &c. which are pronounced *aporter, apeler,* &c.

P final is mute at the end of these words; *camp, champ, drap, sirop, loup,* and a few others; but it is pronounced in *cap,* and the proper names *Alep, Gap, Jalep.*

It is likewise pronounced in *beaucoup* and *trop* when these words are immediately followed by another word beginning with a Vowel or an *h* mute, in which case *p* must be joined to it in pronunciation; as—*un coup inattendu; il aime beaucoup à jouer,* which are pronounced *un cou-pinattendu, il aime beaucou-pà jouer;* but if *beaucoup* and *trop* come before a Consonant, or if they are used at the end of a sentence, or by themselves, *p* is not then pronounced; as—*j'en ai beaucoup trop,* which is pronounced *j'en ai beaucou tro.*

Ph is sounded like *f*; thus—*philosophe, phrase,* are pronounced *filosofe, frase.*

§. 12.

Q.

Q generally preserves its natural sound *ke* in the beginning and middle of words, as in *quenouille, acquérir,* which are pronounced *kenouille, akérir.*

Qu is pronounced *cou* in *équateur* and *quaker; cu* in *équitation,*

Quinte-Curce, Quintilien, and *ke in qualification, Quasimodo, quadrille*, which are pronounced as if they were spelled,—*écouateur, couaker, écuitation, Cuintilien, Cuinte-Curce, kalification, Kasimodo, kadrille.*

Q final is not sounded in *cinq* immediately followed by a Substantive or an Adjective beginning with a Consonant or an *h* aspirate; as—*cinq garçons, cinq cavaliers*, which are pronounced with the nasal sound of *n*, *cein garçons, cein cavaliers*; but it retains its natural sound *ke* before a Substantive or an Adjective beginning with a Vowel or an *h* mute, to which it must be joined in pronunciation, as—*cinq ans, cinq hommes*, which are pronounced—*cein-kans, cein-k'ommes.*

It is also sounded *ke* in *cinq* used either alone, or when at the end of a sentence, or before any other word than a Substantive or an Adjective, whether it begins with a Vowel, an *h* mute or aspirated, or a Consonant; as—*trois et deux font cinq; les cinq pour cent*, &c. which are pronounced—*trois et deux font ceinke; les ceinke pour cent.*

Q is mute in *coq d'inde*, which is pronounced *co-d'inde*, but it is sounded *ke* in *coq* in all other cases.

§. 13.

R.

R always retains its natural sound *re* in the beginning and middle of words, as in *règle, Mardi.*

If *R* is doubled in the middle of words, only one of them is sounded, and the preceding Vowel is lengthened; as in—*parrain, marraine, carrosse, guerre, tonnerre, je pourrai, je pourrais*, &c. which are pronounced—*parain, maraine, carosse, guère, tonère, je pourai, je pourais*, &c.

But the two *r's* are pronounced in *aberration, erremens, erreur, errer, erroné, abhorrer*, and in the Future and Conditional of the Verbs *acquérir, courir, mourir*, namely—*j'acquerrai, j'acquerrais; je courrai, je courrais; je mourrai, je mourrais*, &c. also in the greatest part of words beginning by *irr*; as—*irrégulier, irraisonnable, irréligieux, irritation, irrévocable, irréfragable*, &c.

R final is sounded in the Monosyllables *cher, fer, mer, or, sieur*, &c.; and at the termination of Polysyllables ending in *er*, when *er* is immediately preceded by *f, m*, or *v*, as in *amer, enfer, hiver*, &c.; it is also pronounced in the words *cuiller, cancer*, and in proper names, as—*Jupiter*, &c.

R is likewise sounded at the termination of the Infinitive of all Verbs of the Second Conjugation; as in—*finir, partir, sortir*, &c.; it is also pronounced at the end of any other word in *ir* or *eur*, as—*plaisir, loisir, repentir, bonheur, honneur, sieur*, &c.

But it is not sounded, 1.—in *Monsieur*, in which the *n* is also mute; 2.—at the end of Polysyllables in *ier*; as—*officier, teinturier, particulier, singulier, entier*, &c. 3.—at the end of Polysyllables in *er*, if *er* is not immediately preceded by *f, m*, or *v*, as—*danger, berger*, &c. which words are pronounced *Mocieu, officié, teinturié, particulié, singulié, entié, danjè, berjè*, &c.

It is also mute in the termination of Verbs of the 1st Conjugation,

when either used by themselves, or when they occur at the end of a sentence, or before words beginning with a Consonant or an *h* aspirated; as—*dites-lui de danser; je n'ai pas osé lui parler de cela*, which are pronounced—*dites-lui de dansé, je n'ai pas osé lui parlé de cela;* but if these Verbs come before words beginning with a Vowel or an *h* mute, the final *r* is generally pronounced upon them in reading and speaking in public, whilst it is usually mute in conversation; thus—*aimer à danser; folâtrer et rire; s'amuser à lire*, are pronounced in reading, as if they were spelt *aimè-rà dansé; folâtrè-ré rire; s'amusè-rà lire;* but in conversation *aimé à dansé; folâtré et rire; s'musé à lire.*

§. 14.

S.

S generally retains its natural sound *se*, in the beginning of words; as—*semaine, soleil, statue, scorpion*, &c.

It is likewise sounded *se* in the middle of words, when preceded or followed by a Consonant; as in—*absolu, converser, conseil, lorsque, puisque*, &c.; except in *Asdrubal, Alsace, Alsacien, balsamine, balsamique, balsamite, presbytère, transiger, transaction, transition, transit, transitif, intransitif, transitoire*, and the words in which it comes between two Vowels; as in—*hésiter, misère, rose*, &c. in which it is always sounded *ze*, thus—*Azdrubal, Alzace, Alzacien, héziter, mizère, roze*, &c.

But *s* is sounded *se* in the following words, although coming between two vowels—*désuétude, monosyllabe, monosyllabique, parasol, polysyllabe, polisynodie, préséance, présupposer, présupposition, vraisemblance, nous gisons, ils gisent, il gisait, gisant.*

When *s* is doubled in the middle of words only one of them is sounded, which is pronounced with its natural sound *se*, but very acute; as—*bossu, bissextil, desséché, desservir, essai, essieu, missel, messéant, passer, poisson*, &c. which are pronounced—*bo-su, bi-sextil, dé-séché, dé-servir, é-sai, é-sieu, mi-sel, mé-séant, poi-son*, &c.

When *s* is final, it is not generally sounded at the end of words, either when used by themselves, or when they occur at the end of a sentence, or before words beginning with a consonant or an *h* aspirated; as—*les grandes villes*, which is pronounced—*lè grande ville.*

But it is sounded *ze* in the Monosyllables *mes, tes, ses, nos, vos, leurs, les, ils*, when they are immediately followed by a word beginning with a Vowel or an *h* mute, and it is joined to it in pronunciation; as—*mes amis, vos intentions, ils aiment*, &c. which are pronounced—*mè-zamis, vo-zintentions, il* or *i-zaimes*

It is likewise sounded *ze* at the end of Adjectives immediately followed by their respective Substantives, if these begin with a Vowel or an *h* mute, being likewise joined to them in pronunciation; as—*les grands hommes, les bonnes œuvres, les grandes actions*, which are pronounced—*lè gran-z'ommes, lè bonne-zœuvres, lè grande-zactions.* But in Substantives, followed by their respective Adjectives beginning with a Vowel or an *h* mute, it is optional either to pronounce *s* with the sound *ze*, or to omit it, particularly in conversation; thus—*des personnes habiles* may be pronounced—*des personne-zhabiles*, or *des personne-habiles.*

S has likewise the same sound *ze*, at the termination of the different Tenses of Verbs, when coming before a word beginning with a Vowel or an *h* mute, in reading or speaking in public, but it is sometimes mute in conversation; thus—*dis à mon frère de venir*, is pronounced, in reading, *di-zà mon frère de venir;* and in conversation, *di-à mon frère de venir*, or *di-zà mon frère de venir.*

In *gens, Jésus, lis, plus que parfait, plus-pétition*, and also *tous* and *plus* taken substantively, as—*tous pensent, je dis plus, bien plus*, &c. *s* preserves its natural sound *se;* but it is silent in *Jésus-Christ, le sens commun, fleur de lis*, and in *plus* and *tous* followed by a word depending on them, beginning with a Consonant or an *h* aspirated, as—*tous les hommes; donnez-moi un peu plus de pain*, which are pronounced *tou lè-z'ommes; donnez-moi un peu plu-de pain.*

S is also sounded *se* in *Atlas, anus, aloès, as, calus, en sus, fœtus, iris, mœurs, prospectus, lapis, laps, locatis*, (cheval de louage,) *vis, vasistas*, and in foreign words, such as—*Bacchus, Chorus, Crésus, Délos, Gilblas, gratis, Pallas, Vénus*, &c.; but it is mute in *Judas, Mathias, Thomas, Jacques*, &c. and in the words *avis, alors, dès que, dès-lors, divers, os, remords, tamis, tandis que, trépas*, and a few others.

§. 15.

T.

T always preserves its natural sound *te*, in the beginning of words, as in—*tenez, ténèbres.*

In the middle of words it is also generally pronounced *te*, when followed by *i;* as in—*amitié, chantier, entier, moitié, pitié, modestie, partie, maintien, soutien, tien, tienne, abstienne, nous partions, nous mettions*, &c. &c. except, 1. in *prophétie, ineptie, inertie, minutie;* 2. in the words terminated in *atie*, as—*démocratie, primatie;* 3. in words ending in *tial, tiel, tion*, as—*partial, essentiel, nation*, &c. with all their derivatives; 4. in proper names in *tien* or *tienne*, as—*Dioclétien, Gratien, Vénitien, Vénitienne*, &c.; 5. in the words *satiété, insatiable, initier, balbutier, patient*, with their derivatives, in which it is sounded *ci*, as if these words were spelt *prophécie, minucie, démocracie, primacie, Vénicien, Dioclécien, saciété, insaciable, inicier, balbucier, pacient.*

T followed by *i* is, however, pronounced *ti* in words ending in *tial* or *tion*, if the *t* is preceded by *s* or *x*, as—*bastion, bestial, mixtion.*

When *t* is doubled in the middle of words, only one is sounded, except in *atticisme, attique, guttural, pittoresque*, in which they are both pronounced; thus—*at-ticisme, at-tique, gut-tural, pit-toresque.*

T final is not generally sounded at the end of words which are used either by themselves or at the end of a sentence; or before words beginning with a Consonant or an *h* aspirated, as—*Qui vient? il lui dit d'y aller*, &c. which are pronounced—*Qui vien? il lui di d'y aller.*

But *t*, at the end of words which are followed by other words beginning with a Vowel or an *h* mute, and with which they are inseparably connected by the sense, is sounded, and consequently joined to them in pronunciation; as—*un savant homme; je suis tout à vous; s'il vient à pleuvoir*, which are pronounced—*un savan-t'omme; je suis tou-tà vous; s'il vien-tà pleuvoir.*

If, however, *t* terminates the Tense of a Verb, and is preceded by *r*, it is not sounded, though followed by a Vowel or an *h* mute, in the beginning of the succeeding word, on account of the harsh sound which would thus result from it, as—*il part aujourd'hui; il court à bride abattue; il s'endort à l'ombre,* which are pronounced—*il paraujourd'hui; il cou-rà bride abattue; il s'endo-rà l'ombre,* and not—*il par-taujourd'hui; il cour-tà bride abattue; il s'endor-tà l'ombre.*

T is likewise mute at the end of some Substantives followed by their respective Adjectives, although beginning with a Vowel or an *h* mute, which is, also, on account of the disagreeable sound that would result from the use of it; indeed, in general, *t* is mute at the end of words whenever the harmony of the sound requires it; thus—*un goût horrible, un tort incroyable,* are pronounced—*un gou-orrible, un to-rincroyable,* as if these words were spelled without *t*, and not—*un gou-t'orrible, un tor-tincroyable.*

T is not sounded in *vingt,* when used either alone or at the end of a sentence, or before a word beginning with a Consonant, or an *h* aspirated; it is also mute in the Numeral Numbers from eighty to ninety-nine inclusively, as—*nous étions vingt; vingt soldats; quatre-vingt-onze hommes,* &c. which words are pronounced as if they were spelt—*nous étions vein; vein soldats; quatre-vein-onze hommes;* but *t* is always sounded in *vingt* when immediately followed by a word beginning with a Vowel, or an *h* mute, and also in the numbers from twenty to thirty, &c. as—*vingt abricots, vingt-deux hommes,* which are pronounced—*vein-tabricots, veint-deux hommes.*

T is likewise mute in *sept* and *huit* followed by a word beginning with a Consonant or an *h* aspirated, as—*sept chemises, huit houppelandes,* which are pronounced as if they were spelt—*sé-chemises, hui-houppelandes;* but it is always sounded in *sept* and *huit,* when they come before a Vowel or an *h* mute, or when they are used either alone or at the end of a sentence, or for expressing the date of the month, in which latter case *t* is even sounded before a Consonant, as—*sept écus, huit hommes, ils étaient sept* ou *huit, le sept de Juin, le huit Septembre,* which are pronounced—*sé-técus, hui-t'ommes, ils étaient sé-tou huit, le set de Juin, le huit Septembre,* &c.

T is never sounded in the Conjunction *et* nor in the words *vent* and *pont,* whether they are followed by a word beginning with a Vowel, an *h* mute, or a Consonant, as—*lui et elle; le vent est haut; le pont est-il fini?* which are pronounced *lui-é-elle, le ven-ès haut, le pon-est-il fini?* and not—*lui é-telle, le ven-test haut, le pon-test-il fini?*

T is likewise mute at the end of the termination *ent* in the Third Person Plural of Verbs, even when followed by a Vowel or an *h* mute, if the Verb is used affirmatively or negatively, but it is pronounced if the Verb is employed interrogatively, as—*ils aiment à parler; ils viennent aujourd'hui,* which are pronounced—*il* or *i-zaime-à parler; il* or *i-vienne-aujourd'hui;* whilst—*lui parlèrent-ils? aiment-ils à jouer?* &c. must be pronounced *lui parlère-til? aime-til à jouer,* &c.

T is not pronounced in *Jésus-Christ,* although it is in *Christ* when used without *Jésus.* It is likewise always mute in *aspect, circonspect, respect,* the final *c* only being heard; but it is always pronounced in *abject, accessit, brut, chut, contact, correct, dot, direct, déficit, est,* (east,) *fat, granit, exact, incorrect, indirect, infect, indult, lest, luth,*

net, prétérit, rapt, rhythme, subit, suspect, strict, tacet, tact, toast, transit, vivat, zénith, zist, zest.

§. 16.

V.

V has always its natural sound—*ve.*

Observe.—*W* is not reckoned in the Letters of the French Alphabet, as it is to be found in French only in foreign names of either persons, places, or things, in the beginning of which it generally takes the sound of *ve*, as in—*Westphalie, Walbon, Wallone, Wirtemberg, Warwick, Washington,* which are pronounced—*Vestphalie, Valbon, Valone, Virtemberg, Varvik, Vazington;* we must except *whist* and *wisky*, in which *w* is pronounced *ou*, thus—*ouist, ouiski.*

W, in the middle and at the end of words, varies in its pronunciation, thus—*Newton* is pronounced *Neuton; Warwick, Varvik;* and *Law, Lasse.*

§. 17.

X.

X has the following different sounds:—

Cs............as in............*extrême.*
Gz ....as in............*Xavier, exemple.*
Ss............as in............*Bruxelles, Auxerre.*
C ....as in............*excellent.*
Z ....as in............*deuxième.*

Observe.—When *x* comes at the beginning of a word (which is only the case in a few foreign names) it is pronounced *cs*, but we must except *Xavier, Xénophon, Ximénès, le Xante, Xantippe,* and *Xerxès,* in which it is sounded *gz*, as follows—*Gzavier, Gzénophon, Gziménès,* (and also *Chiménès,) le Gzante, Gzantippe, Gzersèsse.*

X is likewise pronounced *cs* in the middle of words, when it is followed by a *c* guttural accompanied by one of the three Vowels *a, o, u;* or, when also it is succeeded by any other Consonant than *h*, whatever may be the Vowel following; as—*excuse, excommunié, expédient, inexpugnable,* which are pronounced—*ecs-cuse, ecs-comunié, ecs-pédian, inecs-pugnable;* but if *c* is followed by *e* or *i*, *x* must then be sounded like *c* only, as—*excès, exciter, exception,* &c. which are pronounced—*ec-cès, ec-citer, ec-ception.* *X* is also sounded *cs* in the middle of words, when it comes between two Vowels, if the first letter of the word is not *e*, or if the word does not begin by *in;* as—*axe, Alexandre, luxe, maxime, sexe,* &c. which are pronounced—*ac-se, Alec-sandre, luc-se, mac-sime, sec-se.*

We must, however, except *soixante* and its derivatives, as likewise *Bruxelles, Auxerre, Auxerrois, Auxonne,* in which *x* is sounded like double *s*, thus—*soissante, Brusselles, Aussère, Ausserois, Aussone.*—*Sixième, deuxième, dixième,* must also be excepted, being pronounced—*sizième, deuzième, dizième.*

But when *x* comes between two vowels, and the first letter of the word is *e*, or if the word begins by *in*, *x* is then sounded *gz;* in which case, if there is an *h* after *x*, it is not pronounced: as—*examen, exorbitant, exhérédation, exhiber, exercice, inexorable,* &c. which are pronounced—*ègzamen, ègzorbitan, ègzérédation, ègziber, ègzercice, inègzorable.*

X final is not generally sounded at the end of words, either when they are used by themselves, or when they occur at the end of a sentence, or when, in the middle of a sentence, they precede a word beginning with a Consonant or an *h* aspirated; as—*tu peux le faire; veux-tu y aller?* &c. which are pronounced—*tu peu-le faire; veu-tu y aller?* as if there were no *x*.

We must, however, except the numbers *six* and *dix*, in which *x* is sounded like double *s*, when these words are used either by themselves or at the end of a sentence, although it is not pronounced when they come before a Consonant or *h* aspirated; as—*donnez-m'en six; gardez-lui-en dix; six tables,* &c. which are pronounced—*donnez-m'en siss; gardez-lui-en diss; si tables,* &c.

But *x* final is otherwise sounded *ze*, when coming before words beginning with a Vowel or an *h* mute, and is joined to them in pronunciation; as—*aux amis, aux hommes, chevaux alertes, heureux époux, je veux y aller, tu peux écrire, deux ans, six aunes, dix hommes,* which are pronounced—*au-zamis, au-zommes, chevau-zalertes, heureu-zépoux, je veu-zy aller, tu peu-zécrire, deu-zans, si-zaunes, di-zommes.*

It is likewise sounded *ze* in *dix-huit, dix-neuf,* which are pronounced—*diz-huit, diz-neuf.*

It is sounded *cs* at the end of proper names; as—*Palafox, Fairfax, Styx;* also at the end of these words—*borax, index, lynx, sphinx, préfix,* which are pronounced—*Palafocs, Fairfacs, Stics, boracs, indecs, lincs, sphincs, préfics;* except *Aix*, which is pronounced—*Ais.*

§. 18.

Y.

Y is sounded like *i*, either when it forms a word by itself, or when it comes before a Vowel in the beginning of a syllable; as—*Il y a, yeux, yacht,* &c. which are pronounced—*Il i-a, ieux, iak.*

It has likewise the same sound between two Consonants, as—*acolyte, mystère, style, physique,* &c. which are pronounced—*acolite, mistère, stile, phisique;* but it is sounded like two *i*'s between two vowels, as—*moyen, payer, nous employons, vous essayez,* which are pronounced—*moi-ien, pai-ier, nous emploi-ions, vous essai-iez.* In *Pays* the *y* is also sounded like two *i's*, as—*Pai-i.*

§. 19.

Z.

Z has always its natural sound *ze*, in the beginning and middle of words; as—*zéphyr, amazone.*

It is generally mute at the end of words, either when used by themselves, or when they occur at the end of a sentence, or before a Consonant or an *h* aspirated; as—*vous parlez de moi, vous chantez très-bien,* &c. which are pronounced—*vous parlé-de moi, vous chanté très-bien.*

But *z* is sounded with its natural sound *ze*, at the end of the Second Person Plural of the Tenses of Verbs, when coming before words beginning with a Vowel or an *h* mute, in which case it is joined to

them in pronunciation, when reading or speaking in public, although it may be omitted in conversation; as—*vous aimez à me tourmenter*, which must be pronounced, in reading, *vous aimé-zà-me tourmenter;* but in conversation, either—*vous aimé-à-me tourmenter;* or—*vous aimé-zà-me tourmenter.*

Lastly, *z* is always sounded *se* at the end of foreign proper names; as—*Alvarez, Cortez, Rodez, Suez,* &c. which are pronounced *Alvarés, Cortés, Rodés, Sués,* &c.

ARTICLE III.

Of Prosody.

Prosody, being the art of giving to each syllable its proper pronunciation, consists of two parts: the former comprises *Accent, Quantity, Emphasis, Pause,* and *Tone;* and the latter, the laws of versification; but as *Emphasis, Pause,* and *Tone,* are most particularly adapted to the diction of oratory, and a treatise on versification is introduced towards the end of the second volume of this Grammar, the object of this short article is merely to elucidate *Accent* and *Quantity.*

---

§. 1.

Of Accent.

Accent may be defined—" *the different inflexions and modulations of the voice that are used to pronounce the words of a language with due propriety;*" or, in other words, " *Accent is the raising or lowering of the voice on particular syllables.*" Every people, every nation, every province, and even every town differs one from the other in its language; not only because the inhabitants of each place use different expressions to explain their ideas, but also because they have a different manner of articulating and pronouncing the words. These different modulations, peculiar to each people, are what is well called the *accent national,* by the *Abbé d'Olivet.*

To speak a living language with elegance and purity, it is evidently necessary to have the same accent, or the same inflexion of the voice as those persons of the *capital,* who have lived in the *grand monde;* and when it is said that to speak French well, one must not have any accent; it is to be understood that one must not have either the *Italian* or *Norman,* or any other foreign or peculiar accent, except the *national accent,* or the accent used in the first circles of the French metropolis.

---

§. 2.

Of Quantity.

Quantity signifies *an emission of the voice of a long or short duration,* or *the time employed in the pronunciation of a syllable*; it must not be confounded with the *accent* which is, as before said, *the raising or lowering of the voice in pronouncing a syllable.*

The following general rules on quantity, which are found in *d'Olivet's* Prosody, may prove useful to the student, particularly when reading or speaking in public.

GENERAL RULES ON QUANTITY.

1. Every syllable, the last Vowel of which is succeeded by any other final Consonant than *s* or *z*, is short; as—*fĭl, pŏt, săc, sĕl, &c.*

2. Every Masculine syllable, whether long or short, in the Singular, is always long in the Plural; as—des *pōts,* des *sācs,* des *sēls, &c.*

3. Every Masculine Substantive in the Singular Number, the final letter of which is one of the characteristics of the Plural, has its last syllable long; as—*printēms, nēz, &c.*

4. The last syllable of a word is short, when it is terminated with a liquid *l;* as—*Ăvrĭl, éventăil, fautĕuil, &c.*

5. When a syllable is terminated by *m* or *n*, and is immediately followed in the succeeding syllable by any other Consonant than *m* or *n*, the syllable which is terminated by *m* or *n*, is always long; as—*jāmbe, jāmbon, tāmbour, tōmber, &c.*

6. When *m* or *n* is doubled in a word, the syllable which is terminated by the first *m* or *n*, is short, and the nasal sound disappears; as—*épigrămme, persŏnne, &c.*

7. Every syllable which is terminated by *r*, and which is immediately succeeded in the same word by another syllable beginning with any other Consonant than *r*, is short; as—*bărbe, bărque, bĕrceau infĭrme, ŏrdre, &c.*

8. Every syllable in which two *r*'s immediately succeed each other, whatever Vowel may precede them, is always long, if both the *r*'s form an indivisible sound; as—*ārrēt, bārre, bizārre, tonnērre, &c.*

9. When either *s* or *z*, in the beginning of a syllable, is followed by an *e* mute, and is preceded by any other Vowel than *e* mute, the Vowel going before is long; as—*bāse, bētīse, diocēse, extāse, franchīse, rōse, &c.*

But if *s* or *z*, beginning a syllable, is immediately followed by any other Vowel than *e* mute, and if the syllable is long of itself, this syllable preserves its quantity, and the preceding one frequently becomes short; as—*il s'extăsie, &c.*

10. When either *s* or *r*, terminating a syllable, is immediately preceded by a Vowel, and followed by any other Consonant than *r* or *s*, in the beginning of the succeeding syllable, the syllable concluded by *r* or *s*, is always short; as—*ăstre, bărbe, bĕrceau, funĕste, infĭrme, măsque, ŏrdre, &c.*

11. Every word ending in an *e* mutė, immediately preceded by a Vowel, has the Vowel preceding the *e* mute long; as—*armēe, joīe, joūe, nūe, rūe*, &c.

12. Every syllable which is terminated by a Vowel, and which is immediately followed by another Vowel in the beginning of the succeeding syllable in the same word, provided it is not an *e* mute, is short; as—*actĭon, crĕé, doŭé, hăïr*, &c.

Observe.——It is absolutely necessary for the English student to pay particular attention to the preceding rules on quantity, as on them frequently depends the sense which is to be affixed to the words, there being several expressions in the French language in which the sounds are nearly similar, but which entirely vary in their significations, according as some of their Vowels are pronounced long or short, and consequently, if proper care is not taken in using them, a very different sense may be expressed from what is intended.

To assist in removing this difficulty, we shall give a list of the principal French *Homonymes*, (or words that have a different sense according as they are pronounced long or short,) that are most generally used in familiar conversation.

A List of Homonymes (Homonymous Words) which are most generally used in familiar Discourse.

Ācre,	*sour, sharp.*	Ăcre,	*acre.*
Alēne,	*awl.*	Haleĭne,	*breath.*
Avānt,	*before.*	Avĕnt,	*advent.*
Bāiller,	*to gape, yawn.*	Băiller,	*to give.*
Bāt,	*pack-saddle.*	Băt, (il *ou* elle,)	*he* or *she beats.*
Bēte,	*beast.*	Bĕtte,	*beet.*
Beaūté,	*beauty.*	Bŏtté,	*having boots on.*
Boīte,	*box.*	Boĭte, (il *ou* elle,)	*he* or *she limps.*
Bōnd,	*rebound, gambol.*	Bŏn,	*good.*
Chāir,	*flesh.*	Chĕr,	*dear.*
Clāir, e,	*clear.*	Clĕrc,	*clerk.*
Cōrps,	*body.*	Cŏr,	*corn, French horn.*
Cōte,	*rib, coast, hillock.*	Cŏte,	*number, quota.*
Coūrs,	*course, airing-place.*	Coŭr,	*court, court-yard.*
Craīnt, (il *ou* elle,)	*he* or *she fears.*	Crĭn,	*horse-hair.*
Cuīre,	*to bake, to cook.*	Cuĭr,	*leather.*
Dégoūte, (il *ou* elle,)	*he* or *she disgusts.*	Dégoŭtte, (il *ou* elle,)	*he, she,* or *it drops.*
Dōnt,	*whose, of whom.*	Dŏn,	*gift, present.*
Faīte,	*top, pinnacle.*	Faĭte,	*made, done, (past Participle of* Faire, *to make, to do.)*
Fēte,	*feast, festival.*		
Faīx,	*burden, weight.*	Faĭt, (il *ou* elle,)	*he* or *she makes.*
Faīs, (je,)	*I make.*		
Faīs, (tu,)	*thou makest.*		
Forēt,	*forest.*	Forĕt,	*gimblet.*
Fūmes, (nous,)	*we were.*	Fŭme, (je,)	*I smoke.*
		Fŭmes, (tu,)	*thou smokest.*
		Fŭme, (il *ou* elle,)	*he* or *she smokes.*
Goūte, (je,)	*I taste.*	Goŭtte,	*drop.*
Goūtes, (tu,)	*thou tastest.*		
Goūte, (il *ou* elle,)	*he* or *she tastes.*		
Grāve	*grave.*	Grăve, (je,)	*I engrave.*
		Grăves, (tu,)	*thou engravest.*
		Grăve, (il *ou* elle,)	*he* or *she engraves.*

Hāle,	*sun-burning, drying wind.*	Hălle,	*market-hall.*
Hōte,	*host, guest.*	Hŏtte,	*hamper.*
Jaīs,	*jet, black.*	Jĕt,	*sprig.*
		Jĕt d'eau,	*water-spout.*
Jeūne,	*fast, fasting.*	Jeŭne,	*young.*
Lēgs,	*legacy.*	Laĭd,	*ugly.*
		Laĭt,	*milk.*
Laīsse, (je,)	*I leave.*	Laĭsse,	*leash.*
Laīsses, (tu,)	*thou leavest.*		
Laīsse, (il *ou* elle,)	*he* or *she leaves.*		
Maītre,	*master.*	Mĕttre,	*to put.*
Māle,	*male.*	Mălle,	*trunk.*
Mātin,	*mastiff.*	Mătin,	*morning.*
Moīs,	*month.*	Moĭ,	*I, me.*
Mōnt,	*mount, hill.*	Mŏn,	*my.*
Mūr, mūre,	*ripe.*	Mŭr,	*wall.*
Naīt, (il *ou* elle,)	*he* or *she is born.*	Nĕt,	*neat.*
N'ēst, (il,)	*he* or *it is not.*		
Pāte,	*paste, dough.*	Pătte,	*paw.*
Pāume,	*tennis, palm of the hand*	Pŏmme,	*apple.*
Pēcher,	*to fish.*	Pĕcher,	*to sin.*
Pēne,	*bolt of a lock.*	Peĭne,	*pain, trouble.*
Plaīne,	*plain.*	Pleĭne,	*(Fem. of* Plein*) full.*
Rōt,	*roasted meat.*	Rŏt,	*eructation.*
Sās,	*sieve.*	Să,	*his* or *her.*
		çă,	*here, that, come on.*
Sāut,	*leap, jump.*	Sŏt,	*foolish, silly.*
Saīnt,	*holy.*	Seĭn,	*breast, bosom.*
		Seĭng,	*signature.*
		Ceĭnt,	*girded.*
Saīne, *(Fem. of* sain,*)*	*sound, wholesome.*	Seĭne, (la,)	*the Seine, (river).*
Scēne,	*scene.*		
Cēne,	*Lord's supper.*		
Tēte,	*head.*	Tĕtte, (je,)	*I suck.*
		Tĕttes, (tu,)	*thou suckest.*
		Tĕtte, (il *ou* elle,)	*he* or *she sucks.*
Tāche,	*task.*	Tăche,	*stain, spot.*
Trēs,	*very.*	Traĭt,	*stroke, dart.*
Vaīne,	*(Fem. of* vain*) vain.*	Veĭne,	*vein.*
Vēr,	*worm.*	Vĕrt,	*green.*
Vērs,	*towards.*		
Vērs,	*verse.*		
Vērre,	*glass.*		
Vīvres,	*victuals.*	Vĭvre,	*to live.*
Voīx,	*voice.*	Voĭt, (il *ou* elle,)	*he* or *she sees.*
Vōler,	*to rob, to steal.*	Vŏler,	*to fly.*

ARTICLE IV.

Of Accents.

There are three accents in the French language, called the *acute*, the *grave*, and the *circumflex*.

The *acute accent* is drawn from the right to the left, thus—(ʹ) and is only used over *e*, to which it gives an acute sound, much resembling that of *a* in English; as in the words—*vérité, probité, procédé*, &c.

The *grave accent* is drawn from the left to the right, as follows—(`) and when placed over *e* gives it an open sound, as in—*accès, succès, progrès*, &c.

The *circumflex accent* is formed like a reversed *v*, thus—(^) and gives a long sound to the Vowel under it, as in the words—*âme, fête, gîte, dôme, flûte*, &c.

---

§. 1.

Of the Acute Accent.

The *acute accent* is used in French over every *e* which forms a Syllable of itself or which terminates one, if it has the sound of *a* in English, which is generally the case when it is not followed by a Consonant and an *e* mute, as in the words—*été, vérité, procédé, prémédité, probité*, &c. using it likewise over the *e* of the last Syllable of the same words in their Plural, though followed by an *s*; as—*des procédés*, &c.

The *acute accent* is also used over the last *e* but one in the last syllable of words ending in double *e*, whether they are in the Singular or Plural; as—*une armée, des armées, une pensée, des pensées*, &c. It is likewise used on the final *e* of the Past Participles of all Verbs of the First Conjugation, with this observation, that, should the Participle be employed in its Feminine, either Singular or Plural, the accent is to preserve the same place as in the Singular or Plural Masculine; as—*aimé, aimée, aimés, aimées*, &c.

Lastly, the *acute accent* is used over the final *e* of the First Person Singular of the Present of the Indicative of all Verbs of the First Conjugation, when used interrogatively, and also of those of the Second, which, when used positively, end in *e* mute; as—*aimé-je? donné-je? ouvré-je?* from the Verbs *aimer, donner, ouvrir*.

---

§. 2.

Of the Grave Accent.

The *grave accent* is used in French :—

1. Over every *e* which terminates a syllable, if followed by a Consonant and an *e* mute, as in—*amèrement, père, mère, frère, manière jarretière, ils parlèrent, modèle*, &c. but the words in *ége* are to be excepted, in which the *e* followed by *ge* takes the acute accent; as—*sacrilége, sortilége*, &c.

2. Over the *e* in the last syllable of Substantives ending in *es* in the Singular; as—*procès, succès, décès*, &c. and generally on Adverbs and Prepositions ending in the same way; as—*auprès, après, exprès, près, très*, &c. But we must not confound with these the monosylla-

bles *ces, les, mes, tes, ses,* and the Compound Article *des,* which never take it.

3. Over the Preposition *à,* to distinguish it from the Third Person Singular of the Present of the Indicative of the Verb *avoir,* and from *a* taken substantively. as—*à Paris;—il a;—il ne sait ni A ni B.*

4. Over *là,* Adverb, to distinguish it from *la* Article or Pronoun; as—*allez-là;—la vertu et la science;—aimez-la.*

5. Over *où,* Adverb or Pronoun, to distinguish it from *ou* Conjunction; as—*où allez-vous?—la place où vous aspirez;—vous ou moi.*

6. Over *dès,* Preposition or Conjunction, to distinguish it from *des* Article; as—*dès que j'aurai de l'argent, j'acheterai des livres.*

7. Over *dès* in *dès-lors;* as—*dès-lors, il commença à me mépriser.*

Observe.——It is worthy of remark that when the syllable *des* is used at the commencement of words, it takes the acute accent if followed by a Vowel or an *h* mute, but if followed by a Consonant it takes no accent; as—*désastre, déshonneur, despote.*

---

§. 3.

Of the Circumflex Accent.

The *circumflex accent* is used in French over Vowels which have a long sound.

1. Over *â* followed by *ch,* or by *t* pronounced with its natural sound *te;* as in—*fâcheux, lâche, tâche, bâtir, château, gâteau,* &c. but never when *t* has the sound *ci,* as in *nation,* &c.

2. Over *e* preceding *m* in several words ending in *ême;* as—*même, baptême,* &c. but the ordinal numbers—*deuxième, troisième,* &c. always take the grave accent.

3. Over *i,* in Verbs in *aître* and *oître,* in all the Tenses in which *i* comes before *t;* as—*il paraît, il croît,* &c. from the Verbs *paraître, croître.*

4. Over *o* before the finals *le, me, ne;* as—*pôle, rôle, dôme, fantôme, trône, zône,* &c. and also in—*le nôtre, le vôtre,* Relative Pronouns, to distinguish them from the Conjunctive Adjectives *notre* and *votre,* which are pronounced short.

5. Over *u* in the Adjective *sûr,* to distinguish it from *sur* Preposition; as—*je suis sûr que l'argent est sur la table.*

6. Over *u* in *mûr* (ripe,) to distinguish it from *mur* (wall.)

7. Over *u* in *dû,* the Participle of *devoir,* to distinguish it from *du* Compound Article; but the distinction is made only in the Singular Masculine of the Participle, as there can be no mistake in the Feminine Singular, or in the Plural of either Gender.

8. Over *u* in *tû,* the Participle of the Verb *taire,* that it may be distinguished from *tu* (thou), Personal Pronoun; but still only in the Singular Masculine, for the same reason as for *dû.*

9. Over *u* in *crû*, the Participle of *croître*, either in the Masculine or Feminine, Singular or Plural, to distinguish it from *cru*, the Participle of *croire*.

10. Over the last Vowel of the last Syllable but one in the First and Second Persons Plural of the Preterite of the Indicative, in all Verbs; as—*nous aimâmes, vous aimâtes; nous finîmes, vous finîtes; nous reçûmes, vous reçûtes; nous vendîmes, vous vendîtes*, &c.

11. Over the last Vowel of the Third Person Singular of the Preterite of the Subjunctive; as—*qu'il fût; qu'il eût; qu'il aimât; qu'il finît; qu'il reçût; qu'il vendît*, &c.

12. Over all the following words and their derivatives, which cannot be explained by any general rules:—

1.—*âge, âcre, âme, âne, appât,* (amorce,) *âpre, blâme, dégât, mâle, mât,* (de vaisseau), *pâle.*

2.—*Ancêtres, apprêt, archevêque, arêne, arête,* (de poisson,) *arrêt, bêche, bête, bien-être, champêtre, chêne,* (arbre,) *conquête, crêpe, crête, dépêche, évêque, fenêtre, fête, forêt, frêle, frêne, gêne, grêle, hêtre,* (arbre,) *honnête, intérêt, pêche,* (fruit,) *pêle-mêle, peut-être, prêt, prêtre, protêt, quête, enquête, les rênes* d'un cheval, *rêve, revêche, salpêtre, tempête, tête, les vêpres.*

3. *Abîme, aîné, dîner, épître, faîte,* (sommet,) *fraîche, gaîté, gîte, île, maître, regître, puîné, surcroît, traître vîte.*

4. *Apôtre, aussitôt, bientôt, clôture, côté, côte, dépôt, entrepôt, hôpital, hôte, hôtel, impôt, maltôte, rôt, rôti, suppôt, tôt, plutôt, tantôt, trône, prône.*

5. *Août, affût, bûche, embûche, jeûne,* (abstinence,) *flûte, goût, joûte, piqûre, voûte.*

The following Verbs, (some of which are derived from the above words), take the circumflex accent through all their Tenses and Persons, on the same Vowels on which it is placed in their Infinitive, as—*arrêter, blâmer, bâiller, bêler, brûler, coûter, clôre, dîner, dépêcher, empêcher, enchaîner, être, fêter, flûter, goûter, joûter, mêler, naître, ôter, pêcher, prêcher, prêter, prôner, quêter, rôder, rôtir, traîner, tempêter, vêler, vêtir,* &c. and all those that are derived from them.

---

§. 4.

Of the Apostrophe.

The *Apostrophe* has the form of a Comma, thus—(ʼ); but it is placed above the level of the line, as—*l'*, to denote the suppression of one Vowel before another.

There are only the letters *a, e,* and *i,* which can be suppressed.

I.—*A* and *E* are suppressed in the monosyllables *le, la, je, me, te, se, de, ce, ne, que,* when coming immediately before a word beginning with a Vowel or an *h* mute; as—*l'âme, l'amour, l'homme, j'ai,* &c. instead of—*la âme, le amour, le homme, je ai.*

II.—*E* suffers the same elision: 1. in *jusque*, before *à*, *au*, *aux*, and *ici*; as—*jusqu' à Paris*; *jusqu'au ciel*; *jusqu'aux nues*; *jusqu'ici*, &c.

2. In *puisque* and *quoique* before *il*, *ils*, *elle*, *elles*, *on*, *un*, and *une*; and sometimes before words with which they are immediately connected; as—*puisqu' il le veut*; *quoiqu' il dise*; *puisqu' ainsi est.*

3. In *quelque* before *un* or *une*; as—*quelqu'un*, *quelqu'une*; and also in *quel qu'il soit*, *quelle qu'elle soit*; but in no other case.

4. In *presque* in the compound word, *presqu'île*.

But *e* and *a* do not suffer elision in *ce*, *de*, *le*, *la*, *que*, before *oui*, *huit*, *huitaine*, *huitième*, *onze*, and *onzième*; neither after a Verb in the Imperative Mood, nor in *là* Adverb: thus we write and pronounce—*le oui et le non*; *le huit* ou *le onze du mois*; *le onzième*; *de huit qu'ils étaient*;—*menez-le à Paris*; *ira-t-il là avec vous?* and not *l'oui*; *l'huit*; *l'onze*, *l'onzième*; *d'huit qu'ils étaient*; *menez-l'-à Paris*; *ira-t-il l'avec vous?*

Observe.—*I* suffers elision in the Conjunction *si*, (if,) before *il* and *ils*, but never before *elle* or *elles*, or any other word whatever: thus we write and pronounce—*il ira s'il veut*; *s'ils viennent*; but—*si elle veut*; *si elles viennent*, and not *s'elle veut*; *s'elles viennent.*

---

§. 5.

Of the Hyphen.

The *Hyphen*, in French (*tiret* or *trait d'union*), is a short horizontal line, thus (-), which is used—

1. After a Verb followed by one of the Pronouns *je*, *tu*, *il*, *elle*, *nous*, *vous*, *ils*, *elles*, *le*, *la*, *les*, *moi*, *toi*, *lui*, *leur*, *y*, *en*, *ce*, *on*; as—*dis-moi*, *dépêchez-vous*; *flattons-nous-en*, &c. in which case if the Verb is used interrogatively and ends with a Vowel in the Third Person Singular, a *t* is put between the Verb and the Pronoun, with a hyphen on each side of it; as—*viendra-t-il? parle-t-on?*

2. Between the Pronouns *moi*, *toi*, *nous*, *vous*, *lui*, *elle*, *eux*, *elles*, and the word *même* which sometimes follows them; as—*moi-même*, *lui-même*, &c.

3. Between words so joined that they make but one; as—*arc-en-ciel*, *cure-dent*, *peut-être*, *vis-à-vis*, *c'est-à-dire*, &c.

4. Between the Nouns of Number which are joined together; as—*dix-sept*, *dix-huit*, *dix-neuf*, &c. to *quatre-vingt-dix-neuf*; except between *vingt et un*, *trente et un*, *quarante et un*, *cinquante et un*, and *soixante et un*.

5. Between the monosyllables *ci* and *là*, and the word which precedes or follows them, when they are inseparably connected with it; as—*celui-ci*, *celui-là*, *cet homme-ci*, *cette femme-là*, *ci-dessus*, *ci-dessous*, *là-haut*, *là-bas*, &c.

---

§. 5.

Of the Cedilla.

The *Cedilla* is a little mark which is made nearly like a comma, thus— (¸) and which is placed under *c* followed by *a, o,* or *u,* when it must be sounded like *s;* as—*garçon, leçon, reçu,* which are pronounced *garson, leson, resu.*

Observe.—When *c* has the sound of *s* in the termination of the Present of the Infinitive of Verbs, it preserves it throughout all its Tenses and Persons, and consequently requires a cedilla under it when followed by *a, o,* or *u;* as—*commencer, je commençais; concevoir, je conçus,* &c.

---

§. 6.

Of the Diæresis, Parenthesis, Quotations, and Abbreviations.

1. The *Diæresis,* in French *(la diérèse,* or *le tréma),* is two dots, thus (¨), put over the vowels ë, ï, or ü, to denote, (when they are not of the same syllable as the Vowel preceding them,) that they are to be pronounced separately from it; as in the words—*aïeul, aïe, Antinoüs, Esaü, faïence, Faïencier, héroïque, haïr, laïque, Moïse, Noël, naïf, païen,* &c. which are pronounced *a-ïeul, ha-ïr, Mo-ïse, pa-ïen,* &c.

2. The *Parenthesis* is made thus ( ), and is used to enclose a particular phrase, or an occasional sentence, interposed in the middle of the principal one; as—

> Je crois aussi (soit dit sans vous déplaire)
> Que femme prude, en sa vertu sévère,
> Peut en public faire beaucoup de bien,
> Mais en secret souvent ne valoir rien.
>
> Volt. *La Prude,* act. i. sc. 4.

Observe.—Great use was formerly made of the parenthesis, but it is now nearly superseded by the employment of commas in its stead.

3. The *Quotation* consists of one inverted double comma, thus (“), which is placed at the beginning of a recital, or of a pas-

sage quoted from another author, and repeated at the beginning of every line to the end, with another double comma, thus ("), in its natural position at the end; as—

Je songeais cette nuit que, de mal consumé,
Côte à côte d'un pauvre on m'avait inhumé,
Et que n'en pouvant pas souffrir le voisinage,
En mort de qualité je lui tins ce langage:
" Retire-toi, coquin! va pourrir loin d'ici.
" Il ne t'appartient pas de m'approcher ainsi.
" Coquin, (ce me dit-il, d'une arrogance extrême,)
" Va chercher tes coquins ailleurs, coquin toi-même!
" Ici tous sont égaux: je ne te dois plus rien;
" Je suis sur mon fumier, comme toi sur le tien."

4. The *Abbreviations* are words which are usually shortened and represented by capital letters.

The following are the most common:

M. or Mr.	for *Monsieur*.
Mme	for *Madame*.
Melle	for *Mademoiselle*.
M. M.	for *Messieurs*.
S. M.	for *Sa Majesté*.
S. M. Imp.	for *Sa Majesté Impériale*
S. M. T. C.	for *Sa Majesté Très-Chrétienne*.
S. M. C.	for *Sa Majesté Catholique*.
S. M. B.	for *Sa Majesté Britannique*.
S. M. S.	for *Sa Majesté Suédoise*.
S. A.	for *Son Altesse*
S. A. R.	for *Son Altesse Royale*.
S. A. I.	for *Son Altesse Impériale*.
S. A. E.	for *Son Altesse Électorale*.
S. Ex.	for *Son Excellence*.
S. Émi.	for *Son Éminence*.
S. S.	for *Sa Sainteté*.
Mgr.	for *Monseigneur*.
J. C.	for *Jésus-Christ*.
N. S.	for *Notre Seigneur*.
N. S. J. C.	for *Notre Seigneur Jésus-Christ*.
Md	for *Marchand*.
Mde	for *Marchande*.
Négt	for *Négociant*.

§. 7.

Of Capital Letters.

Capital letters are letters which are larger than the others, and of a different form.

Capital letters are employed in the beginning of the first word of every complete sentence, in prose and poetry, and also of every line in poetry; or more particularly: the first word, either at the beginning of a subject, or after a period or note of interrogation, commences with a capital, whether in prose or verse, and also every single verse in poetry.

Phrases of direct address, as—*Monsieur, Madame, Mademoiselle,* &c. are always begun with a capital, and, in letter-writing, the body of the letter, as well as each portion of the subscription at the end begins with a capital, as—

Monsieur,

J'ai appris avec plaisir que, &c.

and

J'aï l'honneur d'être,

Monsieur,

Votre très-humble et très-obéissant Serviteur,

J. V. D***.

It is also proper to begin the following words with a capital, in whatever part of the sentence they may occur.

1. All appellations of the Deity; as—*Grand Dieu! Etre Suprême!* &c.

2. The proper names of persons, heathen Gods and Goddesses, kingdoms, provinces, towns, places, streets, mountains, rivers, ships, &c.; as—*Napoléon, César, Cicéron, Jean-Jacques Rousseau, Jupiter, Vénus, la France, la Normandie, Paris, Saint-Denis, rue Neuve-des-Petits-Champs, les Alpes, la Loire,* &c.

3. The names of the days of the week, and of the months; as—*Dimanche, Lundi, Mardi,* &c. *Janvier, Février, Mars,* &c.

4. The Substantives and Adjectives derived from proper names; as—*La Henriade, la langue Italienne; à la Française.*

5. The first word of every direct quotation; as—*Il me dit: "Personne que moi,"* &c.

6. The principal words in the titles of books, and single letters used for abbreviations; as—*Atlas Historique, Chronologique,* &c. par *M. De A. Le Sage.*

N.B.—It being the custom in English to write the Pronoun *I* with a capital letter, it is to be attended to, that in French no distinction of this sort is made with the corresponding word *je,* which is never

written with a capital, except at the beginning of a sentence or the commencement of a quotation; as—" *Mais, Madame, je pensais que vous,*" &c. and not *Je*, &c.

§. 8.

Of Punctuation.

Punctuation is the act of distinguishing the terminations of each part of a sentence, by stops, or pauses, according to its sense or its connexion with the whole.

There are six principal stops, which are distinguished by the following figures and names.

1. (,) *Une virgule* ·········· a comma.
2. (;) *Un point et une virgule* ···· a semicolon.
3. (:) *Deux points* ·············· a colon.
4. (.) *Un point* ················ a period, or full stop.
5. (?) *Un point d'interrogation* ·· a note of interrogation.
6. (!) *Un point d'admiration* ···· a note of admiration.

The *Comma* is used to separate either the portions of a complete sentence, or the different members of simple sentences, when each is closely united either in sense or grammatical construction; as—*Chez moi, lui dit-il, Madame, ce n'est ni moi ni ma femme qui commande, c'est la raison.—Ils conviennent tous qu'en effet sa beauté, son air, son regard, le caractère de pudeur et d'innocence empreint sur son visage avait quelque chose d'angélique.*

Le sort fait les parens, le choix fait les amis.
Delille.

The *Semicolon* separates the parts of a compound sentence which are less dependent upon each other, than those divided by commas; it is also used after several passages divided by commas, when their import is summed up; as—*Le bal, la comédie, la promenade; voilà les amusemens du monde.*

Tous les jours je t'attends; tu reviens tous les jours.
Racine.

The *Colon* is employed in a similar manner to the semicolon, but when the sense is more complete; it is also used at a part where the subject might be finished, but beyond which it is prolonged by some additional observation; as—

La fourmi n'est pas prêteuse:
C'est là son moindre défaut.
La Fontaine.

The *Period* marks the termination of the subject, or the completion of each compound sentence, when each is independent; as—*Mon unique chagrin est de paraître ingrat, et de n'avoir pas même l'espérance que mon oncle soit détrompé. S'il est possible, il le sera, lui dis-je. Mais il m'a défendu de vous nommer à lui; et je connais son caractère: il faut l' attendre et ne pas le heurter.*

The *Note of Interrogation* is used at the end of interrogative sentences, unless they are only expressed as quotations; as—*Que voulez-vous?* *Les Tyriens me demandaient, pourquoi je pleurais.*

The *Note of Admiration* is used after interjections and phrases of surprise, joy, grief, &c.; as—*Ah! ah! le petit drôle, Dieux! quel exemple vous choisissiez!*

---

§. 9.

Observations on the Terminations of Words that are spelt alike in English and French.

1. The most part of Substantives and Adjectives that end in English in any of these seven syllables *ble, ce, de, ent, ge, ion,* and *ne,* are the same in French, except as to the difference in pronunciation, and that some require an accent in French; as—

	English and French.	English.	French.
1	*ble*	fable,	*fable.*
2	*ce*	evidence,	*évidence.*
3	*de*	prelude,	*prélude.*
4	*ent*	diligent,	*diligent.*
5	*ge*	age,	*âge.*
6	*ion*	nation,	*nation.*
7	*ne*	machine,	*machine.*

2. Most Nouns ending in English in *ary, ory, cy, ty, ous, our,* and *or,* become French by the change of these terminations, as follows:

1....*ary*	into	*aire;*	as,	military,	*militaire.*
2....*ory*	into	*oire;*	as,	glory,	*gloire.*
3....*cy*	into	*ce;*	as,	clemency,	*clémence.*
4....*ty*	into	*té;*	as,	humanity,	*humanité.*
5....*ous*	into	*eux;*	as,	dangerous,	*dangereux.*
6....*our* or *or*	into	*eur;*	as,	favor,	*faveur.*

---

§. 10.

Observations on the difference of spelling the Greek and Roman proper Names in English and French.

1. The Greek and Roman proper names of men, ending in English in *a*, are the same in French; as—*Agrippa, Caligula, Dolabella, Nerva*, &c.

2. The proper names of women and goddesses, ending in English in *a*, become French by changing the final *a* into *e* mute; as—Cleopatra, *Cléopatre;* Matilda, *Matilde;* Agrippina, *Agrippine;* Diana, *Diane*, &c.

3. The greater part of proper names, ending in English in *as*, become French by changing *as* into *e* mute; as—Eneas, *Énée;* Mecenas, *Mécène;* Pythagoras, *Pythagore*, &c.

4. The proper names, ending in English in *es*, become French by changing that final into *e* mute; as—Demosthenes, *Démosthène;* Ulysses, *Ulysse;* Socrates, *Socrate*, &c.

5. The proper names, ending in *o* in English, become French by changing *o* into *on;* as—Cicero, *Cicéron;* Cato, *Caton;* Dido, *Didon*; Scipio, *Scipion*, &c.

6. The proper names, ending in English in *us* or *ius*, are the same in French, when they consist of two syllables only; as—Brutus, *Brutus;* Cyrus, *Cyrus;* Venus, *Vénus*, &c. But if they are composed of three or more syllables, they generally become French by changing *us* or *ius* into *e* mute; as—Camillus, *Camille;* Esculapius, *Esculape;* Orpheus, *Orphée*, &c.

7. Most proper names, ending in English in *al* or *is*, are the same in both languages, as—*Annibal, Asdrubal, Juvenal, Sésostris*, &c.

8. Most proper names, ending in English in *ander*, become French by changing *ander* into *andre;* as—Alexander, *Alexandre;* Lysander, *Lysandre*, &c.

PART THE SECOND.

ETYMOLOGY.

A General View of the Parts of Speech.

THE Second Part of Grammar is *Etymology*, which treats of the different sorts of words, their various modifications, and their derivation.

There are in French nine sorts of words, or Parts of Speech, namely—the *Article*, the *Substantive*, the *Adjective*, the *Pronoun*, the *Verb*, the *Adverb*, the *Preposition*, the *Conjunction*, and the *Interjection.*

1. An *Article* is a word prefixed to Substantives, to point them out, and to show how far their signification extends; as—*un homme; une femme; le roi.*

2. A *Substantive* is the name of any thing that exists, or of which we have any notion; as—*soleil; Londres; vertu; Alexandre.*

3. An *Adjective* is a word added to a Substantive to express its quality, or manner of being; as—*une belle femme; une grande ville.*

4. A *Pronoun* is a word used instead of a Noun, to avoid the too frequent repetition of the same word; as—*Mon ami est arrivé;* il *m'a apporté de bien jolies choses.*

5. A *Verb* is a word of which the principal use is to express *affirmation*, or to signify *to be, to do*, or *to suffer;* as—*je suis; j'aime; je suis aimé.*

6. An *Adverb* is a part of speech joined to a Verb, an Adjective, and sometimes to another Adverb, to express some quality or circumstance respecting it; as—*il parle bien; un fort bon homme; il écrit très-correctement.*

7. *Prepositions* serve to connect words with one another, and to show the relation between them; as—*il alla* de *Londres* à *Paris; il vit* de *rapine.*

8. A *Conjunction* is a part of speech that is chiefly used to connect sentences, so as, out of two or more sentences, to make but one; it sometimes connects only words; as—*vous* et *lui, vous êtes heureux; le plaisir* et *la peine.*

9. *Interjections* are words thrown in between the parts of a sentence, to express the passions or emotions of the speaker; as—*O ciel! que vous êtes aimable!*

Observe.—We shall now proceed to treat of the different sorts of words just enumerated, and their various modifications, omitting, however, to notice their derivation, as it would involve explanations much too diffuse for the limits of this work.

PRELIMINARY OBSERVATIONS,

Which must be committed to Memory.

I.—OF THE ARTICLE.

The Article in *French* may be divided into Indefinite, Definite, and Partitive. The Indefinite is, *un, une,* a *or* an; the Definite, *le, la, les,* the; the Partitive, *du, de la, des,* some *or* any.

1.—EXAMPLE OF THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

	Mas.	Fem.
A or *an,*	Un,	une.
Of or *from a* or *an,*	D'un,	d'une.
To a or *an,*	A un,	à une.

2.—EXAMPLE OF THE DEFINITE ARTICLE.

	Mas.	Fem.	Before a vowel or *h* mute.	Plural for all.
The,	Le,	la,	l',	les.
Of or *from the,*	Du,	de la,	de l',	des.
At or *to the,*	Au,	à la,	à l',	aux.

3.—EXAMPLE OF THE PARTITIVE ARTICLE.

	Mas.	Fem.	Before a vowel or *h* mute.	Plural for all.
Some or *any*	Du,	de la,	de l',	des.
	De,	de,	d',	de.

II.—OF PRONOUNS.

ARTICLE I.

Personal Pronouns.

1. *Conjunctive Personal Pronouns.*		2. *Disjunctive Personal Pronouns.*	
I,	Je.	Moi,	*I and me.*
Thou,	Tu.	Toi,	*Thou .. thee.*
He,	Il.	Lui,	*He .. him.*
She,	Elle.	Elle,	*She .. her.*
We,	Nous.	Nous,	*We .. us.*
Ye or *you,*	Vous.	Vous,	*You .. ye.*
They,	Ils *or* Elles.	Eux *or* Elles,	*They .. them.*

ARTICLE II.

Possessive Pronouns.

1. *Conjunctive Possessive Pronouns.*

	Singular. Mas.	Fem.	Before a vowel or *h* mute.	Plural for all.
My,	Mon,	ma,	mon,	mes.
Thy,	Ton,	ta,	ton,	tes.
His, her, its,	Son,	sa,	son,	ses.
Our,	Notre,	notre,	notre,	nos.
Your,	Votre,	votre,	votre,	vos.
Their,	Leur,	leur,	leur,	leurs.

2. *Relative Possessive Pronouns.*

	Singular. Mas.	Fem.	Plural. Mas.	Fem.
Mine,	Le mien,	la mienne ;	les miens,	les miennes.
Thine,	Le tien,	la tienne ;	les tiens,	les tiennes.
His, her, its,	Le sien,	la sienne ;	les siens,	les siennes.
Ours,	Le nôtre,	la nôtre ;	les nôtres,	les nôtres.
Yours,	Le vôtre,	la vôtre ;	les vôtres,	les vôtres.
Theirs,	Le leur,	la leur ;	les leurs,	les leurs.

Observe.—The Possessive Pronouns are called Conjunctive when they precede a Substantive; and Disjunctive, when they refer to a Substantive going before. The Conjunctive take the Preposition *de* before them in French, in the sense of *of* or *from* in English, and *à* in the sense of *at* or *to*; whilst the Disjunctive are preceded by *le, la, les,* the; *du, de la, des,* of *or* from the; and *au, à la, aux,* at *or* to the, like a Substantive; as may be seen under the article of Possessive Pronouns hereafter. Both the Conjunctive and Disjunctive agree in gender and number with the Substantive to which they refer.

ARTICLE III.

Demonstrative Pronouns.

1. *Conjunctive Demonstrative Pronouns.*

	Singular. Mas.	Fem.		Plural. Mas.	Fem.
This or *that,*	Ce, cet,	cette ;	*These* or *those,*	Ces,	ces.

2. *Relative Demonstrative Pronouns.*

	Singular. Mas.	Fem.		Plural. Mas.	Fem.
This or *that,*	Celui,	celle ;	*These* or *those,*	Ceux,	celles.
This,	Celui-ci,	celle-ci ;	*These,*	Ceux-ci,	celles-ci.
That,	Celui-là,	celle-là ;	*Those,*	Ceux-là,	celles-là.
This,	Ceci ;		*That,*	Cela.	

Observe.—The above Pronouns, like the Possessive Conjunctive, take *de* before them in French, in the sense of *of* or *from* in English, and *à* in the sense of *at* or *to*. For any further explanation, see the article on Demonstrative Pronouns.

ARTICLE IV.

Relative Pronouns.

Who,	Qui.
Whose, of whom,	De qui, dont.
To whom,	A qui.
Whom,	Que.

1. INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS, WITH REFERENCE TO PERSONS.

Who,	Qui.
Of whom,	De qui.
To whom,	A qui.
Whom,	Qui.

2. *Interrogative Pronouns, used before a Substantive.*

	Singular.		Plural.	
	Mas.	Fem.	Mas.	Fem.
What,	Quel,	quelle ;	quels,	quelles.
Of or *from what,*	De quel,	de quelle ;	de quels,	de quelles.
To what,	A quel,	à quelle ;	à quels,	à quelles.

3. *Interrogative Pronouns, used with reference to a Substantive antecedent.*

	Singular.		Plural.	
	Mas.	Fem.	Mas.	Fem.
Which,	Lequel,	laquelle ;	lesquels,	lesquelles.
Of or *from which,*	Duquel,	de laquelle ;	desquels,	desquelles.
To which,	Auquel,	à laquelle ;	auxquels,	auxquelles.

4. *Indeterminate Interrogative Pronouns, used with reference to things in an indefinite manner.*

What,	Quoi.
Of or *from what,*	De quoi.
To what,	A quoi.
What,	Que.

Note.—The above Articles and Pronouns are fully explained in the following chapters.

CHAPTER I.

OF THE ARTICLES.

The Article, from the Latin Articulus, is a small word, which, without signifying any thing by itself, is prefixed to Substantives, to point them out, and to show how far their signification extends: as—*Le jardin*, the garden; *la maison*, the house; *les rois*, the kings.

Though fully aware that there is but one Article in French, *le*, the, from which the feminine *la*, and the plural *les*, are formed, by a change of termination, as well as the compound, *du*, *des*, *au*, *aux*, by a contraction of the prepositions *de* and *à*, with *le*, *les*; yet, in order to be better understood by the Junior Classes, we shall divide the Article into Indefinite, Definite, and Partitive.

The Indefinite is *un*, *une*, a *or* an, and is so called from being used in a vague and individual sense, to point out one single thing of the kind, in other respects indeterminate: as—*Apportez-moi un couteau et une orange*; Bring me a knife and an orange.

The Definite is *le*, *la*, *les*, the, and is thus named, because it ascertains what particular thing or things are meant: as—*Donnez-moi le livre qui est sur la table;* Give me the book which is upon the table.

The Partitive is *du*, *de la*, *de l'*, *des*, some *or* any, and derives its name from being used before a Noun, to denote a certain number or portion of a thing: as—Give me some bread, *Donnez-moi du pain;* Have you any water? *Avez-vous de l'eau?*

ARTICLE I.

Of the Indefinite Article.

General Rule.—The Indefinite Article, *un* or *une*, a *or* an, is used and *repeated* in French before every Substantive, taken in an individual or numerical sense, although in English *a* or *an* may be placed before the first Substantive only, and understood before those which succeed, if several follow: as—A father, mother, and child; *Un père, une mère, et un enfant.*

If the Indefinite Article be preceded by the Prepositions, *of* or *from*, *to* or *at*; *of* or *from* are expressed by *d'*, with an apostrophe, before *un* or *une;* and *to* or *at* by *à*, as in the following examples:

A book,	Un livre.
Of or *from a book,*	D'un livre.
To a book,	A un livre.
A young lady,	Une demoiselle.
Of or *from a young lady,*	D'une demoiselle.
To a young lady,	A une demoiselle.

Observe.—In the first three exercises the Gender and Number of Nouns will be found marked, but in the succeeding ones this assistance will be discontinued, as

the pupil will be considered conversant with the necessary rules: *m.* at the end of a word will therefore denote a Noun masculine; *f.* a Noun feminine; *v.* a Noun beginning with a vowel; *h.* a Noun which commences with an *h* mute; *pl.* a Noun plural.

The Adjectives which precede their Substantives in English, but which should come after them in French, as well as the construction of those sentences, which might be found too difficult for beginners, are also marked in the following exercises with figures before the French words, the regular order of which must be observed. This assistance will be continued until the pupil be considered sufficiently acquainted with the rules on that subject.

Throughout the exercises, the words which are not to be expressed in French are marked with an asterisk (*) after them; and those which are spelt the same in French as in English with this mark —— under the English word.

When several English words are included within a parenthesis (), they must be translated by the French words only, which are placed under them.

Note.—Whenever a word has been employed more than once in the same exercise, its equivalent in French is not repeated, in order that the pupil may the better recollect it, and in general the French of all words easy to remember will be found gradually omitted, as the pupil advances in the exercises.

EXERCISE.

A man.——A woman.—A waiter.—A chamber-maid.——A maid
homme m. *femme* f. *garçon* m. *femme de chambre* f. *fille* f.

of honour.—The sight of an agreeable landscape.——The look of an
d'honneur *vue* f. [2]*agréable* [1]*paysage* m. *regard* m.

amiable child.——The door of a house.—I have written to a friend.—
[2]*aimable* [1]*enfant* m. *porte* f. *maison* f. *écrit* *ami* m.

He has not spoken to a lady to-day.——She has a good pear.——
parlé *dame* f. *aujourd'hui* *bonne poire* f.

You have a fine apricot.—They had a garden, a park, and a river.—
bel abricot m. *jardin* m. *parc* m. *et* *rivière* f.

I shall have a horse.———Will you have a carriage?———We shall
cheval m. *voiture* f.

not have a new phäeton.———I should have had a blue coat.———
nouveau phaëton m. [2]*bleu* [1]*habit* m.

Would you have had a watch?—Had she not a pair of (silk stockings)
montre f. *paire* f. *de* *bas de soie*

and a pair of (new shoes?)——We had a good dinner.——Had they
souliers neufs pl. *bon dîner* m.

not a good supper?———I have received a letter from a charming
souper m. *lettre* f. *charmante*

young lady.—Give me a glass of water.—Bring me a knife,
demoiselle f. *Donnez-moi* *verre* m. *d'eau* v. *Apportez-moi* *couteau* m.

a fork, and a spoon.———Take a glass of wine.—(Will you take)
fourchette f. *cuiller* f. *Prenez* *de vin.* *Voulez-vous*

a bit of cheese?—I have had a cup of tea, and a dish of coffee.
peu m. *fromage* *tasse* f. *tasse* f. *café*

Mr. S*** (has sent us) a basket of oranges.——We have received
*M. S**** *nous a envoyé* *panier* m. *d'*——— pl. *reçu*

this fruit from a friend.
fruit m. *ami* m.

ARTICLE II.

Of the Definite Article.

The Definite Article may be divided into Simple and Compound. The Simple is, *le, la, les,* the; and the Compound, *du, des,* of *or* from the; *au, aux,* to the: it is formed by a contraction of the Prepositions *de* and *à,* with the simple article *le, les.*

EXAMPLE OF THE DEFINITE ARTICLE.

	Singular.			Plural for all.
	Mas.	Fem.	Before a vowel or *h* mute.	
The,	Le,	la,	l',	les.
Of or *from the,*	Du,	de la,	de l',	des.
To the,	Au,	à la,	à l',	aux.

Observe.—*Le* is used before a Substantive masculine singular, beginning with a consonant or *h* aspirated; *l',* before a noun, either masculine or feminine singular, beginning with a vowel or *h* mute; *les,* before a Noun plural of both genders, either beginning with a vowel, consonant, or *h* mute.

Du and *au* are used instead of *de le,* or *à le,* before a Substantive masculine singular, beginning with a consonant or *h* aspirated; and *des* and *aux,* instead of *de les* or *à les,* before plural Nouns, either masculine or feminine, whether they begin with a vowel, consonant, or *h* mute.

La, de la, à la, must always be used before a Noun feminine singular, beginning with a consonant or *h* aspirated; and *l', de l', à l',* before nouns either masculine or feminine, beginning with a vowel or *h* mute.

EXAMPLES OF THE DEFINITE ARTICLE, WITH DIFFERENT SUBSTANTIVES.

1. *With a Noun Masculine, beginning with a consonant.*

Singular.		Plural.	
The knife,	Le couteau;	*The knives,*	Les couteaux.
Of or *from the knife,*	Du couteau;	*Of* or *from the knives,*	Des couteaux.
To the knife,	Au couteau;	*To the knives,*	Aux couteaux.

2. *With a Noun Masculine, beginning with a vowel.*

Singular.		Plural.	
The love,	L'amour;	*The loves,*	Les amours.
Of or *from the love,*	De l'amour;	*Of* or *from the loves,*	Des amours.
To the love,	A l'amour;	*To the loves,*	Aux amours.

3. *With a Noun Masculine, beginning with an* h *mute.*

Singular.		Plural.	
The man,	L'homme;	*The men,*	Les hommes.
Of or *from the man,*	De l'homme;	*Of* or *from the men,*	Des hommes.
To the man,	A l'homme;	*To the men,*	Aux hommes.

4. *With a Noun Feminine, beginning with a consonant.*

Singular.		Plural.	
The lady,	La dame ;	*The ladies,*	Les dames.
Of or *from the lady,*	De la dame ;	*Of* or *from the ladies,*	Des dames.
To the lady,	A la dame ;	*To the ladies,*	Aux dames.

5. *With a Noun Feminine, beginning with a vowel.*

Singular.		Plural.	
The soul,	L'âme ;	*The souls,*	Les âmes.
Of or *from the soul,*	De l'âme ;	*Of* or *from the souls,*	Des âmes.
To the soul,	A l'âme ;	*To the souls,*	Aux âmes.

But if a Substantive be preceded by the Adjective *tout,* as the contracted Articles *du, des, au, aux,* can never be used before it in such a case, then the Prepositions *de* and *a* must be placed before *tout,* with *le, les* immediately before the Substantive in the sense of *of* or *from the,* or *to the,* in English: as—

Singular.		Plural.	
Every body,	Tout le monde ;	*All men,*	Tous les hommes.
Of or *from every body,*	De tout le monde ;	*Of* or *from all men,*	De tous les hommes.
To every body,	A tout le monde ;	*To all men,*	A tous les hommes.

Of or *from* coming before proper names of persons or places, or before a Pronoun or an Adverb, are expressed by *de,* or *d'* if the word begins with a vowel or an *h* mute ; and *to* by *à* in all cases : as—From Paris to London, *De Paris à Londres ;* That belongs to William or to Peter, *Cela appartient à Guillaume ou à Pierre.*

General Rule.—The Definite Article is mostly used and repeated in French before every Substantive taken in a general or particular sense, and agrees with it in gender and number, whether it be used in English or not: as—*Les dames sont aimables,* Ladies are amiable ; *La vertu est méprisée,* Virtue is despised ; *Le vice est odieux,* Vice is odious ; *Le monsieur, la dame, et le garçon sont partis,* The gentleman, lady, and boy are gone.

EXERCISE.

The father, mother, and children.—The love of glory.—The
père m. *mère* f. *enfans* pl. *amour* v. *gloire* f.

fear of shame.—The pratling of girls.——The malice of the
crainte f. *honte* f. *babil* m. *filles* pl. *malice* f.

boys.———The four seasons of the year.——I have spoken to
garçons pl. *quatre saisons* pl. *année* v. *parlé*

(Mr. D.'s sister.)—Were you not speaking to the child?——Honour
*la sœur de M. D***. Ne parliez-vous pas* *enfant* v. *Honneur* h.

was always his principal object.—Have you given my letter to the
toujours *principal objet* v. *donné* *lettre* f.

man?——The hope of success (never forsook him.)—The lily
homme h. *espoir* v. *succès* m. *ne l'abandonna jamais* *lis* m.

is the emblem of virginity, innocence, purity, and candour.—
emblême v. *virginité* f.——— v. *pureté* f. *candeur* f.
I prefer spring to summer, autumn, and winter.—The east,
préfère printems m. *été* v. *automne* v. *hiver* h. *est* v.
the west, the north, and the south, are the four cardinal
ouest v. *nord* m. *sud* m. ²*cardinaux*
points.——I have been dazzled by the rays of the sun.——
¹*points* pl. *ébloui par rayons* pl. *soleil* m.
I shall go to the village this evening. Will you come with me to the
J'irai *soir* m. *Voulez venir avec moi*
market?—We went together to the country.——The fear of death
marché m. *allâmes ensemble campagne* f. *mort* f.
and the love of glory are natural to all men.——Cut the
amour v. *naturels* *Coupez*
string in two.——Take this to the women.——Send that to the men.
corde en *Portez* *femmes* pl. *Envoyez*
—I come from France and Italy.——He will return from Spain
Je viens ——— *Italie* v. *reviendra* *Espagne* v.
in two months.—That belongs to John or to Peter.——From Paris to
en mois pl. *appartient Jean ou à Pierre*
Amsterdam.—(He is the laughing-stock of) every body.—She told
——— *Il sert de jouet à* *Elle* ²*dit à*
every body of it.—They gave some to all the children.
¹*le* ²*donnèrent* ¹*en*

ARTICLE III.

Of the Partitive Article.

The Partitive Article is *du* for the masculine, *de la* for the feminine, *de l'* before a vowel or *h* mute, *des*; pl. some *or* any.

General Rule.—This article is used in French before a Substantive taken in a partitive sense, to express an indeterminate number or portion of a thing; it answers to the English words, some *or* any, expressed or understood: as—*Donnez-moi du pain, de la viande, et des fruits,* Give me some bread, meat, and fruit.

But when a Substantive taken in a partitive sense is preceded by an Adjective or a Participle: as—Give me some good wine; Show me some nicer silk; the Preposition *de* must then be used, instead of *du, de la, de l', des,* before the Adjective: as—Give me some good wine, *Donnez-moi de bon vin;* Show me some nicer silk, *Montrez-moi de plus jolie soie;* and not—*Du bon vin; de la plus jolie soie.*

It must be particularly observed that it is only when a Substantive is taken in a partitive sense, that *de* is used instead of *du, de la, de l', des,* before the Adjective preceding it; for should it be taken in a ge-

neral or particular and determinate sense, one of the articles *du, de la, de l', des,* must be used before it: as—The consequence of great passions is the blindness of the mind and the corruption of the heart; *La suite des grandes passions est l'aveuglement de l'esprit et la corruption du cœur;* and not—*La suite de grandes passions,* &c.—Give me some of the large paper which is in the warehouse, *Donnez-moi du grand papier qui est au magazin;* and not—*De grand papier,* &c.; in which cases the Article always answers to *of the,* expressed or understood in English, and not to *some* or *any.*

Observe.—Some or *any,* not preceding a Noun, but coming after a Verb, with reference to some thing which has been mentioned before, is also expressed in French by *en,* which is put before the Verb in a simple tense, and before the auxiliary in a compound one: as—Have you any apples? Yes, I have some; *or* no, I have not brought any. —*Avez-vous des pommes? Oui, j'en ai;* or *non, je n'en ai point apporté* —in which case should *some* or *any* be understood in English, *en* must equally be used in French.

En is also used in French before a Verb, which has a Noun of number or an indeterminate Pronoun for its object, referring to something mentioned before: as—Have you a gun? No; I had two very good ones formerly, but I have none now.—*Avez-vous un fusil? Non; j'en avais deux très-bons, mais je n'en ai point à présent.*

Hence, from thence, coming after a Verb expressing that we come from some place mentioned, are also expressed by *en* before the Verb: as—I come from thence; *j'en viens,* but in this case *en* is an Adverb.

EXERCISE.

Note.—The pupil must remember to observe the regular order of the figures which are placed to indicate the construction of those sentences in French, which might otherwise be found too difficult.

Will you give me some bread and butter?—Have you any
[2]donner [1]me pain m. *beurre* m.

(roast meat?)—No, but we have some (very nice boiled meat.)—
rôti m. *non, mais excellent bouilli*

(Do you chose) fat or lean? A little of both, if you
voulez-vous gras m. *ou maigre* m. *peu l'un et de l'autre s'il*

please.—If you have any cheese bring (me some.)—We have
plaît fromage m. *apportez m'en*

some apples, oranges, and lemons.—(There are) some raspberries
pommes pl. ——pl. *citrons* pl. *Voilà framboises* pl.

and strawberries.——Put some oil and vinegar into the
fraises pl. *Mettez huile* h. *vinaigre* m. *dans*

salad. —— Eat some fish. —— (Shall I help you to) some
salade f. *Mangez poisson* m. *Vous servirai-je*

sauce?—Help the* gentleman to some champagne —Have you offered
sauce f. *Servez [4]monsieur [3]à [1] [2]champagne* m. *offert*

any (to the lady?)—Yes, but she prefers drinking some water.—
à madame Oui, mais préfère boire eau v.
(I shall pour you but) some beer.—Will you take some tea?—
Je vais vous verser bière f. *prendre thé* m.
Yes, I will take some with pleasure.—Help yourself to* some
prendrai avec plaisir Servez-vous
sugar and milk.—I hear a noise.—(Let us exercise)
sucre m. *lait* m. *J'entends du bruit* m. *Ayons*
charity towards our neighbours.—We had some fine peaches
charité f. *envers prochain* m. *belles pêches* pl.
and apricots in our garden.—To write well (one must
beaux abricots pl. *dans jardin* m. *Pour* [2]*écrire* [1]*bien il faut*
have) good ink, good pens, and good paper.—France
bonne encre, bonnes plumes, pl. *bon papier* m. *France* f.
produces wine, oranges, and olives.—I have brought you some*
produit vin m. ——pl. ——pl. *Je* [2]*ai* [3]*apporté* [1]*vous*
of the fine cloth you (asked me for.)—You have some beautiful
beau drap m. *que m'aviez demandé superbe*
(gold lace,) will you give (me some?)—If you want any,
dentelle d'or [3]*donner* [1]*m'en Si voulez*
buy some.—(Did the woman bring) any grapes? No, she
achetez-en La femme a-t-elle apporté raisin Non
(could not) get any.—In that case I should be obliged to*
n'a pas pu trouver En cas m. [1]*je* [3]*serais* [4]*obligé*
you if you could procure me some.—(Are you going) to the
[2]*vous pouviez* [2]*procurer* [1]*m' en Allez-vous*
park? No, we are coming (from it.)—(How many servants
parc m. *Non* [2]*venons* [1]*en Combien de domestiques*
does he keep?) Two in general, but he has (only one) at present.
a-t-il général n' qu'un à présent.

CHAPTER II.

OF SUBSTANTIVES.

A Substantive is the name of any person or thing that exists, or of which we have any notion: as—*Napoléon*, Napoleon; *soleil*, sun; *Londres*, London; *vertu*, virtue, &c. &c.

From this definition, Substantives may be divided into proper and common.

Proper names are the names appropriated to individuals, for the purpose of distinguishing them from others of the same kind, as one man from another man, one town from another town, &c.: as—*Paris, Londres, Nelson, César.*

Common Nouns are names which, though frequently used to denote a single person or thing, include a collective idea of the whole class of objects which they express: as—*homme*, man; *arbre*, tree; *maison*, house; &c.

Among Common Nouns we must distinguish the Collective, which are thus called, because, although used in the singular number, they present to our mind the idea of several persons or things of the same kind; they are of two sorts, the Collective Partitive and the Collective General.

The Collective Partitive are those which denote a part of the things or persons of which we speak; they express an indeterminate quantity, and are preceded by the words *un* or *une*: as—*Une foule de peuple*, a crowd of people; *Une multitude de femmes*, a multitude of women.

The Collective General denote either the totality of persons or things of which we speak, or a determined number of those persons or things; they are always preceded by one of these words, *le, la, les; ce, cet, cette:* as—*La totalité des Français*, the totality of the French; *Le nombre des victoires qu'il a gagnées*, the number of victories which he has gained; *La moitié des hommes*, the half of men; *Cette sorte de fruit*, this kind of fruit.

For any further explanation on these Nouns, see the Syntax.

ARTICLE I.

Of the Gender of Substantives.

There are two genders in French, the Masculine and the Feminine.

The Masculine belongs to men, and all animals of the male kind; also to those objects to which we fancifully attribute the qualities of the male: such as—*Napoléon*, Napoleon; *César*, Cæsar; *éléphant*, elephant; *cheval*, horse; *ange*, angel; *génie*, genius, &c.

The Feminine belongs to women, and all animals of the female kind, as well as to all objects to which we attribute feminine qualities: as—*Minerve*, Minerva; *Venus*, Venus; *Junon*, Juno; *lune*, moon, &c.

But as there are a great many Nouns the gender of which could never be ascertained from the above division, we shall establish the following general rule, which, though liable to numerous exceptions, will be found of much practical utility.

General Rule.—All Nouns ending in a Consonant, or in *a, i, o, u,* and also in *é* accented not preceded by *t*, are generally masculine, whilst all those ending in *e* mute, or *é* accented preceded by *t*, are feminine: as—*combat*, fight; *débat*, debate; *opéra*, opera; *oubli*, oblivion; *écho*, echo; *chapeau*, hat; *café*, coffee; *pré*, meadow; *aiguille*, needle; *pomme*, apple; *plainte*, complaint; *bonté*, goodness; *pitié*, pity, &c. &c.

Exceptions.

1. TO NOUNS ENDING IN A CONSONANT.

All Nouns ending in *eur*, *ion*, *x*, and also *son* preceded by a vowel, are generally feminine: as—*sœur*, sister; *nation*, nation; *noix*, nut; *prison*, prison, &c. &c.

The forty following ending in a Consonant, and *i*, *u*, are also feminine: *brebis*, sheep; *boisson*, drinking; *chanson*, song; *clef*, key; *cour*, court; *cuiller*, spoon; *cuisson*, baking; *chair*, flesh; *dent*, tooth; *dot*, portion; *eau*, water; *faim*, hunger; *fin*, end; *fois*, time; *forêt*, forest; *façon*, making; *foi*, faith; *fourmi*, ant; *glu*, birdlime; *hart*, halter; *leçon*, lesson; *loi*, law; *main*, hand; *maman*, mamma; *moisson*, harvest; *mousson*, monsoon; *mer*, sea; *mort*, death; *merci*, mercy; *nuit*, night; *nef*, the body of the church; *part*, part; *peau*, skin; *rançon*, ransom; *soif*, thirst; *souris*, mouse; *tour*, tower; *tribu*, tribe; *vertu*, virtue; *vis*, screw.

But these are masculine, although ending in *eur*, *ion*, *x*, and *son* preceded by a vowel: *bonheur*, happiness; *bastion*, bastion; *champion*, champion; *croupion*, rump; *cœur*, heart; *chœur*, choir; *crucifix*, crucifix; *choix*, choice; *déshonneur*, dishonor; *équateur*, equator; *flux*, flux; *garçon*, waiter, boy; *horizon*, horizon; *honneur*, honor; *labeur*, labour; *lampion*, lamp; *million*, million; *malheur*, misfortune; *oison*, gosling; *prix*, price; *pleurs*, tears; *poison*, poison; *péson*, steel-yard; *reflux*, reflux; *septentrion*, north; *scorpion*, scorpion; *tison*, brand.

2. TO NOUNS ENDING IN *E* MUTE.

All Nouns ending in *age*, *acle*, *aire*, *aume*, *ége*, *ême*, *isme*, *ôme*, *oire*, *uge*, are generally masculine: as—*attelage*, a set of horses; *obstacle*, obstacle; *salaire*, salary; *royaume*, kingdom; *baptême*, christening; *privilége*, privilege; *Judaïsme*, Jewish religion; *dôme*, dome; *directoire*, directory; *déluge*, flood, &c. Except *cage*, cage; *crême*, cream; *écritoire*, inkstand; *gloire*, glory; *histoire*, history; *image*, image; *memoire*, memory; *mâchoire*, jaw; *nageoire*, fin; *page*, page; *poire*, pear; *passoire*, colander; *rage*, rage; *racloire*, strickle; and a few others, which are feminine.

The following are also masculine: *athée*, atheist; *augure*, augury; *beurre*, butter; *cimetière*, churchyard; *carrosse*, coach; *codicille*, codicil; *chèvre-feuille*, honey-suckle; *colosse*, colossus; *derrière*, back; *espace*, space; *foie*, liver; *génie*, genius; *grade*, degree; *incendie*, fire, conflagration; *intervalle*, interval; *libelle*, libel; *mérite*, merit; *murmure*, murmur; *mercure*, mercury; *mausolée*, mausoleum; *parjure*, perjury; *parterre*, pit and flower garden, *prélude*, prelude; *parapluie*, umbrella; *silence*, silence; *tonnerre*, thunder; *trophée*, trophy; and some others.

3. TO NOUNS ENDING IN É ACCENTED, PRECEDED BY T.

These Nouns: *comté*, county; *côté*, side; *comité*, committee; *été*, summer; *pâté*, pie; *traité*, treaty; are masculine, although ending in *é* accented, preceded by *t*.

General Observations.

The following remarks on the gender of several Nouns, and proper names of things, will be found very useful, although the gender of some of them may be ascertained from the above General Rule and Exceptions.

1. All Substantives generally used with reference to men alone, or to male animals, are masculine, whatever may be their termination: as—*usurpateur*, usurper; *vainqueur*, conqueror; *juge*, judge: whilst all those generally attributed to women, or to female animals, are feminine, although their termination may be masculine.

2. The names of virtues, vices, and qualities, are feminine: as—*prudence*, prudence; *justice*, justice; *bonté*, goodness; except *courage*, courage; *orgueil*, pride; *mérite*, merit; which are masculine.

3. The names of days, months and seasons, are masculine: as—*un dimanche*, a Sunday; *Janvier prochain*, January next; *le printemps*, the spring; *un été pluvieux*, a wet summer; *un bel automne*, a fine autumn; *un hiver froid*, a cold winter.

When *mi*, middle, is used before the name of a month, it forms with it a compound word, which is feminine: *la mi-juin*, the middle of June; *la mi-août*, the middle of August, &c.

4. The names of winds are masculine: *le sud*, the south; *le nord*, the north; *l'est*, the east; *l'ouest*, the west; except *bise*, north-east-wind, and *tramontane*, tramontane, which are feminine.

5. The names of mountains are masculine: as—Etna, Mont Blanc, Saint Gothard, Chimboraco, Cenis, &c.; but *les Alpes*, the Alps; *les Pyrénées*, the Pyrenees; *les Cordillères*, the Cordilliers; *les Vosges*, the Vosges; are feminine.

6. The names of empires, kingdoms, states, republics, provinces, towns, boroughs, and villages, which end in French in a consonant, in *a, i, o, u*, or in *é* accented, not preceded by *t*, are masculine: as—*Portugal, Danemarck, Piémont, Paris, Londres, Paramé*, &c.; whilst those which end in *e* mute, or *é* accented preceded by *t*, are feminine: as—*France, Angleterre, Allemagne, Espagne, Hollande, Italie, Prusse, Rome, Mantoue, Toulouse*, &c.

When, however, in the elevated style, we address a town as we do a person, it is always feminine, though it may end with a consonant: as—*Malheureuse Tyr! dans quelles mains es-tu tombée!* Unfortunate Tyre! into what hands hast thou fallen!

Jerusalem, Ilion, Sion, are always feminine.

7. Words denoting the language of a country are masculine: as—*l'Anglais*, English; *le Français*, French; *l'Italien*, Italian; &c.

8. The names of metals, half-metals, minerals, and colours, are masculine: as—*l'or*, gold; *l'argent*, silver; *le cuivre*, copper; *l'étain*,

pewter; *le rouge,* red; *le bleu,* blue; &c. except *la platine,* platina, which is feminine.

9. The names of trees and shrubs are masculine: as—*chêne,* oak; *hêtre,* beech-tree; *frêne,* ash-tree; &c. but *aubépine,* white thorn; *épine,* thorn; *ronce,* bramble; *yeuse,* holm-oak; *vigne,* vine; are feminine.

10. The infinitives of verbs, adjectives, prepositions, and even sentences taken substantively, are masculine: as—*le manger,* eating; *le boire,* drinking; *le bon et le mauvais,* good and bad; *un car,* a for; *un si,* an if; *un qu'en dira-t-on,* a what will they say.

11. The cardinal numbers, *un, deux, trois, quatre,* &c. the ordinal, *premier, second, troisième,* &c.; the names of decimal divisions and quantities, *centième,* hundredth, *gramme,* &c. are masculine.

But *une, première, seconde,* are always feminine; and if any of the other numbers be preceded or followed by a Substantive feminine to which it refers, it is then considered as feminine, to agree with it: as—*la vingtième fois,* the twentieth time; *la quatrième femme,* the fourth woman; *règle dixième,* rule the tenth.

12. Compound words joined by a hyphen are masculine or feminine according as the principal word is itself masculine or feminine: for instance—*avant-coureur,* forerunner, is masculine, because the principal word, *coureur,* signifies a courier, which service is generally performed by a man.

13. Derivatives are of the same gender as the noun from which they are derived: for instance—*globule,* globule, is masculine, because it comes from the word *globe,* which is masculine; *monticule,* small hill, is masculine, it being derived from the masculine *mont,* hill; *pellicule,* pelicle, is feminine, as it comes from the feminine *peau,* skin.

14. Nouns which have two genders are either masculine or feminine according to the point of view under which they are considered.

Observe.—The above remarks upon the gender of Substantives are not intended to apply to every case, the intention being merely to give a general view of the subject, for the exceptions to any rule which could be offered are so numerous that practice alone can make the pupil a proficient in this part of French Grammar.

EXERCISE.

In writing the following exercise, the pupil must remember to observe the regular order of the figures which are placed before the French words to indicate the construction of those sentences, which might otherwise be found too difficult.

Whenever a figure occurs without any French word after it, it is because the pupil is supposed to know that word, and he is to place it in the order indicated by the figure.

In the following exercise, the adjectives will be found spelt either in the masculine or feminine, singular or plural, according to the gender and number of the substantive to which they refer.

The French and English have had a dreadful sea-fight.—Have
Français *Anglais* *terrible* *combat naval.*

you been to the play this season?—No; but (I am going) this evening
comédie *saison* *mais* *je vais* *soir*

to the opera.—We have some very nice brandy (will you take any?)
opéra. *bien bonne eau-de-vie* *en voulez-vous*

—Yes; give me some.——(I want) a new hat.——Well; go
donnez m'en *Il me faut* [2]*neuf* [1]*chapeau.* *hé bien* *allez*

(and buy) one.—We all went into a boat.—Do* you sell
en acheter [2]*tous* [1]*allâmes dans* *bateau* [2]*vous* [1]*vendez*

coffee?—No; we (only sell tea.)——I have a beautiful horse
café? *ne vendons que du thé* *superbe cheval*

in that large meadow.——Listen to* the echos repeating the
grande prairie *Ecoutez* *échos* pl. *qui répètent*

sweet sounds of her melodious voice.——It is a forgetfulness
doux sons pl. [2]*harmonieuse* [1]*voix* *C'est* *oubli*

(I shall never forgive.)——Give her an apple and a pear.—
que je ne pardonnerai jamais *Donnez-lui* *pomme* *poire*

Lend me a needle.—Goodness is the basis of his character.—The
Prêtez-moi *aiguille* *Bonté* *base* *caractère*

complaint (you made) has not been listened to.*—My sister is
plainte *que vous avez faite* *écoutée* *sœur*

gone out.—The French nation is very powerful.—Show him a nut.
sortie [2]*Française* [1]*nation* *très-puissante* *Montrez-lui* *noix*

—Where is the (Fleet prison?)——She sang a pretty song.—
Où *prison de Fleet?* *chanta* *jolie chanson*

The key is on the table.—Go into the yard, and* you will see them.
clef *sur* *table* *Allez* *cour* [2]*verrez* [1]*les*

—I have a loose tooth which (pains me very much.)—
[2]*qui* [3]*branle* [1]*dent* *me fait un mal terrible*

That water is not good.—Have patience, (here is) the end of it.—We
eau *bonne* ——— [2]*voici* [3] [4]*fin* [1]*en*

(did not punish him) the first time he hid himself.—Have they
ne le punîmes pas *fois qu'* [2]*cacha* [1]*se.*

not a park and a river in the forest.—He assured me upon his
parc *rivière* *forêt* [2]*assura* [1]*m'* *sur*

faith (that he would not do it.)—The law is abolished.—She promised
foi *qu'il ne le ferait pas* *loi* *abolie* [2]*promit*

him her hand.——Stop, sir, my mamma (is coming.)—The harvest is not
[1]*lui* *main* *Attendez* *maman* *vient* *moisson*

yet finished.—They had a bad night.—(I am very fond of)
encore finie. *mauvaise nuit* *J'aime beaucoup*

the sea.—Death (pities nobody.)——(There is) his portion.——
mer *Mort* *a pitié de personne* *voilà* ———

Thirst is worse than hunger.—Virtue is amiable.—A great misfortune
Soif *pire que faim* *Vertu* *aimable* *grand malheur*

befel them in America.—Her happiness is not (to be envied.)
[2]*arriva* [1]*leur* *en Amérique* *bonheur* *à envier*

—We had a* sickness at the (stomach) all the way.—She has
mal *cœur pendant* *trajet*

made a good choice.—Call the waiter.—The horizon is red.—
fait bon choix. Appelez garçon ——— *rouge*
Upon my honor (there was) nearly a million of men. —— It is an
Sur honneur il y avait près d' *hommes* pl. *C'est*
enormous price.—Do* not drink that, it is poison.—A delightful
[2]énorme [1]prix ne buvez pas c'est ——— *charmant*
landscape.—A great age.—An insurmountable obstacle.—Her salary
paysage âge [2]insurmontable [1]——— *salaire*
is not very high.—England is a kingdom.—Have you not the (London
très-grand Angleterre royaume direc-
directory?)——A pretty cage.—Where is the cream?—Bring me
toire de Londres jolie ——— *crême Apportez-moi*
the inkstand.—He told me a long story.—She has not a good
encrier [2]dit [1]me longue histoire
memory.—A page or two.—He is an atheist—The church-yard is not
memoire ——— *ou C'est athée cimetière*
far from here.—She keeps a (handsome carriage.)—(There was)
loin d'ici a carrosse de toute beauté Il y a eu
a fire last night. —An interval of two days.—What merit
incendie [2]dernière [1]nuit intervalle jours pl *mérite*
(is there in that?)—Have you taken mercury?—If we go to the
y a-t-il à cela pris mercure allons
play, we shall go (into the) pit.———(Will you not) lend
spectacle irons au parterre Ne voulez-vous point [2]prêter
me an umbrella?—(There was) a great silence, when the thunder
[1]me parapluie Il régna profond ——— *quand tonnerre*
(was heard.)—The county of Essex is not so populous as that of
se fit entendre comté ——— *si peuplé que*
Middlesex.—I have (a pain in my) side.—A committee (was held,) a
——— *mal au côté* [2] *comité* [1]*on tint*
(the City of London tavern.)—We have had a fine summer.—I
la taverne de la Cité de Londres bel été
will take some of that pie.—The treaty is made.——He is an
prendrai un peu pâté traité fait C'est
usurper.——Napoleon was a great conqueror.——She was a* good
usurpateur Napoléon conquérant bon
judge.—Prudence and justice are very commendable.—English and
juge ——— ——— *louable* pl. *Anglais*
Italian are not so difficult to learn as French.——Copper is
Italien difficiles pl. *à apprendre Français Cuivre*
very useful.—A fine oak.—A young vine.
utile chêne jeune vigne.

ARTICLE II.

OF NUMBER IN SUBSTANTIVES.

FROM the definition already given of Substantives, we may infer that they admit of two Numbers, the singular and the plural; the singular when they refer to one person or thing, and the plural when they refer to more than one.

As the singular presents no difficulty whatever, we shall proceed to examine how the plural is formed.

PLURAL OF SUBSTANTIVES.

GENERAL RULE.—The plural of Substantives, either masculine or feminine, is generally formed by adding *s* to the singular: as—*le prince*, the prince; *les princes*, the princes; *le roi*, the king; *les rois*, the kings; *la loi*, the law; *les lois*, the laws.

EXCEPTIONS.

1. Nouns ending in *s*, *x*, or *z*, in the singular, are the same in both numbers: as—*le lis*, the lily; *les lis*, the lilies; *la croix*, the cross; *les croix*, the crosses; *le nez*, the nose; *les nez*, the noses.

2. Nouns which terminate in *ant* or *ent* in the singular change the *t* into *s* for the plural, in polysyllables, but preserve it in monosyllables, and add *s* to it: as—*appartement*, apartment; *appartemens*, apartments; *dent*, tooth; *dents*, teeth.

There are, however, some highly esteemed authors who equally preserve the *t* in polysyllables.

3. Nouns which end in *au*, *eu*, or *ou*, in the singular, take an *x* in the plural: as—*chapeau*, hat; *chapeaux*, hats; *jeu*, game; *jeux*, games; *chou*, cabbage; *choux*, cabbages.

But *clou*, nail; *cou*, neck; *filou*, pickpocket; *fou*, fool; *hibou*, owl; *licou*, halter; *loup-garou*, lycanthropist; *matou*, ramcat; *verrou*, bolt; *trou*, hole; *bleu*, blue; follow the general rule, taking an *s* for the plural.

4. The greater part of nouns ending in *al* or *ail* in the singular become plural by changing *al* or *ail* into *aux*: as—*cheval*, horse; *chevaux*, horses; *travail*, work; *travaux*, works.

Bal, ball; *carnaval*, carnival; *détail*, retail; *éventail*, fan; *régal*, regale; *sérail*, seraglio; *gouvernail*, rudder; *poitrail*, the breast of a horse; follow the general rule and take an *s* for the plural.

Ciel, heaven; *œil*, eye; make in the plural *cieux*, heavens; *yeux*, eyes; but *ciel* used to denote the shade of a picture, or the top of a bed, makes *ciels* in the plural: as—*Les ciels de ce tableau sont admirables*, the shades of that picture are beautiful; *Les ciels de ces lits sont de toute beauté*, the tops of those beds are magnificent. We

also use the plural *ciels* in speaking of the sky under which a country lies: as—*L'Italie est sous un des plus beaux ciels de l'Europe*, Italy is under one of the finest skies in Europe. *Œil* makes *œils* in the plural in speaking of the fat of soup or of cheese, when it forms small round globules on the surface: as—*Voyez les œils de cette soupe, de ce fromage*, see the fat of that soup or cheese.—We likewise say: *Des œils de bœuf*, oval windows.

Aïeul, grandfather, makes *aïeuls* in the plural, when we speak of our paternal and maternal grandfathers: as—*Mes deux aïeuls ont rempli les premières charges*, my two grandfathers have filled the highest situations; but if we wish to denote those from whom our grandfathers descend, and all those who have preceded them, *aïeul* makes then *aïeux* in the plural: as—*Nos aïeux*, our ancestors.

OBSERVE.—As there are a great many words which have no plural, and others which have no singular, we think proper to quote some of the most necessary.

1. The names of metals when unwrought have no plural: as—*l'or*, gold; *l'argent*, silver; *le fer*, iron; *le plomb*, lead, &c.

2. The names of aromatics have no plural; *le baume*, balm; *l'encens*, incense; *la myrrhe*, myrrh, &c.

3. The names of virtues and vices have no plural: as—*la chasteté*, chastity; *la charité*, charity; *le courage*, courage; *le désespoir*, despair; *l'espérance*, hope; *la foi*, faith; *la haine*, hatred; *l'innocence*, innocence; *la pudeur*, modesty, &c. &c.

The following also have no plural: *artillerie*, artillery; *adolescence*, adolescence; *bonheur*, happiness; *bile*, bile; *courroux*, wrath; *douceur*, mildness; *disette*, scarcity; *enfance*, infancy; *estime*, esteem; *faim*, hunger; *fin*, end; *gloire*, glory; *honte*, shame; *impuissance*, impotency; *jeunesse*, youth; *lait*, milk; *morale*, moral; *mépris*, contempt; *molesse*, softness, effeminacy; *noblesse*, nobility; *obéissance*, obedience; *odorat*, smell; *ouïe*, hearing; *pauvreté*, poverty; *paresse*, laziness; *pourpre*, spotted fever; *prochain*, neighbour; *renommée*, fame; *repos*, rest; *santé*, health; *silence*, silence; *salut*, salvation; *sang*, blood; *soif*, thirst; *sommeil*, sleep; *vieillesse*, old age; *virilité*, manhood; and some others.

4. Adjectives and infinitives of verbs substantively used have no plural: as—*Le bon et le mauvais*, good and bad; *le lever*, rising; *le manger*, eating, &c.

5. All foreign words which are not naturalized, all adverbs, prepositions, conjunctions; the letters of the alphabet; ciphers, the notes of music, are never used in the plural, thus we say: *Des si, des pourquoi, des oui, des non, des A, des B, des que, des te deum, des post-criptum*, &c.

On n'écoute ni les si ni les mais,
Sur l'étiquette on me fit mon procès.
Le p. du cerceau.

6. But these have no singular, *atours*, elegant dress; *ancêtres*, ancestors; *annales*, annals; *armoiries*, coat of arms; *arrérages*, arrears; *accordailles*, espousals; *broussailles*, briars; *besicles*, spectacles; *catacombes*, catacombs; *ciseaux*, scissars; *calendes*, calends; *confins*, borders; *décombres*, rubbish; *dépens*, cost; *doléances*, grievances; *entraves*, shackles; *écrouelles*, the king's evil; *entrailles*, bowels; *épousailles*, espousals; *fiançailles*, betrothing; *fonts*, fonts; *frais*, expenses; *funérailles*, funeral; *hardes*, clothes; *immondices*, filth; *mânes*, manes; *matériaux*, materials; *matines*, matins; *mœurs*, morals; *mouchettes*, snuffers; *munitions*, ammunition; *nippes*, clothes; *obsèques*, obsequies; *pleurs*, tears; *prémices*, first fruits; *proches*, relations;

représailles, reprisals; *ténèbres*, darkness; *vêpres*, vespers; *vitraux*, the large glass windows of a church; *vivres*, provisions.

Plural of Compound Words.

General Rule.—Compound words, that is to say, words united by a hyphen, either do or do not admit the mark of the plural, according as the sense or nature of each word, taken separately, expresses the singular or plural.

The only words which can never admit a plural in compound words are the verb, preposition, and adverb: as—*des casse-noisettes*, nutcrackers; *des avant-coureurs*, forerunners, &c.

Words also composed of Latin or foreign words do not generally admit a plural; thus we write: *des forté-piano*, as *un forté-piano; des auto-da-fé*, as *un auto-da-fé;* we also write: *des in-douze, des in-dix-huit*, &c. as *un in-douze, un in-dix-huit*, &c.

To facilitate the application of the above rule, we have subjoined a list of the compound words most in use, with the correct spelling in the singular and plural.

Singular.	Plural.
Un avant-coureur.	Des avant-coureurs.
Un avant-propos.	Des avant-propos.
Une avant-garde.	Des avant-gardes.
Une arrière-garde,	Des arrière-gardes.
Une après-midi.	Des après-midi.
Une après-dinée.	Des après-dinées.
Une basse-cour.	Des basses-cours.
Un arc-en-ciel.	Des arcs-en-ciel.
Une basse-fosse.	Des basses-fosses.
Un bel-esprit.	Des beaux-esprits.
Un beau-fils.	Des beaux-fils.
Un beau-frère.	Des beaux-frères.
Un beau-père.	Des beaux-pères.
Une belle-de-nuit.	Des belles-de-nuit.
Une belle-de-jour.	Des belles-de-jour.
Une belle-fille.	Des belles-filles.
Une belle-mère.	Des belles-mères.
Une belle-sœur.	Des belles-sœurs.
Un bien-aimé.	Des bien-aimés.
Un bon-chrétien.	Des bons-chrétiens.
Un brûle-tout.	Des brûle-tout.
Un bas-fond.	Des bas-fonds.
Un blanc-bec.	Des blancs-becs.
Un casse-cou.	Des casse-cou.
Un casse-tête.	Des casse-tête.
Un casse-noisettes.	Des casse-noisettes.
Un cerf-volant.	Des cerfs-volans.
Un chasse-mouches.	Des chasse-mouches.
Un chausse-pied.	Des chausse-pied.
Un chef-d'œuvre.	Des chefs-d'œuvre.
Un chef-lieu.	Des chefs-lieux.
Un chevau-leger.	Des chevau-legers.
Un chèvre-feuille.	Des chèvre-feuilles.
Un chou-fleur.	Des choux-fleurs.

Singular.	Plural.
Un ciel-de-lit.	Des ciels-de-lit.
Un ciel-de-tableau.	Des ciels-de-tableau.
Un contre-amiral.	Des contre-amiraux.
Une contre-danse.	Des contre-danses.
Un contre-ordre.	Des contre-ordres.
Un contre-poison.	Des contre-poison.
Une contre-révolution.	Des contre-révolutions.
Un coq-à-l'âne.	Des coq-à-l'âne.
Un corps-de-garde.	Des corps-de-garde.
Un coupe-gorge.	Des coupe-gorge.
Un coupe-jarret.	Des coupe-jarret.
Un coupe-tête.	Des coupe-tête.
Un cure-oreilles.	Des cure-oreilles.
Un cure-dents.	Des cure-dents.
Un demi-dieu.	Des demi-dieux.
Une demi-heure.	Des demi-heures.
Une double-fleur.	Des doubles-fleurs.
De l'eau-de-vie.	Des eaux-de-vie.
Un entr'-actes.	Des entr'-actes.
Un entre-sol.	Des entre-sol.
Un essuie-mains.	Des essuie-mains.
Un ex-général.	Des ex-généraux.
Une fausse-clef.	Des fausses-clefs.
Un franc-maçon.	Des francs-maçons.
Un garde-marine.	*Des gardes-marines.
Un garde-côte.	*Des gardes-côtes.
Un garde-champêtre.	*Des gardes-champêtres.
Un garde-magasin.	*Des gardes-magasins.
Un garde-manger.	*Des garde-manger.
Un garde-robes.	*Des garde-robes.
Un garde-fous.	*Des garde-fous.

* *Observe.*—When *garde* has reference to persons, it must take an *s* in the plural, as above, being then taken in the sense of *gardien;* but, when it refers to things, it is a verb, which never varies.

Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
Un garde-feu.	*Des garde-feu.	Un porte-habits.	Des porte-habits.
Un garde-chasse.	*Des gardes-chasses.	Un porte-manteau.	Des porte-manteaux.
Un garde-malade.	*Des gardes-malades.	Un porte-mouchettes.	Des porte-mouchettes
Un gobe-mouches.	Des gobe-mouches.	Un porte-voix.	Des porte-voix.
Un grand-maître.	Des grands-maîtres.	Un qu'en-dira-t-on.	Des qu'en-dira-t-on.
Un grand-père.	Des grands-pères.	Un qui-va-là.	Des qui-va-là.
Une grand'-mère.	Des grand'-mères.	Une reine-claude.	Des reines-claudes.
Une grand'-messe.	Des grand'-messes.	Un rouge-gorge.	Des rouges-gorges.
Un grand-oncle.	Des grands-oncles.	Un réveille-matin.	Des réveille-matin.
Une grand'-rue.	Des grand'-rues.	Une sage-femme.	Des sages-femmes.
Une grand'-tante.	Des grand'-tantes.	Un serre-tête.	Des serre-tête.
Un haut-de-chausses.	Des hauts-de-chausses	Un sous-lieutenant.	Des sous-lieutenans.
Un hors-d'œuvre.	Des hors-d'œuvre.	Un serre-ciseaux.	Des serre-ciseaux.
Un lave-mains.	Des lave-mains.	Un serre-papiers.	Des serre-papiers.
Un non-paiement.	Des non-paiemens.	Un tête-à-tête.	Des tête-à-tête.
Un ouï-dire.	Des ouï-dire.	Un semi-ton.	Des semi-tons.
Un passe-port.	Des passe-port.	Un tire-bouchon.	Des tire-bouchon.
Un passe-partout.	Des passe-partout.	Un tire-balle.	Des tire-balle.
Un passe-tems.	Des passe-tems.	Un tire-bourre.	Des tire-bourre.
Un petit-maître.	Des petits-maîtres.	Un tire-bottes.	Des tire-bottes.
Un pont-neuf.	Des ponts-neufs.	Un tire-sonnette.	Des tire-sonnette.
Un pont-levis.	Des ponts-levis.	Un vide-bouteilles.	Des vide-bouteilles.
Un porc-épics.	Des porcs-épics.	Un va-nu-pieds.	Des va-nu-pieds.
Un porte-crayon.	Des porte-crayon.	Un ver-à-soie.	Des vers-à-soie.
Un porte-étendard.	Des porte-étendard.	Un vice-amiral.	Des vice-amiraux.
Un porte-faix.	Des porte-faix.	Un vice-consul.	Des vice-consuls.
Un porte-lettres.	Des porte-lettres.	Un vice-roi.	Des vice-rois.

EXERCISE.

The pupil not having yet seen the rules on the formation of the plural of Adjectives, it has been thought advisable, in the following exercise, to spell the Adjectives in the plural, in order that they may agree with their respective Substantives which are to be put in that number.

It is further observed, for the last time, that the pupil must pay particular attention to the regular order of the figures which are placed before the French words, to indicate the construction of those sentences, which might otherwise be found too difficult.

His daughters are young and handsome.—These books are not
fille jeunes belles livre
new.—Have you seen the princes and the princesses of England ?—
neufs prince princesse Angleterre
These laws will be abolished.—The flowers of the gardens are almost
loi abolies fleur jardin presque
withered.——The palaces of kings are always filled.——These lilies
flétries palais roi toujours pleins lis
belong to my little sisters.—(There are) some fine apartments
appartiennent petites sœur Il y a beaux appartement
to let in that part of the town.—She has had a* tooth
louer dans quartier ville ²aux ³dent
ache all the night.—These two bridges are the finest in Europe.—
¹mal nuit pont plus beaux de l'Europe
The woods of those countries are precious.—I have bought the
bois pays précieux acheté

feathers of those birds.—(Do you not hear) the sweet melody of
plume oiseau N'entendez-vous point douce mélodie

their voices?—The Gods of the pagans were despicable.—His
voix Dieu payen méprisables ²De ³ses

sisters' jewels are magnificent.—What delightful spots.——(Does
⁴sœur ¹joyau magnifiques ²charmans ¹lieu Ne

she not sell) cabbages and turnips?—No; she sells ladies'
vend-elle pas chou navet vend ²pour ³les ⁴dames

hats.——He knows (so many) amusing games.—(Are there a great
¹chapeau sait tant de jolis jeu Y a-t-il beau

many) pickpockets in Paris?—No; not so many as in London.—
coup de filou à —— . Non; pas autant qu' à Londres

There are more fools than wise men.—She had two English horses.—
plus de fou que de sage ²Anglais ¹cheval

The balls are not so numerous this year.—He offered some fans to
bal nombreux année offrit éventail

the ladies.— All the hotels there have great gates.—Have you
dame hôtel y ²cochères ¹porte

(a pain in your) eyes?—Our Saviour ascended (into) heaven in
mal aux œil Sauveur monta au ciel en

presence of his disciples.—Italy is under one of the finest skies in
présence disciple Italie sous plus beaux ciel de

Europe.—My two grandfathers have filled the highest situations.—
l'Europe aïeul rempli premières charge

The actions of our ancestors will always be praise worthy.——
action ancêtres ² ¹ ⁴de ⁵louange ³dignes

Posterity will admire the victories of those generals.—The learned
Postérité admirera victoire général savant

men* of those times (did not think so.)——Where are the estates of
tems-là ne pensaient pas de même terre

your parents?—(Are not these) the (play things) of our children?
parent Ne sont-ce pas là jouet enfant

Gold and silver are (more valuable) than iron and steel.—Have
or argent d'un plus grand prix que fer acier

you been to the Catacombs?—The annals of our times are memo-
Catacombes annales tems mémo-

rable.—Give me my scissars.—I have had a severe pain
rables Donnez-moi ciseaux de terribles douleur

(in my bowels) for two or three months.——His funeral (was
d'entrailles pendant mois ⁴ ⁵funérailles ¹on

performed) (the day before yesterday.)—His morals are corrupted.—
²lui ³fit avant hier mœurs corrompues

Have you not got* the snuffers?——All their ammunition was
mouchettes munitions

intercepted.—Provisions are very dear there.—Your brothers have
interceptées Vivres [3] [4]très [5]chers [2]y frère

been very imprudent. —— He has several pretty pictures.——
imprudens plusieurs jolis tableau

(Were there) any handsome ladies?——The French troops
Y avait-il belles dame [2]Françaises [1]troupes

(fought) with intrepidity.—Tell him to bring me two small
se battirent avec intrépidité Dites-lui de [2]apporter [1]m' petits

knives and two small forks.——Have you not yet seen the animals
couteau petites fourchette encore vu animal

at Exeter Change?

CHAPTER III.

OF ADJECTIVES.

The Adjective is a word which expresses the quality or manner of being of the Substantive to which it refers.

Now, as Substantives are either masculine or feminine, singular or plural, it follows that Adjectives referring to them must admit of the same gender and number, in order to express with propriety their quality or manner of being.

But, as Adjectives may express the quality or manner of being of Substantives to a greater or less extent, hence arise what are called degrees of comparison in Adjectives.

There are, therefore, three things to be considered in Adjectives, the gender, number, and degrees of comparison.

ARTICLE I.

Of the Gender of Adjectives.

General Rule—The feminine of Adjectives and of Participles of all verbs ending with a consonant or a vowel, provided it is not an *e* mute, is generally formed by the addition of an *e* mute to the singular masculine; whilst those which end in *e* mute are alike in both genders: as—*grand, grande,* great; *petit, petite,* little; *poli, polie,* polite; *aimé, aimée,* loved; *sage, sage,* wise; *fidèle, fidèle,* faithful.

WE MUST EXCEPT—

1. Adjectives ending in *f* in the masculine, which become feminine by changing *f* into *ve:* as—*bref, brève,* brief; *neuf, neuve,* new.

2. All Adjectives ending in *eux*, of which the feminine is formed by changing *eux* into *euse*: as—*heureux, heureuse*, happy; *malheureux, malheureuse*, unhappy, &c. But *vieux* makes *vieille* in the feminine.

3. Any Adjective ending in any of the ten following terminations—*ais, as, et, el, eil, ien, on, os, ot, ul*, of which the feminine is formed by doubling the final consonant, and adding an *e* mute to it: as—*épais, épaisse*, thick; *gras, grasse*, fat; *sujet, sujette*, subject; *cruel, cruelle*, cruel; *pareil, pareille*, like; *ancien, ancienne*, ancient; *bon, bonne*, good; *gros, grosse*, big; *sot, sotte*, foolish; *nul, nulle*, null.

Mauvais, bad; *ras*, shorn; follow the general rule in the formation of their feminine, adding an *e* mute to the masculine, without doubling the last consonant: as—*mauvais, mauvaise*, bad; *ras, rase*, shorn.

Complet, complete; *concret*, concrete; *discret*, discreet; *dévot*, devout; *indiscret*, indiscreet; *inquiet*, uneasy; *incomplet*, incomplete; *prêt*, ready; *replet*, replete; *secret*, secret; also follow the general rule, merely taking an *e* mute for their feminine, without doubling the last consonant; they, however, require a grave accent over the *e* which precedes the *t* in the termination: as—*complet, complète; discret, discrète; incomplet, incomplète, &c.* except *prêt*, which takes the same circumflex accent which it has in the masculine: as—*prêt, prête.*

4. The following Adjectives which form their feminine irregularly.—

Beau,	belle,	*fine.*	Jumeau,	jumelle,	*twin.*
Blanc,	blanche,	*white.*	Jaloux,	jalouse,	*jealous.*
Bénin,	bénigne,	*benign.*	Long,	longue,	*long.*
Caduc	caduque,	*decayed.*	Mou,	molle,	*soft.*
Doux,	douce,	*sweet.*	Malin,	maligne,	*mischievous*
Faux,	fausse,	*false.*	Nouveau,	nouvelle,	*new.*
Favori,	favorite,	*favourite.*	Public,	publique,	*public.*
Fou,	folle,	*foolish.*	Roux,	rousse,	*reddish.*
Frais,	fraîche,	*fresh.*	Sec,	sèche,	*dry.*
Franc,	franche,	*frank.*	Tiers,	tierce,	*third.*
Gentil,	gentille,	*pretty.*	Turc,	turque,	*turkish.*
Grec,	grecque,	*greek.*	Traître,	traîtresse,	*traitor.*

NOTE.—*Beau, nouveau, fou, mou, vieux*, are changed into *bel, nouvel, fol, mol, vieil*, when coming before a substantive masculine beginning with a vowel or an *h* mute: as—*Un bel homme*, a fine man; *Un nouvel acteur*, a new actor; *Un vieil habit*, an old coat; from which termination their feminine is formed by the addition of *le* to it: as—*bel, belle; nouvel, nouvelle, &c.*

OBSERVE.—Words ending in *eur*, whether substantives or adjectives, that are derived, by the change of *ant* into *eur*, from the present participle of the verbs whose signification they impart: as—*connaisseur*, connoisseur; *buveur*, drinker; which come from the present participles *connaissant, buvant*, of the verbs *connaître* and, *boire*, become feminine by changing *ant* into *euse*: as—*connaisseur, connaisseuse; buveur, buveuse.* About a hundred follow the same rule.

The following—*bailleur*, lessor; *demandeur*, plaintiff; *défendeur*, defendant; *enchanteur*, enchanter; *inventeur*, inventor; *inspecteur*, overseer; *pécheur*, sinner; *vengeur*, avenger; must be excepted, forming their feminine by the change of *eur* into *eresse*, though derived from the present participle of the verbs whose signification they express: as—*bailleur, bailleresse; demandeur, demanderesse; défendeur, défenderesse; enchanteur, enchanteresse; pécheur, pécheresse; vengeur, vengeresse;* but *inspecteur* and *inventeur* make *inspectrice* and *inventrice.*

As to the words ending in *teur*, which, though derived from verbs, are not formed from the present participle by the change of *ant* into *eur*, they become feminine by changing *teur* into *trice*: as—*acteur*, *actrice*, actor; *accusateur*, *accusatrice*, inditer; *conducteur*, *conductrice*, conductor; *dispensateur*, *dispensatrice*, distributor; *instituteur*, *institutrice*, institutor. About fifty follow this rule.

The following Adjectives, ending in *eur*, not being derived from verbs, and importing an idea of opposition or comparison, form their feminine by the mere addition of an *e* mute to the singular masculine, according to the general rule: as—*antérieur*, *antérieure*, anterior; *citérieur*, *citérieure*, citerior; *extérieur*, *extérieure*, exterior; *inférieur*, *inférieure*, inferior; *intérieur*, *intérieure*, interior; *majeur*, *majeure*, major; *meilleur*, *meilleure*, better; *mineur*, *mineure*, minor; *postérieur*, *postérieure*, posterior; *supérieur*, *supérieure*, superior; *ultérieur*, *ultérieure*, ulterior.

Ambassadeur, ambassador; *empereur*, emperor; *gouverneur*, governor; *serviteur*, servant; make in their feminine *ambassadrice*, *impératrice*, *gouvernante*, *servante;* these two last forming their feminine from the participles *gouvernant*, *servant*, by the addition of an *e* mute.

Chanteur, singer, and *chasseur*, hunter, having each two feminines; *chanteur* makes *chanteuse* and *cantatrice; chasseur*, *chasseuse* and *chasseresse: chanteuse* is used to denote any woman who sings, and *cantatrice* a woman celebrated in the art of singing; *chasseuse* belongs to the common style, and *chasseresse* to poetry.

Words in *eur*, expressing trades, professions, dignities, qualities, actions which we commonly consider to belong to men alone, have no feminine: as—*appariteur*, apparitor; *assesseur*, assessor; *censeur*, censor; *docteur*, doctor; *imprimeur*, printer, &c. &c.

General Rule.—All Adjectives and Participles generally follow their respective Substantives in French, except the following:—*ancien*, ancient; *beau*, fine; *bon*, good; *cher*, dear; *digne*, worthy; *divers*, divers; *grand*, great; *gros*, big; *habile*, clever; *jeune*, young; *joli*, pretty; *mauvais*, bad; *méchant*, wicked; *moindre*, least; *meilleur*, better; *nouveau*, new; *petit*, little; *principal*, principal; *saint*, holy; *sot*, foolish; *vaste*, vast; *vieux* and *vieil*, old; *vilain*, ugly; *triste*, sad; which usually precede their Substantives, when used alone with them, whatever be their order in English; the same exception applies to the articles, the demonstrative, possessive, indeterminate pronouns, and numerical adjectives: as—*Une ancienne coutume*, an old custom; *Un jeune homme*, a young man; *Un beau chapeau*, a fine hat; *Une jolie fille*, a pretty girl; *Mon livre*, my book; *Votre maison*, your house, &c. &c.

EXERCISE.

His wife is tall, handsome, and well-made.——Their house is
femme grand beau bien-fait maison

much too small.—That church is badly built.—My sister was
beaucoup trop petit église mal bâti sœur

beloved by him.—That woman has been very imprudent.—Was she
chéri de Ne [2] [3]

not faithful to* him?—This apple is not ripe enough.—The meat
[4] *fidèle* [1]*lui pomme* [2]*mûr* [1]*assez viande*

is cold.—The road (in the north) of that country is bad, unsafe,
froid route au nord pays mauvais peu sûr

and very dangerous over the steep mountains.—(Will the door be)
très-dangereux sur escarpées montagne La porte sera-t-elle

open?—I have read a very entertaining story.—That lady is so vo-
ouvert lu amusant histoire dame si vo-

latile; her manners (are not at all) natural.——That street is
lage manière ne sont point du tout naturel rue

narrower than you said.——Is that gown new?—Her sister is
plus étroit que ne disiez [3]est-elle [1] [2]robe neuf sœur

not very active, but she is well informed, polite, and sensible.—
. actif mais bien-instruit affable ———

This person is very unfortunate; I hope she will be happier
personne bien malheureux j'espère qu' plus heureux

when she is married.—She was so bashful.—Is she not virtuous?—
quand sera marié honteux vertueux

She was always deceitful and jealous.—That cow is not very fat.—
trompeur jaloux vache très-gras

That law is cruel and barbarous.—It is an ancient custom.—My
loi cruel barbare C'est ancien coutume

room would be a* very good one* if it were better situated, and
chambre bon situé

(were it not) so dark.—I think a female drunkard is the worst
qu'elle ne fût pas obscur crois qu' femme buveur pire

thing (in nature.)———Miss O. was a beautiful actress, and a
chose qu'il y ait au monde charmant actrice

sweet singer; she had, above all, a* most benevolent dispo-
délicieux cantatrice surtout [2]la plus [3]bénin [1]hu-

sition.—I have seen a very fine woman (with) a white scarf on*.—
meur vu beau qui avait blanc écharpe

My cousin is a better singer than your sister.—Have you seen my
cousine chanteur

favourite flower, the rose, so fresh and sweet?—That (young lady)
favori fleur —— frais si doux demoiselle

is so foolish.—That news is false.—I shall write a very long letter
sot nouvelle faux [2]écrirai [3] [4] [5]long [6]lettre

to* you.—(There is) a new fashion (every year.)—It is the pub-
[1]vous Il paraît nouveau mode tous les ans C'est [2]pub-

lic opinion.—She had an old woman with her.—He always wears an
lic ——— vieux avec [2]toujours [1]porte

old coat.—My dear lady, (what shall I do?)—He is a very clever
habit cher dame que ferai-je C'est habile

young man.—The paint will soon be dry.—It was a mere evasion.
jeune homme peinture [2] bientôt [1] sec C'était pur défaite

——Is this water clean?——Is she not attentive?——These old
[3]Est-elle [1] [2]eau clair attentif vieilles

clothes (are good for nothing.)—Give her your protecting hand.
hardes pl. *ne sont bonnes à rien Donnez-lui une protecteur main*

ARTICLE II.

Plural of Adjectives.

General Rule.—The plural of Adjectives and Participles, of whichever gender, is generally formed like that of Substantives, by the addition of *s* to the singular: as—*grand, grands; grande, grandes;* great: *poli, polis; polie, polies;* polite: *aimé, aimés; aimée, aimées;* loved, &c. This rule admits of no exceptions with respect to the formation of the plural feminine of Adjectives, but in forming the masculine plural the following must be noticed.

1. Adjectives ending in *s* or *x* in the singular do not change their termination in the plural masculine: as—*heureux*, mas. sing.; *heureux*, mas. plu.; happy: *gras*, mas. sing.; *gras*, mas. plu.; fat.

2. Those which end in *ant* or *ent* in the singular, change the *t* into *s* for the plural masculine in polysyllables, but retain it in monosyllables, adding *s* to it, according to the general rule: as—*reconnaissant, reconnaissans*, grateful; *diligent, diligens*, diligent; *lent, lents*, slow.

Tout, all, makes *tous* in the plural masculine, and *toutes* in the feminine plural.

3. Adjectives which terminate in *au* form their plural masculine by adding *x* to it: as—*beau, beaux*, fine; *nouveau, nouveaux*, new.

4. Some Adjectives ending in *al* in the singular, become plural masculine by changing *al* into *aux*: as—*égal, égaux*, equal; *général, généraux*, general.

The feminine plural of the above Adjectives, or of any other belonging to the same exceptions, is formed by the addition of *s* to the termination of their feminine singular, according to the general rule: as—*heureuse, heureuses*, from *heureux; grasse, grasses*, from *gras; prudente, prudentes*, from *prudent; toute, toutes*, from *tout; belle, belles*, from *beau; égale, égales*, from *égal*, &c. &c.

Observe.—The following: *Amical, automnal, bénéficial, clérical, conjectural, conjugal, colossal, diamétral, expérimental; fatal, filial, frugal, final, glacial, instrumental, labial, matinal, martial, médicinal, musical, naval, natal, proverbial, paroissial, patronal, pénal, pyramidal, social, total, théâtral, virginal, vocal*, are not used in the plural masculine, except *amical, frugal, naval*, which make sometimes *amicals, frugals, navals*, as in these sentences: *Des conseils amicals*, friendly counsels; *des repas frugals*, frugal meals; *des combats navals*, naval engagements.

If the feminine plural of any of the above Adjectives be required, it is formed by the addition of *es* to the above singular terminations: as—*Des herbes médicinales*, medicinal herbs.

EXERCISE.

For the future, the Verbs which the pupil will find in the present of the Infinitive in French, must be placed in the same tense and person as the English Verbs to which they correspond.

Socrates and Plato were two great philosophers.—Young men
Socrate Platon philosophe Jeune gens

hope to live long.—He (does not incur) great expenses.—These
espérer vivre long-tems ne fait pas dépense

ladies are so graceful that they are admired by every body.——
gracieux qu' admirer de

Your brothers have been very fortunate, and your sisters extremely
heureux extrêmement

unfortunate.—His daughters are cruel and revengeful.—Are your
malheureux vindicatif [3]Sont-ils [1]

pupils very diligent?—No; they are extremely lazy.——My ser-
[2]élèves paresseux do-

vants are not so slow as yours.—All your sheep are very fat.—
mestique lent que brebis gras

(Are these) all your children?—No; I have two pretty little girls
Sont-ce là fille

in the country; (you must come and see them.)—My horses are not
à campagne il faut que vous veniez les voir

so fine as yours.—The two new operas are (very much) ap-
que nouveau beaucoup ap-

plauded.—Are the general officers assembled?—All men are
plaudi [4]Sont-ils [1] [3] [2]officier assembler

equal after death.——Were not her friends glad to see
égal après [3]N'étaient-ils pas [1] [2]ami [4]aise [5]de [7]voir

her?—The two handsome ladies whom you saw, have not succeeded
[6]la dame que vîtes réussi

in their undertaking.—These partridges are very lean.—All these
entreprise perdrix maigre

filberts are bad.——Two fatal events happened at her death.—
aveline mauvais fatal évènement arriver à

(There are a great many) medicinal herbs in that island.—Those
Il y a beaucoup d' médicinal herbe île

stories are not (at all) entertaining.—He has bought the five white
histoire du tout amusant acheté blanc

houses (which you had mentioned to me.)——Are these tables
dont vous m'aviez parlé [3]Sont-elles [1] [2]

new?—No; they have been newly polished.
neuf nouvellement poli

ARTICLE III.

Degrees of Comparison in Adjectives.

There are three degrees of comparison in Adjectives: the Positive, Comparative, and Superlative.

The Positive is the Adjective itself, merely expressing the quality or manner of being of the Substantive to which it refers, without any

comparison with any other object: as—A wise and studious youth is beloved by every body, *Un enfant sage, et studieux est aimé de tout le monde.*

The Comparative is the Simple Adjective which, by the help of one of the words *plus*, more; *moins*, less; or, *aussi*, as; placed before it, expresses a comparison between two or several objects, either in a degree of superiority, inferiority, or equality.

1. In a degree of superiority; as when we wish to denote a quality possessed in a greater degree by one object than by another, which comparison is always expressed by putting *plus* before the Adjective or Participle, and *que* after, or *plus de* before a Substantive, with *que* after: as—*Ils sont plus estimés que vous*, they are more esteemed than you; *Ils ont plus de fruit que nous*; they have more fruit than we.

2. In a degree of inferiority; when we wish to denote a quality possessed in a less degree by one object than by another, which is expressed by putting *moins* before the Adjective or Participle, and *que* after, or *moins de* before a Substantive, with *que* after: as—*Elle est moins instruite que sa sœur*, she is not so clever as her sister; *Ils ont moins de pratiques que nous*, they have less customers than we.

This comparison may also be formed by using the Verb in the negative in French as in English, with *si* before the next Adjective or Participle, and *que* after; or, *autant de* before the Substantive, and *que* after: as—*Elle n'est pas si instruite que sa sœur*, she is not so clever as her sister; *Ils n'ont pas autant de pratiques que nous*, they have not so many customers as we.

3. In a degree of equality; when we wish to denote a quality possessed in the same degree by the objects compared: which is effected in French by putting *aussi* before the Adjective or Participle, and *que* after: as—*Je suis aussi grand que vous*, I am as tall as you; or, *autant de* before a Substantive, with *que* after; or again, *autant* with a Verb, and *que* after: as—*Elle n'a pas autant d'esprit que lui*, she is not as witty as he; *Louis douze fut autant aimé que Louis onze avait été haï*. Lewis the twelfth was as much beloved as Lewis the eleventh had been hated.

There are only three Adjectives in French which express a comparison of themselves without the help of any other word: they are—*Meilleur*, better, which is the comparative of *bon* good, and used instead of *plus bon*, more good: as—*Ce vin est meilleur que l'autre*, this wine is better than the other, and not *plus bon*. We however say: *Il n'est plus bon à rien*, he is no longer good for any thing; but in this case *plus* is not a comparative but a negative. *Moindre*, least, which is the comparative of *petit*, little: as—*Cette colonne est moindre que l'autre*, this column is less than the other; and *pire*, worse, which is the comparative of *mauvais*, bad: as—*Elle est pire que sa sœur*, she is worse than her sister.

Mieux, better, is also used instead of *plus bien*, more well, and *moins*, less, instead of *plus peu*, more little; which are never used in either language. *Pis*, worse, is the comparative of the Adverb *mal*, badly, meaning *plus mal*, which is equally used: *Moins bon, moins bien, aussi bon, aussi bien*, are also in use.

OBSERVE.—*Meilleur* and *mieux* being expressed by the same word *better*, in English, offer some difficulty to beginners, who are frequently at a loss which to use in French; but the difficulty will disappear by considering that whenever *better* is an Adjective in English, it is always expressed by *meilleur* in French and by *mieux* when it is an Adverb: as—This pear is better than yours, *cette poire est meilleure que la vôtre*; because *better* is an Adjective: I like him better than his brother, *je l'aime mieux que son frère*; because *better* is an Adverb.

The Superlative is the Adjective or Participle expressing the quality or manner of being of the Substantive in a very high or in the highest degree, and also in a very low or in the lowest degree. This is done by the help of any one of the words *plus, moins, pis, pire, meilleur, moindre,* preceded by one of the articles *le, la, les; du, de la, des; au, à la, aux;* or again, by one of the Adverbs, *fort, très, bien,* very; *infiniment,* infinitely; *extrêmement,* extremely; prefixed to it, according to the import of the sentence: as—*Il est le plus aimé de tous,* he is the most beloved of all; *C'est la demoiselle la plus aimable que je connaisse,* she is the most amiable young lady I know; *Elles sont très-belles,* they are very handsome; *Il fut infiniment mal reçu,* he was extremely ill received.

Hence, there are two sorts of Superlatives in French: 1. The Superlative Relative, which always expresses a comparison with another thing, requiring *de,* or one of the Compound Articles, *du, des,* or *de la,* before the next word, if a Noun, and *que,* if a Verb, which must be put in the Subjunctive Mood, as in these examples already quoted: *Il est le plus aimé de tous,* he is the most loved of all; *C'est la demoiselle la plus aimable que je connaisse,* she is the most amiable young lady I know: 2. The Superlative Absolute, which never implies any comparison or relation with another thing, but merely increases or lessens to the highest or lowest degree, the quality of the Substantive, with the help of one of the words *très, fort, bien, infiniment, extrêmement,* before it: as—*Elles sont très-belles,* they are very handsome; *Il fut infiniment mal reçu,* he was extremely ill received.

The Superlative Relative may also be expressed, by placing one of the Possessive Adjectives, *mon, ton, son, notre, votre, leur,* before the words *plus, mieux, pis, pire, meilleur, moindre:* as—*C'est mon meilleur ami,* he is my best friend.

General Rule.—If the Adjective in the Superlative precedes the Substantive, which it qualifies in French: as—*Le plus grand homme de l'armée Française,* the greatest man in the French army; the Substantive takes no article before it, but if the Substantive precedes the Superlative, both take the Definite Article, either *le, la,* or *les:* as—*C'est l'homme le plus maladroit que je connaisse,* he is the most awkward man I know.

Plus and *moins,* either preceded or not by the Article, are repeated in French before every Adjective which they qualify, when several refer to the same Substantive, and the Adjective, whether in the Comparative or Superlative, always agrees in gender and number with its respective Substantive.

EXERCISE.

The English navy is more powerful than (that of) France.—Virtue
Anglais marine puissant la Français

is more precious than riches.—Nothing is more gratifying to the
précieux richesses Rien n' agréable

mind than the light of truth.—She is much more esteemed than her
esprit lumière vérité

sisters because she is less proud of her beauty.—The rose is not less
parce qu' fier beauté

beautiful than the tulip, but the tulip is more gaudy.—Is he less sub-
beau tulipe brillant su-

ject to the (head-ache) than he was.—(I am not) less afraid of her
jet mal de tête n' Je n'ai pas peur

than of him.—(That is) easier to say than to do.—I am older than
C'est aisé dire faire âgé

you.—Your mother is not so old as she looks.—His house is less
le paraît

distant than you imagine.—Paris is not so populous nor so large as
éloigné ne l' imaginez peuplé ni grand

London.—The Thames is much deeper than the Seine.—That chimney
Londres Tamise profond Seine cheminée

is not so high as it was.—Your son (will never be) so tall as
haut l' ne sera jamais grand

you.—We shall not have so many plums this year as we (had)
prune année en eûmes

the last; but I think we shall have more apples.—That
l'année dernier crois que de pomme

young gentleman is as much esteemed as his brother is despised.—
monsieur estimé méprisé

The streets in Rome are not larger than these.—Your champagne is
à —— champagne

not better than mine.—That child is worse than you think.—He
ne penser

speaks (a great deal) better than he writes.—This peach is better
parler beaucoup n' écrit pêche

than the other.—Do you not like my father better now than you
autre 2 3 1 *à présent*

(did at first?)—The public buildings in Paris are the finest (in the
ne faisiez d'abord édifice à du

world.)—You will give this wreath of pearls to the most amiable
monde donner parure perle aimable

and the most clever of the three.—Though this young lady is the most
habile Quoique demoiselle soit

accomplished and the handsomest (I ever saw,) I can assure
accompli beau que j'aie jamais vue puis 2*assurer*

you that she is not my best friend.—Ignorant men* are more conceited
1*vous qu' amie Ignorant vain*

than others.—You make greater progress than I should have
autre faites de progrès je n'

thought.—China is the largest empire in the world.—Napoleon was
pensé Chine ——

one of the most absolute princes who (ever reigned.)—The most
absolu prince aient jamais régné

learned men are not often the most virtuous.—The Alps are very
savant homme souvent vertueux

high and very steep.—The style of Fenelon is very rich and very
haut escarpé —— Fénélon riche

harmonious.—London is the richest city in Europe.—God is infinitely
riche ville Europe infiniment

merciful.———Gold is the most pure, the most precious, the most
miséricordieux Or pur précieux

ductile, and, after platina, the heaviest of all metals.
ductile platine pésant métal.

ARTICLE IV.

Of the Numeral Adjectives.

Numeral Adjectives are divided into Cardinal and Ordinal.

The Cardinal are used to count and express the number of persons and things: they are thus called from the other numbers being formed from them.

The Ordinal denote the order of persons and things.

§ 1.

OF THE CARDINAL NUMBERS.

Example.

1	Un,	*one.*
2	Deux,	*two.*
3	Trois,	*three.*
4	Quatre,	*four.*
5	Cinq,	*five.*
6	Six,	*six.*
7	Sept,	*seven.*
8	Huit,	*eight.*
9	Neuf,	*nine.*
10	Dix,	*ten.*
11	Onze,	*eleven.*
12	Douze,	*twelve.*
13	Treize,	*thirteen.*
14	Quatorze,	*fourteen.*
15	Quinze,	*fifteen.*
16	Seize,	*sixteen.*
17	Dix-sept,	*seventeen.*
18	Dix-huit,	*eighteen.*
19	Dix-neuf,	*nineteen.*
20	Vingt,	*twenty.*
21	Vingt et un,	*twenty-one.*
22	Vingt-deux,	*twenty-two.*
23	Vingt-trois,	*twenty-three.*
24	Vingt-quatre,	*twenty-four.*
25	Vingt-cinq,	*twenty-five.*
26	Vingt-six,	*twenty-six.*
27	Vingt-sept,	*twenty-seven.*
28	Vingt-huit,	*twenty-eight.*
29	Vingt-neuf,	*twenty-nine.*
30	Trente,	*thirty.*
31	Trente et un,	*thirty-one.*
32	Trente-deux,	*thirty-two.*
33	Trente-trois,	*thirty-three.*
34	Trente-quatre,	*thirty-four.*
35	Trente-cinq,	*thirty-five.*
36	Trente-six,	*thirty-six.*
37	Trente-sept,	*thirty-seven.*
38	Trente-huit,	*thirty-eight.*
39	Trente-neuf,	*thirty-nine.*
40	Quarante,	*forty.*
41	Quarante et un,	*forty-one.*
42	Quarante-deux,	*forty-two.*
43	Quarante-trois,	*forty-three.*
44	Quarante-quatre,	*forty-four.*
45	Quarante-cinq,	*forty-five.*
46	Quarante-six,	*forty-six.*
47	Quarante-sept,	*forty-seven.*
48	Quarante-huit,	*forty-eight.*
49	Quarante-neuf,	*forty-nine.*
50	Cinquante,	*fifty.*

51	Cinquante et un,	*fifty-one.*
52	Cinquante-deux,	*fifty-two.*
53	Cinquante-trois,	*fifty-three.*
54	Cinquante-quatre,	*fifty-four.*
55	Cinquante-cinq,	*fifty-five.*
56	Cinquante-six,	*fifty-six.*
57	Cinquante-sept,	*fifty-seven.*
58	Cinquante-huit,	*fifty-eight.*
59	Cinquante-neuf,	*fifty-nine.*
60	Soixante,	*sixty.*
61	Soixante et un,	*sixty-one.*
62	Soixante-deux,	*sixty-two.*
63	Soixante-trois,	*sixty-three.*
64	Soixante-quatre,	*sixty-four.*
65	Soixante-cinq,	*sixty-five.*
66	Soixante-six,	*sixty-six.*
67	Soixante-sept,	*sixty-seven.*
68	Soixante-huit,	*sixty-eight.*
69	Soixante-neuf,	*sixty-nine.*
70	Soixante-dix,	*seventy.*
71	Soixante et onze,	*seventy-one.*
72	Soixante-douze,	*seventy-two.*
73	Soixante-treize,	*seventy-three.*
74	Soixante-quatorze,	*seventy-four.*
75	Soixante-quinze,	*seventy-five.*
76	Soixante-seize,	*seventy-six.*
77	Soixante-dix-sept,	*seventy-seven.*
78	Soixante-dix-huit,	*seventy-eight.*
79	Soixante-dix-neuf,	*seventy-nine.*
80	Quatre-vingt,	*eighty.*
81	Quatre-vingt-un,	*eighty-one.*
82	Quatre-vingt-deux,	*eighty-two.*
83	Quatre-vingt-trois,	*eighty-three.*
84	Quatre-vingt-quatre,	*eighty-four.*
85	Quatre-vingt-cinq,	*eighty-five.*
86	Quatre-vingt-six,	*eighty-six.*
87	Quatre-vingt-sept,	*eighty-seven.*
88	Quatre-vingt-huit,	*eighty-eight.*
89	Quatre-vingt-neuf,	*eighty-nine.*
90	Quatre-vingt-dix,	*ninety.*
91	Quatre-vingt-onze,	*ninety-one.*
92	Quatre-vingt-douze,	*ninety-two.*
93	Quatre-vingt-treize,	*ninety-three.*
94	Quatre-vingt-quatorze,	*ninety-four.*
95	Quatre-vingt-quinze,	*ninety-five.*
96	Quatre-vingt-seize,	*ninety-six.*
97	Quatre-vingt-dix-sept,	*ninety-seven.*
98	Quatre-vingt-dix-huit,	*ninety-eight.*
99	Quatre-vingt-dix-neuf,	*ninety-nine.*
100	Cent,	*a hundred.*
101	Cent un,	*a hundred and one.*
102	Cent deux,	*a hundred and two.*
103	Cent trois,	*a hundred and three.*
104	Cent quatre,	*a hundred and four.*
105	Cent cinq,	*a hundred and five.*
106	Cent six,	*a hundred and six.*
107	Cent sept,	*a hundred and seven.*
108	Cent huit,	*a hundred and eight.*
109	Cent neuf,	*a hundred and nine.*
110	Cent dix,	*a hundred and ten.*
111	Cent onze,	*a hundred and eleven.*
112	Cent douze,	*a hundred and twelve.*
113	Cent treize,	*a hundred and thirteen.*
114	Cent quatorze,	*a hundred and fourteen.*
115	Cent quinze,	*a hundred and fifteen.*
116	Cent seize,	*a hundred and sixteen.*
117	Cent dix-sept,	*a hundred and seventeen.*
118	Cent dix-huit,	*a hundred and eighteen.*
119	Cent dix-neuf,	*a hundred and nineteen.*
120	Cent vingt,	*a hundred and twenty.*
121	Cent vingt et un,	*a hundred and twenty-one.*
122	Cent vingt-deux,	*a hundred and twenty-two.*

and so on, without expressing the words *a* or *one* which precede the numbers hundred and thousand in English, if we wish to denote more than one hundred or one thousand: as—A hundred and forty-four men, *cent quarante-quatre hommes,* and not *un cent quarante-quatre hommes;* one thousand and thirty-eight pounds, *mille trente-huit livres,* and not *un mille trente-huit livres.* If, however, we wish to express only one hundred or one thousand, *un* should then be used: as—one hundred, *un cent;* one thousand, *un mille;* though, even in this case, the French sometimes use *cent* and *mille* without *un,* when alluding to something which they have previously mentioned: as—*J'en ai cent,* I have a hundred; *il en a mille,* he has a thousand.

But *one* coming before the numbers *hundred* and *thousand,* used for

the date of the year, is never expressed in French, and the Preposition *in*, which precedes the word *year*, though frequently left out in French, is also sometimes expressed by *en*, in which case, that is to say, when expressed by *en*, the Substantive *year* must be entirely omitted: as—In the year one thousand eight hundred and eighteen, *en mil huit cent dix-huit:* but if the word *year* is expressed, then *en* must be left out: thus—*L'an mil huit cent dix-huit;* without using either *un* or *et* in any case.

When the English word *thousand* is used for the date of the year, it is always expressed in French by *mil*, with one *l* only, and by *mille*, with *lle*, in other cases, never taking an *s*, except when used for the English word *mile*, in the plural: as—In the year one thousand eight hundred and eighteen, *l'an mil huit cent dix-huit;* two thousand men, *deux mille hommes;* it is three miles from here, *il y a trois milles d'ici.*

The Conjunction *and*, used in English to join two or several numbers together, in reckoning or quoting any year, as in the above sentences, is never expressed in French, and the larger number always takes the precedence, though the smaller sometimes goes first in English: as—Two hundred and forty, *deux cent quarante;* six and twenty, *vingt-six;* and not—*deux cent et quarante, six et vingt.*

Et is, however, used in French to join the numbers *vingt, trente, quarante, cinquante, soixante*, with *un* or *une:* as—*Vingt et un*, twenty-one; *trente et un*, thirty-one; *quarante et un*, forty-one; *cinquante et un*, fifty-one; *soixante et un*, sixty-one; in which case *and* is not expressed in English; but these are the only exceptions, all the other numbers being used without *et:* as—*Quatre-vingt-un*, eighty-one, *cent-un*, a hundred and one; *cent-deux*, a hundred and two, &c.

Of all the Cardinal numbers, *vingt* and *cent* are the only ones which take an *s* when used, either with reference to a substantive plural understood, or when coming immediately before one, if they are preceded by another number which multiplies them: as—We mustered eighty at the last concert, and we shall muster two hundred at the next; *nous étions quatre-vingts au dernier concert, et nous serons deux cents au prochain*; namely, *personnes. Six cents vaisseaux*, six hundred ships; *quatre-vingts personnes*, eighty people, &c. in which sentences, *cent* and *vingt* are written with an *s*, because they refer to the words *personnes* and *vaisseaux*, which are plural, and they are preceded by the numbers *two, four, six*, which multiply them; but we should say—*Nous étions cent;* and not—*cents*, we were a hundred; *Cent personnes*, and not—*cents*, a hundred people; because one hundred only is mentioned, and one cannot multiply *cent*.

If *quatre-vingt* and *cent*, though referring to a substantive plural, were immediately followed by another Noun of number, or if they were used for the date of the year, then they never take an *s:* as—Eighty-two men, *quatre-vingt-deux hommes;* two hundred and twenty-four horses, *deux cent vingt-quatre chevaux;* in the year one thousand seven hundred and eighty, *l'an mil sept cent quatre-vingt.*

Million is a true Substantive, which takes an *s* when used in the plural: as—*deux millions*, two millions.

Un is the only cardinal number which changes its termination in the feminine, being then *une:* as—*un tableau*, one picture; *une bouteille*, one bottle.

Note.—When, after any tense of the impersonal Verb *to be there*, a Noun of number comes before a Substantive followed by a Participle: as—*There were a thousand men killed; de* is elegantly used before the Participle in French; the same also if any other number were added, followed likewise by another Participle referring equally to the preceding Substantive, or to another: as—*There were one thousand men killed, and eight hundred wounded: de* must be repeated before it: as—There were one thousand men killed, and eight hundred wounded; *il y eut mille hommes de tués, et huit cents de blessés;* but if there were no Substantive expressed after the Noun of number, and the relative *en* should come before the Verb *y avoir* instead, *de* must then always be used before the Adjective or Participle: as, for instance, when having spoken of soldiers we say—there were a hundred wounded and fifty killed, *il y en eut cent de blessés, et cinquante de tués.*

EXERCISE.

The cavalry amounts to a hundred and twenty-four men.—He owes
cavalerie se monter *devoir*

us one thousand four hundred and forty-six pounds.——(How many)
livre sterling *Combien de*

days have you been detained there? One hundred.—How many guns
2 3 4 5*détenu* 1*y* *fusil*

has he ordered? About a thousand.—Napoleon went to Russia in
commandés à-peu-près mille *aller en Russie*

the year one thousand eight hundred and thirteen, and Lewis the
Louis

eighteenth returned to France in the year one thousand eight hundred
revenir en

and fifteen.—George the fourth was crowned in the year one thousand
——— *couronner*

eight hundred and twenty, or one thousand eight hundred and twenty-

one.—The army consists of fifty thousand four hundred and twenty-
armée consister

six men, with three hundred and twenty-four pieces of artillery.——
avec *pièce artillerie*

I wish to* speak to the colonel of the twenty-fifth regiment, that is
désirer ——— *régiment*

stationed in the Tower; could you tell me how many miles (it is)
poster à *pourriez dire* *il y a*

from here? Twenty-seven or twenty-eight.—I received yesterday
recevoir

five thousand six hundred and forty-four pounds eight shillings and

eleven pence.—We (sat down) to table eight-and-twenty people at
étions 4 5— 2 1 3*personnes*

the last dinner, but we (shall not amount to more than) fifteen at
dernier *ne serons pas plus* *de*

the next.—Will you lend me fifty-one pounds nineteen shillings and six-
prochain *prêter*

pence? I would with all my heart, if I could, but I have paid, this morn-
le ferais de *le pouvais* *payer*

ing, a hundred and twenty-one pounds sixteen shillings and nine pence,

which I owed, and I have not one shilling left.—Eighty-one pounds and
de reste

ten pounds are ninety-one pounds.—Seventy shillings make three pounds
font *font*

ten shillings.—We have now three hundred beautiful frigates and two
superbe frégate

hundred men of war ready to sail.——(There will be) a hundred
vaisseau guerre prêt faire voile Il y aura

and twenty ladies, but I do not think (there will be) more than eighty
crois qu'il y ait de

gentlemen.—We were six hundred and eighty at the last ball, and we
messieurs

(shall be only) three hundred at the next.—How many ladies (will there
ne serons que *y aura-*

be?) A hundred. Only a hundred; (how is) that?—You have invited
t-il *d'où vient* *inviter*

four hundred.—I (will give you) a receipt for eighty-six pounds, if
vais vous donner reçu

you like.—(Did you not give him) eight hundred pounds twelve shil-
voulez Ne lui donnâtes-vous point

lings? No; he (only wanted) six hundred.—That celebrated
n'en avait besoin que de *fameux*

actor died in the year one thousand seven hundred and eighty.—
acteur mourut

This man is worth two millions sterling.—(There were) ninety-five
riche de *Il y eut*

men killed and thirty-two wounded in the two first battles, whilst
mais

there were nine hundred killed and seven hundred wounded in the last.

§. 2.

EXAMPLE OF THE CARDINAL NUMBERS,

used with the word fois, *time.*

As the Cardinal Numbers are frequently used with the word *fois*, in a numerical way, they will be here exemplified with it.

NOTE.—*Fois* being feminine requires *un* to be of that gender, whenever used with it: as—*Une fois*, once; *vingt et une fois*, twenty one times, &c.

Une fois,	*once.*	Cinq fois,	*five times*
Deux fois,	*twice.*	Six fois,	*six times.*
Trois fois,	*three times.*	Sept fois,	*seven times.*
Quatre fois,	*four times.*	Huit fois,	*eight times.*

Neuf fois,	*nine times.*
Dix fois,	*ten times.*
Onze fois,	*eleven times.*
Douze fois,	*twelve times.*
Treize fois,	*thirteen times.*
Quatorze fois,	*fourteen times.*
Quinze fois,	*fifteen times.*
Seize fois,	*sixteen times.*
Dix-sept fois,	*seventeen times.*
Dix-huit fois,	*eighteen times.*
Dix-neuf fois,	*nineteen times.*
Vingt fois,	*twenty times.*
Vingt et une fois, &c.	*twenty-one times, &c.*
Trente fois,	*thirty times.*
Trente et une fois,&c.	*thirty-one times, &c.*
Quarante fois,	*forty times.*
Quarante et une fois, &c.	*forty-one times, &c.*
Cinquante fois,	*fifty times.*
Cinquante et une fois, &c.	*fifty-one times, &c.*
Soixante fois,	*sixty times.*
Soixante et une fois, &c.	*sixty-one times, &c.*
Soixante-dix fois,	*seventy times.*
Soixante et onze fois, &c.	*seventy-one times, &c.*
Quatre-vingts fois,	*eighty times.*
Quatre - vingt - une fois, &c.	*eighty-one times, &c.*
Quatre - vingt - dix fois,	*ninety times.*
Quatre - vingt - onze fois, &c.	*ninety-one times, &c.*
Cent fois,	*a hundred times.*
Cent-une fois,	*a hundred and one times.*
Cent-deux fois,	*a hundred and two times.*
Cent-trois fois,	*a hundred and three times.*
Cent-quatre fois,	*a hundred and four times.*
Cent-cinq fois,	*a hundred and five times.*
Cent-six fois,	*a hundred and six times.*

and so on, without expressing *et*, which precedes *hundred*, and *and* which follows it.

Observe.—Particular attention must be paid never to construe *time* by *tems*, but always by *fois*, whenever used with a Noun of number: as—Six or seven times, *six ou sept fois*, and not *six ou sept tems*.

§. 3.

OF THE ORDINAL NUMBERS.

The Ordinal numbers are formed from the Cardinal by adding *ième* to the termination of those that end in a consonant, except *f*, which must be changed into *vième*: as—*sept, septième; huit, huitième; neuf, neuvième;* and by dropping *e* mute in those which end with it, and substituting *ième* instead: as—*quatre, quatrième; quinze, quinzième, &c.*

Cinq, five, takes a *u* before *ième;* as—*cinq, cinquième.*

After *vingt, trente, quarante, cinquante, soixante, quatre-vingt*, the French do not use *premier* and *second*, as the English do *first* and *second*, but *unième* and *deuxième*, thus: *vingt et unième*, twenty-first; *vingt-deuxième*, twenty-second; *trente et unième*, thirty-first; *trente-deuxième*, thirty-second; *quarante et unième*, forty-first; *quarante-deuxième*, forty-second; *cinquante et unième*, fifty-first; *cinquante-deuxième*, fifty-second; *soixante et unième*, sixty-first; *soixante-deuxième*, sixty-second.

The Ordinal numbers take the mark of the plural when referring to a noun plural: as—*les premiers essais*, the first essays.

EXAMPLE OF THE ORDINAL NUMBERS.

	M.	*F.*	*M. & F.*	
1er.	Premier,	première,	unième,	*first.*
2e.	Second,	seconde,	deuxième,	*second.*
3e.	Troisième,			*third.*
4e.	Quatrième			*fourth.*
5e.	Cinquième,			*fifth.*
6e.	Sixième,			*sixth.*
7e.	Septième,			*seventh.*

8e.	Huitième,	*eighth.*
9e.	Neuvième,	*ninth.*
10e.	Dixième,	*tenth.*
11e.	Onzième,	*eleventh.*
12e.	Douzième,	*twelfth.*
13e.	Treizième,	*thirteenth.*
14e.	Quatorzième,	*fourteenth.*
15e.	Quinzième,	*fifteenth.*
16e.	Seizième,	*sixteenth.*
17e.	Dix-septième,	*seventeenth.*
18e.	Dix-huitième,	*eighteenth.*
19e.	Dix-neuvième,	*nineteenth.*
20e.	Vingtième,	*twentieth.*
21e.	Vingt et unième,	*twenty-first.*
22e.	Vingt-deuxième, &c.	*twenty-second, &c.*
30e.	Trentième,	*thirtieth.*
31e.	Trente et unième,	*thirty-first.*
32e.	Trente-deuxième, &c.	*thirty-second, &c.*
40e.	Quarantième,	*fortieth.*
41e.	Quarante et unième,	*forty-first.*
42e.	Quarante-deuxième, &c.	*forty-second, &c.*
50e.	Cinquantième,	*fiftieth.*
51e.	Cinquante et unième,	*fifty-first.*
52e.	Cinquante-deuxième, &c.	*fifty-second, &c.*
60e.	Soixantième,	*sixtieth.*
61e.	Soixante et unième,	*sixty-first.*
62e.	Soixante-deuxième, &c.	*sixty-second, &c.*
70e.	Soixante-dixième,	*seventieth.*
71e.	Soixante et onzième, &c.	*seventy-first, &c.*
80e.	Quatre-vingtième,	*eightieth.*
81e.	Quatre-vingt-unième,	*eighty-first.*
82e.	Quatre-vingt-deuxième, &c.	*eighty-second, &c.*
90e.	Quatre-vingt-dixième,	*ninetieth.*
91e.	Quatre-vingt-onzième, &c.	*ninety-first, &c.*
100e.	Centième,	*hundredth.*
101e.	Cent-unième,	*hundred and first.*
102e.	Cent-deuxième, &c.	*hundred and second, &c.*
1000e.	Millième, &c.	*thousandth, &c.*

Observe.—When the Ordinal numbers are used with the article *the* after the name of a sovereign, they are expressed in French by the Cardinal, except *the first*, which must be the Ordinal *premier*, always omitting the article: as—George the 4th, *George quatre;* Lewis the 18th, *Louis dix-huit;* Napoleon the Second, *Napoléon Deux*, or *Second;* for, with *second*, either may be used.

The Ordinal numbers are likewise expressed in French by the Cardinal, when they are used for the date of any thing, with the exception still of *the first*, which must be translated as above by the Ordinal *premier*. In this case, however, the Definite Article *le* must be placed before the number expressing the date, which should always precede the month mentioned, though sometimes following it in English: as—The 4th of May, *le 4 Mai;* June the 10th, *le 10 Juin;* the 2d of August, *le 2 Août;* the 1st of September, *le 1r. Septembre,* as if it were in English: *the four May, the ten June, the two August, the first September;* in which cases, *de* might also be used before the month in French: as—*Le 4 de Mai, le 10 de Juin, le 2 d'Août, le 1r de Septembre, &c.*

If the day of the week, as well as that of the month, be mentioned in a date: as—*Monday*, 10, or *the* 10*th; Tuesday*, 12, or *the* 12*th; Wednesday*, 14, or *the* 14*th*, &c. the Noun of number expressing the date ought then to follow the day in French as in English, without ever using any

article in French: as—Monday, 10, *Lundi*, 10; Tuesday, the 12th, *Mardi*, 12; Wednesday, the 14th, *Mercredi*, 14, &c.

As to the Preposition *on* which is used in English before the days of the week, or those of the month, when we mention any particular day or date, it is not expressed in French: as—I shall write to them on Monday, *je leur écrirai Lundi;* come on the 15th of August, *venez le* 15 *d'Août*, &c. as if it were in English: *I shall write to them Monday; come the* 15 *August*.

Note.—The Adverbs of number are formed by adding *ment* to the termination of the Ordinal numbers: as—*Quatrième*, fourth; *quatrièmement*, fourthly; *cinquième*, fifth; *cinquièmement*, fifthly, &c. but *ment* must be added to the feminine termination of *premier* and *second*: as—*première*, *premièrement*; *seconde*, *secondement*.

§. 4.

EXAMPLE OF THE ORDINAL NUMBERS,

used with the word fois, *time.*

When the Ordinal Numbers are used with the word *fois*, they are preceded by the Definite Article *la* in French, in the sense of *the* in English: as—

La première fois,	*the first time.*
La seconde, *or* la deuxième fois,	*the second time.*
La troisième fois,	*the third time.*
La quatrième fois,	*the fourth time.*
La cinquième fois,	*the fifth time.*
La sixième fois,	*the sixth time.*
La septième fois,	*the seventh time.*
La huitième fois,	*the eighth time.*
La neuvième fois,	*the ninth time.*
La dixième fois,	*the tenth time.*
La onzième fois,	*the eleventh time.*
La douzième fois,	*the twelfth time.*
La treizième fois,	*the thirteenth time.*
La quatorzième fois,	*the fourteenth time.*
La quinzième fois,	*the fifteenth time.*
La seizième fois,	*the sixteenth time.*
La dix-septième fois,	*the seventeenth time.*
La dix-huitième fois,	*the eighteenth time.*
La dix-neuvième fois,	*the nineteenth time.*
La vingtième fois,	*the twentieth time.*
La vingt et unième fois,	*the twenty-first time.*
La vingt-deuxième fois, &c.	*the twenty-second time, &c.*
La trentième fois,	*the thirtieth time.*
La trente et unième fois,	*the thirty-first time.*
La trente-deuxième fois, &c.	*the thirty-second time, &c.*
La quarantième fois,	*the fortieth time.*
La quarante et unième fois,	*the forty-first time.*
La quarante-deuxième fois, &c.	*the forty-second time, &c.*
La cinquantième fois,	*the fiftieth time.*
La cinquante et unième fois,	*the fifty-first time.*
La cinquante-deuxième fois, &c.	*the fifty-second time, &c.*
La soixantième fois,	*the sixtieth time.*
La soixante et unième fois,	*the sixty-first time.*
La soixante-deuxième fois, &c.	*the sixty-second time, &c.*
La soixante-dixième fois,	*the seventieth time.*
La soixante et onzième fois, &c.	*the seventy-first time, &c.*
La quatre-vingtième fois,	*the eightieth time.*
La quatre-vingt-unième fois,	*the eighty-first time.*
La quatre-vingt-deuxième fois, &c.	*the eighty-second time, &c.*
La quatre-vingt-dixième fois,	*the ninetieth time.*
La quatre-vingt-onzième fois, &c.	*the ninety-first time, &c.*
La centième fois,	*the hundredth time.*
La millième fois, &c.	*the thousandth time, &c.*

EXERCISE.

George the third was good, peaceable, and benevolent, whilst
—— *bon paisible bienveillant tandis que*

Napoleon the first was warlike and ambitious.—(Did you see) Lewis
guerrier ambitieux. Avez-vous vu

the eighteenth at the review this morning? No; I was in the country;
revue à

where I passed three or four days (very agreeably)
où ai passé le plus agréablement du monde

with Mrs. T * * *.—I wrote to your brother, on that subject, on the
écrivis à sujet

ninth of June, but he answered me, on the twentieth of July, that
mais répondre

he (intended to set out) for Paris on the first of August, if his
avait intention de partir ——

affairs (allowed him.)——Your letter of the tenth of May
affaire le lui permettaient.

reached us on the fifteenth.——(You must) first take a
2 *est parvenue* 1 *Il faut* 1^{ment,} *prendre*

pill (every evening at bed-time;) secondly, wash the wound
pilule tous les soirs avant de vous coucher 2^{ment,} *laver blessure*

(every other hour,) in warm water; thirdly, take two
toutes les deux heures de l' chaud eau 3^{ment,}

(table-spoons full) of this medicine three times a day.—She came
cuillerées médecine par venir

twice yesterday; but the first time she called I was absent,
qu' passer ——

and the second time I was so engaged that I (could not) speak to her.
occupé ne pus pas

—They go there nine or ten times (in the course of the) year.—
2*aller* 1*y par an*

I (have obliged them with) my cabriolet a hundred times.—He sends
leur ai prêté —— 2*envoie*

us the papers five or six times a week.—(This is) the twenty-first
1 *papier par voici*

or twenty-second letter that I write to-day.——The person who
lettre écris aujourd'hui,

(has just knocked) at the door (looks) extremely ill; she
vient de frapper porte a l'air malade elle

(has been here at least) fifty times, without (ever being able) to*
est venue au moins sans jamais pouvoir

speak to* you.—Well, tell her that, if she (will call again,) on
2 1*vous hé bien dites-lui que veut revenir*

Friday, at seven o'clock (in the) evening, I shall see her the first.
du 2*verrai* 1*la* ,

—(How many) times have you done that?—A thousand times.
Combien de *fait*

—(Has not any body been here for me?) Yes; (there are)
N'est-il venu personne me demander *Il y a*

nine or ten people (waiting) in the (drawing room.)—
personne qui vous attendent *salle*

Take these two prescriptions, which I have written for your little
prenez *ordonnance* *écrites*

girl, and go, and* (get them prepared) at No. 14, Lombard-street.—
les faire préparer

Where does* his mother live? In Oxford-street, No. 72 or 73:
Où [2] [3] [1]*demeurer*

I beg your pardon; it is in Parliament-street, No. 90.—
[2]*demander* [1]*vous* ——— *c'est*

(Does not your cousin live) at No. 31, Cheapside? No; it is in
votre cousine ne demeure-t-elle pas

King-street, No. 12.—If you will go to No. 41, Strand, you
voulez

will see some one who wishes to* speak to* you.—We have lived
verrez quelqu'un désirer [2] [1]*vous* *demeurer*

seven years in the city, and one-and-twenty at the (West end) of the
cité *autre bout*

town.—My father comes (every morning) to town, and returns in*
venir tous les matins *retourner*

the evening to the country, after he has paid two or three visits
après qu' *fait* *visite*

which he (never fails to make.)——London, September 12th, 1823.
ne manque jamais de rendre

—Thursday, 24th.—Come on Friday or Saturday.

CHAPTER IV.

OF PRONOUNS.

THE Pronoun is a word used to supply the place of a Noun which has been mentioned before, and to avoid its too frequent repetition.

There are four sorts of Pronouns, the *Personal*, *Adjective*, *Relative*, and *Indefinite*.

ARTICLE I.

OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

As Personal Pronouns are used either as the subject or object of

the Verb, we shall divide them into two classes, considering, in the first, those which are the subject of the Verb, and, in the second, those which are its object.

§. 1.

OF THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS WHICH ARE THE SUBJECT OF THE VERB.

The Personal Pronouns, which fill the place of the subject of the Verb, are—*I, thou, he, she, we, ye* or *you, they;* these are expressed in French:—*I* by *je, thou* by *tu, he* by *il, she* by *elle, we* by *nous, ye* or *you* by *vous, they* by *ils* or *elles; je* being used for the first person singular of both genders, whether it is a man or a woman who speaks; *tu* for the second singular, equally of both genders; *il* for the third singular masculine, and *elle* for the third feminine; *nous* for the first plural of both genders; *vous* for the second plural, equally of both genders; *ils* for the third plural masculine; and *elles* for the third feminine.

It and *they,* used in English with reference to things, are also expressed in French:—*it* by *il* or *elle,* for the singular; and *they* by *ils* or *elles,* for the plural.

Hence, Pronouns, like Substantives, admit of two numbers, the singular and plural: *je, tu, il, elle,* being used for the singular; and *nous, vous, ils, elles,* for the plural.

Gender affects the third persons singular and plural only: as—*il, elle; ils, elles; il* and *ils* being masculine, *elle* and *elles* feminine. The Pronouns of the first and second persons are either masculine or feminine, according as the person whom they represent is masculine or feminine.

General Rule.—*Je, tu, il, elle, nous, vous, ils, elles,* always precede the Verb when affirmatively or negatively used, but follow it when interrogatively: as—*Je parle,* I speak; *il ne parle pas,* he does not speak; *parlez-vous?* do you speak? *ne parlez-vous pas?* do you not speak?

PARTICULAR OBSERVATIONS.

Although *I, thou, he, she, we, you, they,* are generally expressed by—*Je, tu, il, elle, nous, vous, ils, elles,* there are cases in which these four, *I, thou, he, they,* are translated by—*moi, toi, lui, eux.*

1. When they come after each other in a series or kind of enumeration: as—*I, thou, he, they,* &c. *moi, toi, lui, eux,* &c.

2. When they are joined, either together or to another Pronoun, Noun, or even a part of a sentence, by a Conjunction: as—He *and* I, *lui et moi,* and not *il et je;* they *and* my son, *eux et mon fils,* and not *ils et mon fils;* neither they *nor* you, *ni eux ni vous,* and not *ni ils ni vous,* &c.

3. When coming after these expressions:—*It is, it was, it will be, it would be,* or similar ones, whether in the affirmative, negative, or interrogative, which are expressed in French by—*c'est, c'était, ce fut, ce sera, ce serait,* &c. when in the affirmative; by—*ce n'est pas, ce n'était pas,* &c. when in the negative; and by—*est-ce, était-ce,* &c. when in the interrogative: as—It is thou, *c'est toi,* and not *tu;* it was not they, *ce n'était pas eux,* and not *ils;* was it he? *était-ce lui?* and not *il;* or, again, when they are used in answer to a question: as—Who has done that? I; *qui a fait cela? moi,* and not *je,* &c.

4. When they come by themselves after the conjunction *than (que,)*

following a comparative, or when they come before the word *alone*, *(seul)*; also, when they precede or follow the Relatives, *who, whom, that*, or *which, (qui, que)*, and are taken in a particular sense: as—She is younger than I, *elle est plus jeune que moi*, and not *que je*; they alone were speaking, *eux seuls parlaient*, and not *ils seuls*; was it he who was singing? *était-ce lui qui chantait?* and not *il*; they whom I loved so much, *eux que j'aimais tant*, and not *ils*.

5. When used to denote a contrast or opposition between two parts of a sentence: as—You think so, and I differently, *vous pensez de même, et moi différemment*, and not *je*; in which case, *moi, toi, lui, eux*, are frequently followed by *je, tu, il, ils*: as—*Vous êtes de cet avis, et moi je pense différemment*, you think so, and I think differently.

Moi and *je*, *lui* and *il*, and *eux* and *ils*, are, also, sometimes conjointly used before the Verb; or *je, il, ils*, before it, with *moi, lui, eux*, coming after the Verb. This obtains chiefly in a familiar style; it also imparts greater energy to the sentence, and expresses astonishment or surprise in the sense of *I, he, they*, in English: as—*Moi je dis*, or *je dis moi*, I say; *je prétends moi*, or *moi je prétends*, I pretend; *lui, il dit*, or *il dit, lui*, he says; *moi! j'ai dit cela*, or *j'ai dit cela, moi!* I! I have said that! *lui! il a fait cela*, or *il a fait cela, lui!* he, he has done that! *ils m'ont vu, eux!* or *eux! ils m'ont vu*, they! they have seen me! &c.

Finally, *moi, lui, eux*, are used before a Verb in the Present of the Infinitive, for *I, he, they*, before a Conditional in English, to denote, also, astonishment or surprise: as—I would betray my best friend! *Moi! trahir le meilleur de mes amis!* He would be guilty of cowardice! *Lui! faire une lâcheté*, or also, *faire une lâcheté lui!* &c. as if it were in English: *I to betray the best of my friends! He to be guilty of cowardice!* or, *to be guilty of cowardice, he!*

EXERCISE.

You speak too fast.—She does* not dance so well as I thought.—
trop vîte *danser*

They will come if the weather permit.—Is she handsome?—Does* it
venir *le permet* *beau* [2]*il*

rain?—Yes, it has (been raining) all the morning.——I think it (will
[1]*pleut* *plu* *matinée* *crois qu'*

be a fine day.)————Will they go to the play to-night?—No,
fera beau tems aujourd'hui *aller* *comédie ce soir*

they (are going into) the country.—If you do* not come and* spend
vont à campagne *passer*

the day with me, I shall never* ask you again.——Have you
journée avec *ne* [2]*inviter* [1] [3]*plus*

finished your letter?—No, not yet.— Has he not sent you your coat?
finir *pas encore Ne*[2] *point envoyer* [1]

—Yes, I (have just received it.)—How much did it cost you?—Six
viens de le recevoir *Combien* [2]*a-t-il coûté* [1]

guineas and (a half.)—Do* you sell gloves?—Yes, Sir.—Have you
guinée *demie* *vendre gant*

breakfasted?—Do* you speak French?—At what o'clock do* you
déjeûner *Français*

dine?—At five.—What o'clock is it now?——(Half-past three.)—
dîner *à présent* *Trois heures et demie*

Pray, which is the way to the Park?—He and your sister
Je vous prie [1] [2] *chemin pour aller*

were there.—You and I will go together.—They and your daughter went
2 1y nous irons ensemble
to the English Opera yesterday evening.—Is it he who was so much*
Anglais opéra hier au soir Est-ce
offended?—(Was it) they who knocked at the door?—No, it was I.—
fâché Etaient-ce frapper c'
Your brother is taller than I; but he is not so strong as I.—He alone
frère fort seul
can do that.—Is it they who will sing?—You do not think so,
peut faire Est-ce chanter 2 1*le*
nor I neither.—That lady maintains that this proposition is true, and
non plus dame soutenir que —— *vrai*
I assert the contrary.—You tell me she is dead, and he (says it) is
prétendre contraire 2*dites* 1 *qu' mort dit que cela*
not so*.—We (will take) a walk this evening, you, your mother, and I.
irons faire tour soir
—I said so!—He (will do) that!—I do* not believe it.—I would
ai dit cela fera crois
reveal the secret of my friend! No, never.—Who was speaking to
révéler —— *jamais*
you?—He and your friend.—Who (read last?)—He and I.—You
a lu le dernier
like the town, and I the country.——When my dear Zelinda and
aimer Lorsque ——
I were walking (by the melancholy beams) of the rising moon,
nous nous promenions au clair mélancolique naissant lune
we (were used to repeat:)——(How sweet it is thus to unbend
nous plaisions à répéter Qu'il est doux de se délasser
one's mind) after the toils of the day.—(Look at) that magnificent
ainsi l'esprit après fatigue jour Regardez magnifique
building, it unites gracefulness with beauty, and elegance with
édifice réunir grâce à beauté élégance à
simplicity.—(This is) a fine pear-tree, it blossoms every spring,
simplicité Voilà poirier fleurir tous les printems
yet it seldom bears any fruit:——I (will cut it down)
cependant 2*rarement* 1*produit aucun* —— *l'abattrai*
if it (produces no) pears this year.
ne donne pas de année

§. 2.

OF THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS WHICH ARE THE OBJECT OF THE VERB.

The Personal Pronouns which are the object of the Verb are—*me, thee, him, her, us, ye, you, them*, with reference to persons, or things

animate; and *it* or *them* with reference to things inanimate, which are expressed in French—*me* by *me*, *thee* by *te*, *him* by *le*, *her* by *la*, *it* by *le* or *la*, *us* by *nous*, *ye* or *you* by *vous*, *them* by *les*, when they are the direct object of the Verb, or when being its indirect object, it requires *à* after it in French, whatever Preposition it may govern in English, except *him*, *her*, and *them*, which are then expressed—*him* and *her* by *lui*, *them* by *leur*, with reference to persons or things animate; and *it* or *them* by *y*, with reference to things inanimate. These Pronouns are placed before the Verb in a simple tense, and before the Auxiliary in a compound one, whether the sentence is affirmative, negative, or interrogative, leaving the Preposition *à* required by the French Verb unexpressed, as well as that governed by the English Verb: as—I love you, *je vous aime;* he admires her, *il l'admire;* we believe them, *nous les croyons;* have you written to me? *m'avez-vous écrit?* but we say: *je lui parlerai*, I shall speak to him; *elle leur a écrit*, she has written to them; *y avez-vous pensé?* have you thought of it? because the Verbs *parler*, *écrire*, *penser*, which govern the Pronouns *him*, *them*, and *it*, require the Preposition *à*.

Me is, however, expressed by *moi*, and not *me*, and placed after the Verb when used with the second person singular and plural of the Imperative employed affirmatively; but not if negatively, *me* being then expressed by *me*, and placed before it, as in the other tenses: as—Speak to me, *parlez-moi*, and not *me;* but—do not speak to me, *ne me parlez pas;* because the Verb is negative.

But, *to me* is expressed by *à moi; to thee* by *à toi; to him* by *à lui; to her* by *à elle; to us* by *à nous; to you* or *ye* by *à vous; to them* by *à eux*, or *à elles;* when they are the object of a Verb which is reflected in French, requiring *à* after it, whatever Preposition it may govern in English; also, when they come after any of the following Verbs, which always require *à* after them: *aller*, to go; *attacher*, to attach; *attirer*, to attract; *avoir affaire*, to have business with; *avoir égard*, to have consideration for; *avoir rapport*, to relate to, to refer to; *avoir recours*, to have recourse to; *courir*, to run; *être*, to be, to belong, and when used impersonally with *ce* before it; *en appeler*, to appeal; *faire attention*, to pay attention; *penser*, to think; *prendre garde*, to mind; *songer*, to think; *recourir*, to have recourse to; *venir*, to come; *voler*, to fly; putting these Pronouns after the Verb in a simple tense, and after the Participle in a compound one: as—I shall apply to him, *je m'adresserai à lui;* this book is mine, *ce livre est à moi;* I always think of you, *je pense toujours à vous;* he went to her, *il alla à elle;* I appeal to them, *j'en appelle à eux*, &c.

To me, to thee, to him, to her, to us, to you, to them, are likewise expressed by—*à moi, à toi, à lui, à elle, à nous, à vous, à eux, à elles,* when coming after any other Verb, which requires *à* after it, if they are joined together, or to another Noun, by a Conjunction: as—I speak to you and to him, *je parle à vous et à lui;* I spoke to the lady, and not to you, *c'était à madame et non à vous que je parlais.*

If *me, thee, him, her, us, ye, you,* or *them,* were the object of a Verb which requires *de* after it in French, instead of *à*, whether it is a reflected one or not, *me* is then expressed by *de moi; thee* by *de toi; him* by *de lui; her* by *d'elle; us* by *de nous; you* by *de vous; them* by *d'eux, d'elles;* which are put after the Verb, in a simple tense, and after the Participle, in a compound one: as—He is always complaining of me, *il se plaint toujours de moi;* I do not pity

him; *je n'ai point pitié de lui*, &c. because the Verbs *se plaindre* and *avoir pitié* govern *de*.

However, *him, her*, or *them*, referring to persons, and *it* or *them* to things that have been mentioned before, as when we say, after having spoken of some person or thing, *I am satisfied with him, her*, or *them; I am glad of it; he will wonder at it; they are not sorry for it*, &c. *him, her*, or *them*, and *it* or *them*, are expressed in French by *en*, which is put before the Verb in a simple tense, and before the auxiliary in a compound one, when depending on a Verb which governs *de* after it in French, leaving *de* unexpressed, as well as the Preposition, which may be used in English: as—I am satisfied with him, her, or them, *j'en suis content;* I am glad of it, *j'en suis bien aise;* he will wonder at it, *il s'en étonnera;* they were not sorry for it, *ils n'en étaient pas fâchés;* because the Verbs *être content, être bien aise, s'étonner, être fâché*, govern *de* after them.

Me, thee, him, her, us, ye, you, them, coming after a Preposition under any other circumstances than those which have been mentioned, are expressed by *moi, toi, lui, elle, nous, vous, eux, elles*, and are put after it: as—This is for me and that for thee, *ceci est pour moi et cela pour toi;* it is against him, *c'est contre lui*, &c. &c.

General Rule.—From the above rules it may be inferred that the Pronouns *me, te, nous, vous, lui, leur, le, la, les, y, en*, are Conjunctive, and always precede the Verb of which they are the object, in a simple tense, and the auxiliary, in a compound one, whether the sentence is affirmative, negative, or interrogative, except in the second person singular and in the first and second plural of the imperative affirmatively used, in which case they are placed after; *me, te*, being then changed into *moi, toi*: as—He loves me, *il m'aime;* I told him to . . ., *je luis dis de . . .;* I have not seen them, *je ne les ai pas vus;* have you found her? *l'avez-vous trouvée?* do you not love me? *ne m'aimez-vous point?* speak to me, *parlez-moi*, and not *me;* tell him to come, *dites-lui de venir;* speak to them, *parlez-leur;* look for it, *cherchez-le* or *la;* think of it, *pensez-y*, &c. &c.

However, if the Verb were used negatively, in the imperative, the Pronouns should then go before it, as in the other tenses, and in any case they always precede, when used with the third person singular and plural, whether the Verb is affirmative or negative: as—Do not look at me, *ne me regardez pas;* let him or them pay me, *qu'il me paie*, or *qu'ils me paient*, &c.

As to the Pronouns *à moi, à toi, à lui, à elle, à nous, à vous, à eux, à elles*, and *de moi, de toi, de lui, d'elle, de nous, de vous, d'eux, d'elles*, they may be considered as Disjunctive, being always placed after the Verb in a simple tense, and after the Participle in a compound one: as—He applied to me, *il s'adressa à moi;* I shall go to him, *j'irai à lui;* she is come to us, *elle est venue à nous;* I shall not complain of him, *je ne me plaindrai pas de lui;* she has laughed at me, *elle s'est moquée de moi*, &c.

Le, la, l', les, are always Articles when used for *the* before a Noun, and Pronouns when they are the object of a Verb, in the sense of *him, her, it, them*, or *so:* as—The brother and sister, *le frère et la sœur;* I have not seen them, *je ne les ai pas vus*.

For any further explanations, see the Syntax.

EXERCISE.

Have you seen the King ?—Yes ; I have seen him several times ; but
vu roi plusieurs fois
I have never spoken to him.—I know them very well by sight.—Do*
connais de vue
you believe her ?—Neglect the pleasures of life, the pains which
croyez Négliger plaisir vie peine
follow them prove their vanity.—Jupiter, vexed that Saturn laid
suivent prouver vanité —— irrité que Saturne tendît
snares for* him, took up* arms against him, drove him out* of his
piége lui prit arme contre chasser
kingdom, and compelled him to quit heaven.—Do* you admire her?
forcer à quitter ciel admirer
Yes ; and I love her with all my heart.—Do* you not see him
aimer de cœur Ne [2] voyez-vous point [1]
sometimes ?—Yes ; I frequently meet him at the exchange.—
quelquefois [3]fréquemment [2] rencontrer [1] bourse
To please her, (you must never) flatter her.—I shall write to you
pour plaire lui il ne faut jamais flatter écrirai
in two or three days.—Prosperity gets us friends, and adversity
dans Prospérité fait adversité
tries them.——Have you thought (of it ?)—No ; I have quite
éprouver y tout-à-fait
forgotten it.—Think of it, for Sunday next.——Do* not think of
oublier pour Dimanche prochain
it (any more.)—When truth appears in all its brightness, (no body
pas davantage vérité paraît éclat personne
can) resist it.—Tell me, if you please, which of these two ladies
ne peut résister y s'il plaît
is married ?—Do* not tell him that you have seen me.—Do not speak to
marié
me again, as you did yesterday.—Your dogs are hungry and dry.
plus comme fîtes chien ont faim soif
Give them some* thing* to eat and drink.—I shall apply to you,
à manger à boire s'adresser
if I want any thing.—Do not trust him.—He came to me, and
avoir besoin de quelque se fier venir
asked me to go with him.—You never think of me.—He has some*
prier d' aller penser à
business with you.—I shall have recourse to her.—(Whose turn
affaire à recours à qui
is it) to come ?—It is to you and me.—They appealed to me.—You
est-ce de en appeler

(never pay attention to it)—This money is mine.—I forgive both
n'y faites jamais attention argent pardonner et
you and her, because I hope you will behave better in future.—Will
parce que espérer que se comporter à l'avenir
you do that for me?—It depends upon you to merit his esteem.—
faire dépendre de de mériter estime
What do* you say of them?—I say that they have always recourse to
dites toujours
me, although I (never have any thing to do) with them.—Come and*
quoique n'aie jamais affaire à
speak to me.—Go and* dress yourself.——Answer me.——Go to
habiller vous Répondre
him.—Write to her.—Forgive them.—Listen to me.—Lend us that
Ecrivez Ecouter Prêter
book. I cannot, (I must) return it to day.—That belongs to
livre ne saurais il faut que je rende appartenir
you or to your sister.—It was not to the* gentleman, but to you I
Ce monsieur que
was speaking.—Did you complain of me?—No; I was laughing at
se plaindre se moquer de
him.—I (do not pity her very much;) I wonder at it.—The poor
n'ai pas grand' pitié d'elle s'étonner pauvre
girl is very sorry for it.—Are you glad of it?—No; I am quite
fille fâché bien aise tout-à-fait
mortified (at it.)—Life is a gift of God, to* destroy it is a crime.—
mortifié en don disposer en ——
What you said is against him and her.——Keep this for me, and
Ce que contre Garder
take that for yourself.—Pisistratus said of a drunken man, who had
prenez Pisistrate dit ivre
spoken against him: I am no more angry with him than if a (blind man)
pas plus fâché contre que aveugle
had run against me.—What avail riches to a miser?—He does*
s'était jeté servent avare
(not make any use of them.)
n'en fait aucun usage

ARTICLE II.

Of Adjective Pronouns.

Adjective Pronouns are of a mixed nature, participating the properties of Pronouns and Adjectives.

The Adjective Pronouns may be subdivided into two kinds; the *Possessive* and the *Demonstrative*.

§. 1.

OF POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

The Possessive Pronouns are those which relate to possession or property.

We shall divide them into two classes, the *Conjunctive* and the *Relative*.

The *Conjunctive* are—*mon, ma, mes,* my; *ton, ta, tes,* thy; *son, sa, ses,* his, her, or its; *notre, nos,* our; *votre, vos,* your; *leur, leurs,* their. They are called *Conjunctive,* because they always immediately precede the Substantive to which they refer, and cannot be used without it: as—*Mon livre,* my book.

The *Relative* are—*le mien, la mienne, les miens, les miennes,* mine; *le tien, la tienne, les tiens, les tiennes,* thine; *le sien, la sienne, les siens, les siennes,* his, hers, its, &c.; as in the following examples. They are called *Relative* because they are never prefixed to any Substantive, but always refer to a Noun antecedent: as—Your book and mine, *votre livre et le mien.*

The *Conjunctive* can be preceded by the Prepositions *de,* of or from; *à,* at or to, or any other; but never by the Article; whilst the *Relative,* on the contrary, are used with it, either simply: as—*Le, la, les,* the; or contracted with the Prepositions *de* and *à;* as—*du, des,* or *de la,* of or from the; *au, aux,* or *à la,* at *or* to the, as may be seen in the following examples.

EXAMPLE OF THE CONJUNCTIVE POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

FIRST PERSON.

	Singular. Mas.	Fem.	Plural. Mas. & Fem.
My,	Mon,	ma,	mes.
Of or *from my,*	De mon,	de ma,	de mes.
At or *to my,*	A mon,	à ma,	à mes.
Our,	Notre,	notre,	nos.
Of or *from our,*	De notre,	de notre,	de nos.
At or *to our,*	A notre,	à notre,	à nos.

SECOND PERSON.

	Singular. Mas.	Fem.	Plural. Mas. & Fem.
Thy,	Ton,	ta,	tes.
Of or *from thy,*	De ton,	de ta,	de tes.
At or *to thy,*	A ton,	à ta,	à tes.
Your,	Votre,	votre,	vos.
Of or *from your,*	De votre,	de votre,	de vos.
At or *to your,*	A votre,	à votre,	à vos.

THIRD PERSON.

	Singular. Mas.	Fem.	Plural. Mas. & Fem.
His, her, or *its,*	Son,	sa,	ses.
Of or *from his, her,* or *its,*	De son,	de sa,	de ses.
At or *to his, her,* or *its,*	A son,	à sa,	à ses.
Their,	Leur,	leur,	leurs.
Of or *from their,*	De leur,	de leur,	de leurs.
At or *to their,*	A leur,	à leur,	à leurs.

Example of the Relative Possessive Pronouns.

FIRST PERSON.

	Singular. Mas.	Fem.	Plural. Mas.	Fem.
Mine,	Le mien,	la mienne;	les miens,	les miennes.
Of or *from mine,*	Du mien,	de la mienne;	des miens,	des miennes.
At or *to mine,*	Au mien,	à la mienne;	aux miens,	aux miennes.
Ours,	Le nôtre,	la nôtre;	les nôtres,	les nôtres.
Of or *from ours,*	Du nôtre,	de la nôtre;	des nôtres,	des nôtres.
At or *to ours,*	Au nôtre,	à la nôtre;	aux nôtres,	aux nôtres.

SECOND PERSON.

	Singular. Mas.	Fem.	Plural. Mas.	Fem.
Thine,	Le tien,	la tienne;	les tiens,	les tiennes.
Of or *from thine,*	Du tien,	de la tienne;	des tiens,	des tiennes.
At or *to thine,*	Au tien,	à la tienne;	aux tiens,	aux tiennes.
Yours,	Le vôtre,	la vôtre;	les vôtres,	les vôtres.
Of or *from yours,*	Du vôtre,	de la vôtre;	des vôtres,	des vôtres.
At or *to yours,*	Au vôtre,	à la vôtre;	aux vôtres,	aux vôtres.

THIRD PERSON.

	Singular. Mas.	Fem.	Plural. Mas.	Fem.
His, her, or *its,*	Le sien,	la sienne;	les siens,	les siennes.
Of or *from his, her,* or *its,*	Du sien,	de la sienne;	des siens,	des siennes.
At or *to his, her,* or *its,*	Au sien,	à la sienne;	aux siens,	aux siennes.
Theirs,	Le leur,	la leur;	les leurs,	les leurs.
Of or *from theirs,*	Du leur,	de la leur;	des leurs,	des leurs.
At or *to theirs,*	Au leur,	à la leur;	aux leurs,	aux leurs.

1. General Rule.—When several Substantives follow each other in the same sentence, the Conjunctive *mon, ma, mes; ton, ta, tes,* &c. are usually repeated in French before each of the Substantives they specify, and agree with it in gender and number; whilst *my, thy, his, her, its,* &c. never vary in English, being frequently put before the first Substantive only, and understood before the others: as—My brother, sister, and friends are gone into the country, *mon frère, ma sœur, et mes amis sont allés à la campagne;* she has lost her beauty, fortune, and friends, *elle a perdu sa beauté, sa fortune, et ses amis.*

The *Relative* likewise agree with their respective Substantives: as—Your book and mine, *votre livre et le mien;* his friends and mine, *ses amis et les miens.*

The three Possessive *son, sa, ses,* always agree in French with the Noun following, and never with the preceding one; that is to say, they agree with the thing possessed and not with the possessor; as is the case with the English *his, her,* or *its:* as—*Il aime sa femme,* he loves his wife, and not *son femme; elle a perdu son bien,* she has lost her property, and not *sa bien.*

Mon, ton, son, must always be used instead of *ma, ta, sa,* before a Noun feminine singular beginning with a vowel or an *h* mute, in order to avoid the bad effect which would be produced upon the ear by the meeting of the two vowels: as—*Mon oreille,* my ear; and not *ma oreille; ton horloge,* thy clock, instead of *ta horloge; son humeur,* his temper; and not *sa humeur; son épée,* his sword; and not *sa épée.* Whilst *notre, votre, leur,* are indifferently used before a Noun masculine or feminine, either beginning with a vowel, a consonant, or an *h* mute: as—*votre erreur,* your error: *notre maison,* our house.

Leur, their, must not be confounded with *leur,* to them; the former being the possessive conjunctive Pronoun, which always precedes a Substantive, and takes an *s* in the plural: as—*leurs desseins,* their designs; *leurs enfans,* their children; while the latter is a personal Pronoun which goes before a Verb, and never takes an *s*: as—*Il leur parla,* he spoke to them.

Notre and *votre* conjunctive are sounded short. *Le nôtre, le vôtre,* relative, are sounded long, and have a circumflex accent over the *o*: as—*Notre fortune est faite, la vôtre ne l'est pas;* our fortune is made, yours is not.

One of the conjunctive Pronouns *mon, ma, mes,* must always be used in French before the names of our friends and relations when we address them, although *my* is not generally used in such cases in English: as—*Comment vous portez-vous, mon père?* how do you do, father? *adieu, mes enfans,* adieu, children.

Note.—When inquiring about or speaking of a person for whom we feel some consideration or respect, and with whom we are not upon terms of intimacy, one of the qualifications *monsieur, madame, mademoiselle,* or their plural, if speaking of several, must be used before the possessive *votre* or *vos* your, which precedes the name of the person or persons mentioned, though there is no equivalent expression used in English: as—Present my compliments to your mother, *présentez mes complimens à madame votre mère;* give my love to your sisters, *faites bien mes amitiés à mesdemoiselles vos sœurs.*

But *friends, brothers, sisters,* when inquiring about or speaking of each other, parents speaking of their children, children of their parents; or when speaking or inquiring about some person who is our inferior: such as—*servants, workmen,* &c. those preliminaries, *monsieur, madame, mademoiselle,* are never used: for instance, a person inquiring after the health of his friend's sister, would say—*Comment se porte ta sœur?* how is your sister? and not *comment se porte mademoiselle ta sœur?*

One's, used in a general and indefinite manner in the sense of *his,* is expressed in French by one of the possessive, *son, sa, ses,* according to the gender and number of the Substantive following: as—One must live according to one's income, *il faut vivre suivant ses revenus.*

2. General Rule.—The Relative *mine, thine, his, hers, ours, yours, theirs,* preceded by the Preposition *of,* and placed after the Substantive to which they relate: as—*a friend of mine, a book of yours, a countryman of his,* are expressed in French by the Conjunctive *mes, tes, ses, nos, vos, leurs,* with the Preposition *de* before them, and are placed before the Substantive to which they relate, which must be put in the plural: as—A friend of mine, *un de mes amis;* a book of

yours, *un de vos livres;* a countryman of his, *un de ses compatriotes;* as if it were in English: *one of my friends, one of your books,* &c.

But *mine, thine, his, hers, ours, yours, theirs,* coming after any tense of the Verb *to be,* signifying *to belong to:* as—*This coat is mine. that music is yours,* are expressed in French: *mine* by *à moi, thine* by *à toi, his* by *à lui, hers* by *à elle, ours* by *à nous, yours* by *à vous,* and *theirs* by *à eux* or *à elles,* and are placed similarly to *mine, thine, his,* &c. in English: as—This coat is mine, *cet habit est à moi;* that music is yours, *cette musique est à vous;* as if it were in English: *that coat is to me, that music is to you,* &c.

Note.—The word *own,* which is sometimes used after the possessive *my, thy, his, her, our, your, their,* for the purpose of giving more strength and energy to the expression: as—*I heard it with my own ears, I saw it with my own eyes,* &c. is expressed in French by the Adjective *propre:* as—I heard it with my own ears, *je l'ai entendu de mes propres oreilles;* I saw it with my own eyes, *je l'ai vu de mes propres yeux.*

EXERCISE.

My father, mother, and sisters loved him tenderly.——His wife
aimer tendrement femme
is very ugly.—I have spoken to her husband.—Napoleon was a great
laid mari
general, but his ambition ruined him.—I can assure you that her
général —— perdre puis assurer que
hope is ill grounded.—Her son is very learned.—(How old is)
espérance mal fondé fils savant Quel âge a
his (mother-in-law?)—His wit, his talents, his honesty, and his good
belle-mère esprit talent honnêteté
nature, (make him admired by) every body.—My principles, my
naturel le font admirer de principe
taste for study, and my love of retirement have made me choose a
goût pour l'étude amour retraite fait choisir
retired life.—If you wish to* obtain my favour and protection do*
retiré vie désirer obtenir faveur ——
not speak ill of me.—He has received these presents from my uncle
mal de recevoir oncle
and aunt.—(Shall I send) this pheasant to your friend?—Has she
de tante Enverrai-je faisan
lost all her property?—We expect a letter from our correspondent
perdre bien attendre correspondant
to-morrow.—Have you not (yet heard) from your amiable
encore reçu de nouvelles
cousin?—I (am going) to* write to her attorney this evening.—All
cousine vais écrire procureur
their projects have failed.—Is* your (grandfather still living?)—Yes;
projet manquer grand-père vit-il encore
but my grandmother is dead.—(Come,) friends, let us fly to glory.—
grand'-mère mort Allons amis voler gloire

How * do you do, children?—Give my love to your sisters.—
Comment se porter enfant Faites amitiés

Is your mother at home? No; but my father (is) and he will be
[3]*Est-elle* [1] [2]*mère* *y est*

very glad to see you.—Do* your nieces learn French? No.
de voir nièce apprennent-elles le

—Why? because one cannot always gratify one's wishes.—My
pourquoi parcequ' on ne peut pas satisfaire désir

horse and yours are very bad, but I think mine is a little better
cheval mauvais crois que peu meilleur

than yours.——Is it her temper or yours that hinders you from
Est-ce humeur qui empêcher de

living well together?——If it be yours, it is easy for* you to
[2]*vivre* [1]*bien ensemble ce est il* [2] [3]*aisé* [1] *de*

remedy it, (by keeping a check upon yourself;) if it be
[2]*apporter remède* [1]*y en prenant sur vous-même*

hers, redouble your attention, complaisance, and good behaviour,
redoubler de —— de ——— de bon procédé pl.

it is very seldom that this method (proves unsuccessful.)—The pictures
il rare que moyen ne réussisse pas tableau

are arrived from Italy, except yours, hers, and mine, which will
arriver de Italie excepté

come to-morrow.—If he had spoken to my parents as he has
venir à parent comme fait

to yours, I should have been there too.—We know what are your
y aussi savons

amusements in town, whilst you (are quite ignorant) of ours in the
amusement à la ville tandisque n'avez nulle idée à

country; but I assure you that ours are infinitely superior to yours.
campagne assurer que infiniment préférable

—They have returned us our music; where is theirs?—His morals
rendre musique où mœurs

are correct, but theirs are corrupt.—— Our field is cultivated, theirs
bon corrompu champ cultiver

(is not.)—My books are new; his are old.—Take this to my son and
ne l'est pas neuf vieux porter

that to yours.—You may send these pistols to their country
pouvez envoyer pistolet [2]*de campagne*

house, if you like; but (not) to mine.—She has learnt her lesson
[1]*maison voulez non pas appris leçon*

and he has not learnt his.—He has found a cravat of yours among
lui il trouver cravate parmi

his; a cravat of mine, you say, show it to me.—No, it is not
[2] [1]*dites montrez ce*

mine, it is my brother's.—If you see any one of my friends,
à voyez quelqu'un

present my compliments to him and tell him to come and* see
présenter *[2]dites [1]lui de* *voir*

me.—A countryman of yours was here yesterday.—(That is) a trick
compatriote *vint ici* *voilà* *tour*

of his.—This hat is mine, and that is yours.—Will you take this
porter

watch to your sister, I think it is hers.—Is that your great coat?
montre *crois que c'* *Est-ce-là* *surtout*

No, it is not mine, I have not brought it; I thought it was yours.—
ce *apporter* *croyais que c'*

Did you really hear that? Yes; I heard it with my own
Avez reéllement entendu *[2]ai entendu [1]le de*

ears.—(Why don't you believe me,) when I tell you that I saw it
oreille Que ne me croyez-vous *quand* *dis* *[2]ai vu [1]le*

with my own eyes?
de

---

§ 2.

Of Demonstrative Pronouns.

The Demonstrative Pronouns are those which precisely point out the person or thing spoken of.

As they are the same in English, whether they are prefixed to a Noun or merely refer to it, they offer no difficulty; but as they admit of a very different construction in French, we shall divide them into *Conjunctive* and *Relative.*

The *Conjunctive* are—*ce, cet, cette,* this, that; *ces,* these or those; which are always prefixed to a Noun, and can never be used without it. The *Relative* are—*celui, celle,* this, that; *ceux, celles,* these, those; which having always reference to a Noun expressed before, can never be prefixed to any. Both the *Conjunctive* and *Relative* agree in French in gender and number with their respective Substantives, retaining the same place in the sentence, which *this, that, these, those,* occupy in English; they never admit of any article before them in either language, but may be preceded by a Preposition, or united by a Conjunction; they are exemplified with the Prepositions *de* and *à* in the following examples: any other Preposition may be used instead, as the sense may require.

1. EXAMPLE OF THE CONJUNCTIVE

Ce, cet, cette, *this, that;* ces, *these, those.*

SINGULAR.

	Mas.		Fem.
This or *that,*	Ce,	cet,	cette.
Of or *from this* or *that,*	De ce,	de cet,	de cette.
To this or *that,*	A ce,	à cet,	à cette.

PLURAL.

	Mas.		Fem.
These or *those*,	Ces,	ces,	ces.
Of or *from these* or *those*,	De ces,	de ces,	de ces.
To these or *those*,	A ces,	à ces,	à ces.

2. EXAMPLE OF THE RELATIVE

Celui, celle, *this, that;* ceux, celles, *these, those.*

SINGULAR.

	Mas.	Fem.
This or *that*,	Celui,	celle.
Of or *from this* or *that*,	De celui,	de celle.
To this or *that*,	A celui,	à celle.

PLURAL.

These or *those*,	Ceux,	celles.
Of or *from these* or *those*,	De ceux,	de celles.
To these or *those*,	A ceux,	à celles.

3. EXAMPLE OF THE RELATIVE

Celui, celle, *this;* ceux, celles, *these; followed by the particle* ci, *with reference to the last thing mentioned, when speaking of two.*

SINGULAR.

	Mas.	Fem.
This,	Celui-ci,	celle-ci.
Of or *from this*,	De celui-ci,	de celle-ci.
To this,	A celui-ci,	à celle-ci.

PLURAL.

These,	Ceux-ci,	celles-ci.
Of or *from these*,	De ceux-ci,	de celles-ci.
To these,	A ceux-ci,	à celles-ci.

4. EXAMPLE OF THE RELATIVE

Celui, celle, *that;* ceux, celles, *those; followed by the Adverb* là, *with reference to the first thing mentioned, when speaking of two.*

SINGULAR.

	Mas.	Fem.
That,	Celui-là,	celle-là,
Of or *from that*,	De celui-là,	de celle-là.
To that,	A celui-là.	à celle-là.

PLURAL.

Those,	Ceux-là,	celles-là.
Of or *from those*,	De ceux-là,	de celles-là.
To those,	A ceux-là,	à celles-là.

5. EXAMPLE OF THE PRONOUNS

Ceci, *this, and* cela, *that, which have no plural, and are used to point out an object without naming it.*

SINGULAR.

	Mas.		Mas.
This,	Ceci.	*That,*	Cela.
Of or *from this,*	De ceci.	*Of* or *from that,*	De cela.
To this,	A ceci.	*To that,*	A cela.

OBSERVE.—*This, that, these, those,* are always expressed in French by—*ce, cet, cette, ces,* when they come immediately before a Substantive which they particularise: as—This gentleman, *ce monsieur;* that bird, *cet oiseau;* that man, *cet homme;* this lady, *cette dame;* these young ladies, *ces demoiselles;* these children, *ces enfans;* of these men, *de ces hommes;* always using *ce* before a Noun masculine singular, beginning with a consonant or an *h* aspirated; *cet* when it begins with a vowel or an *h* mute; *cette* before a Noun feminine, whether it begins with a vowel, an *h* mute, or a consonant; and, in every case, *ces* for the plural.

But they are expressed by—*celui, celle, ceux, celles,* when they refer to an antecedent Substantive, in which case they are generally followed by *of,* or by one of the Relative Pronouns—*who, whom, that, which, of whom, of which, &c.* as—Madam, I bring you your gown and *that of* your daughter, *madame, je vous apporte votre robe et* celle *de votre fille;* the term of life is short, *that of* beauty is still more so, *le temps de la vie est court,* celui *de la beauté l'est encore d'avantage;* lend me *that which* you had on yesterday, *prêtez-moi* celui *que vous aviez hier.*

Celui-ci, celle-ci, ceux-ci, celles-ci, are used for *this, these,* or *the latter,* referring to the last thing mentioned, when two or several have been spoken of; and also to denote among two or more objects the one nearest to the person who speaks; and *celui-là, celle-là; ceux-là, celles-là;* for *that, those,* or *the former,* with reference to the first thing mentioned, or to point out the most distant object: as—Which of these two horses would you advise me to buy, *this* is four years old and *that* five; *lequel de ces deux chevaux me conseilleriez-vous d'acheter?* celui-ci *a quatre ans et* celui-là *cinq.*

As to *ceci* and *cela,* they are used in the sense of *this* and *that* not joined to any Noun, nor referring to any, but taken in a vague sense, when speaking of any thing, or pointing at it without specifying what it is; they have no plural, and are both masculine. *Ceci* always refers to the last thing mentioned, or the nearest object to the person who speaks, and *cela* to the first thing mentioned, or the most distant object: as—What does *this* mean? *que veut dire* ceci? what did you do *that* for? *pourquoi avez-vous fait* cela? give *this* to the lady, *donnez* ceci *à madame;* bring me *that, apportez-moi* cela.

GENERAL RULE.—When several Substantives follow each other, *ce, cet, cette, ces,* are repeated in French before each of the Substantives they specify, and agree with it in gender and number, whilst *this, that, these, those,* are frequently used before the first Substantive only, and understood before the others in English: as—*that* man, woman, and child are playing, cet *homme, cette femme, et ces enfans jouent.*

The following lines of Racine beautifully exemplify the repetition of the demonstrative *ce*, *cet*, *cette*, *ces*.

De *cette* nuit, Phénice, as-tu vu la splendeur?
Tes yeux ne sont-ils pas tout pleins de sa grandeur?
Ces flambeaux, *ce* bûcher, *cette* nuit enflammée,
Ces aigles, *ces* faisceaux, *ce* peuple, *cette* armée,
Cette foule de rois, *ces* consuls, *ce* sénat,
Qui tous de mon amant empruntaient leur éclat,
Cette pourpre, *cet* or, que réhaussait sa gloire,
Et *ces* lauriers encor témoins de sa victoire.

(Rac. *Bérénice*, 1, 5.)

EXERCISE.

This picture is finer than that of your brother.—These oranges are
tableau beau ——
not so fine as those I bought yesterday.—I gave the money to
que acheter donner argent
that man.—The beak of that bird is (beautiful.)——(Is it far)
bec oiseau de toute beauté Y a-t-il loin
from that house to the river?—The system of Copernicus, which
rivière systême Copernic
asserts that the earth turns round the sun, is more probable than
assurer terre tourner autour du soleil ——
that of Ptolomy, who is of a contrary opinion.—The disorders of the
Ptolomée contraire —— *maladie*
body are not so dangerous as those of the mind.—Eternal happiness
corps dangereux esprit Eternel bonheur
is infinitely superior to that which a man can possess in this
infiniment au-dessus de qu' peut posséder
world.—The climate of France is not comparable to that of
monde climat ——
Switzerland.—The term of life is short; that of beauty is still
Suisse tems vie court l' encore
(more so.)—This hatred long restrained (broke forth) and was the
davantage haine long-tems contenu éclata
unhappy source of those dreadful events.——Which of my gowns
malheureux —— *terrible événement robe*
shall I lend her? That which you bought last year. No; I
prêter lui que acheter [2]*dernier* [1]*année*
should rather give her that which I showed Miss D*** (some time
préférerais donner que montrer à il y a quel-
ago).——The state of France is very different from that of England,
que tems état —— *différent Angleterre*
this is flourishing and that is poor.—Which of these two silk
florissant pauvre [2]*de soie*
umbrellas do* you recommend me? This is twenty-four shillings and
[1]*parapluie recommander de chelin*

that thirty. I like them both very well, but I think this (is
de aimer [3]*tous les deux* [1] [2]*bien crois que vaut*

better) than that.—Have you looked at* these two India shawls?
mieux regarder [2]*des Indes* [1]*schall*

which is the finer? I (really do not know;) however, I should
plus beau ne sais réellement pas cependant

give the preference to this rather than to that.—Do* not mention
donner préférence plutôt qu' parler

that to (any body,) or you (will repent it.)—— What did you do
de personne vous en repentirez Pourquoi avez' fait

that for*?—She is so inquisitive, she is* always asking why this
curieux [2]*toujours* [1]*demande pourquoi*

and why that.—I hope you will not refuse me that.——Is that
espérer que refuser [2]*Est-il* [1]

good to eat?—That is very bad to drink.—Take this to (the
à manger mauvais boire Porter

lady,) and keep that for yourself.—(What is the meaning of)
madame garder Que veut dire

this?——See how those men and women (are playing) together.—
Voyez comme jouent

Cyrus began the Persian monarchy, and Ninus that of Assyria.
—— *commencer* [2]*de Perse* [1]*monarchie Assyrie*

—You (ought not to trust) those who are interested in (deceiving
ne devriez pas vous fier à intéressé à [2]*tromper*

you).—You may tell that to those who will listen to* you.
[1]*vous pouvez dire qui voudront* [2]*écouter* [1]*vous.*

ARTICLE III.

Of Relative Pronouns.

The Relative Pronouns are such as relate in general to some word or phrase going before, which is thence called the antecedent, and which they immediately follow, agreeing with it in gender and number. They are—*Qui, que, quel, lequel, dont, quoi,* answering to the English—*who, whom, that, which, of whom, of which, what,* &c.: as—*La dame qui vient d'entrer,* the lady who has just gone in.

When the Relative Pronouns are used interrogatively, they relate to a word or phrase that is not antecedent, but subsequent, and which is specified in the answer: as—*Qui est là? Mademoiselle votre sœur;* who is there? your sister.

The following examples show the different constructions to which the Relative Pronouns are subject.

1. EXAMPLE OF THE RELATIVE

Qui, *who, which, or that; which is used for both genders and numbers, with reference to a Noun antecedent or subsequent.*

Who, which, or *that,*	Qui.
Whose, of or *from whom* or *which,*	Dont, de qui.
To whom, whose, or *to which,*	A qui.
Whom, that, or *which,*	Qui, que.

2. EXAMPLE OF THE RELATIVE

Lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles, *which; referring also to a Noun antecedent and subsequent.*

	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
	Mas.	Fem.	Mas.	Fem.
Which,	Lequel,	laquelle;	lesquels,	lesquelles.
Of or *from which,*	Duquel,	de laquelle;	desquels,	desquelles.
To which,	Auquel,	à laquelle;	auxquels,	auxquelles.

3. EXAMPLE OF THE RELATIVE

Quel, quelle, quels, quelles, *who or what; always referring to a Noun subsequent, which it precedes immediately.*

	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
	Mas.	Fem.	Mas.	Fem.
Who or *what,*	Quel,	quelle;	quels,	quelles.
Of or *from what,*	De quel,	de quelle;	de quels,	de quelles.
To what,	A quel,	à quelle;	à quels,	à quelles.

4. EXAMPLE OF THE PRONOUN

Quoi, what; *used either in exclamation, interrogation, or after a Preposition.*

What,	Quoi *and* quoi de.
Of or *from what,*	De quoi,
To what,	A quoi,
What,	Que.

OBSERVE.—1. *Qui,* who, that, or which, is used for the subject of the following Verb; and *que,* whom, that, or which, for its direct object, for both genders and numbers of all sorts of objects: they are placed immediately after the Noun to which they refer: as—*La demoiselle qui chante,* the young lady who sings; *le monsieur qui parle,* the gentleman who speaks; *les livres qui sont sur la table,* the books which are upon the table; *le jeune homme que je vois,* the young man whom I see; *les enfans que j'aime,* the children whom I love.

If *qui* is used in an interrogative manner, it may be either the subject or object of the following Verb, according to the sense: as—*Qui est là?* who is there? *qui appelez-vous?* whom do you call? it then answers to *who* and *whom.* But *que* can never be the subject of the Verb, whether the sentence is interrogative or not; it must always be its direct object: as—*Que faites-vous là?* what are you doing there?

2. *Lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles,* are used with reference to persons and things, in the sense of *which,* interrogatively used, when asking which person or thing among several: as—Which of your sisters is married? *laquelle de vos sœurs est mariée?* which of these two houses do you like the best? *laquelle de ces deux maisons aimez-vous le mieux?*

3. *Quel, quelle, quels, quelles,* are used for *what* immediately before a Substantive, in an interrogative sentence: as—*Quel livre?* what book? *quel cheval?* what horse? And also for *who* before a tense of the Verb *to be* referring to the following Noun: as—Who is that lady? *quelle est cette dame?* It would be likewise correct to say *Qui est cette dame?*

4. *Quoi* is used for *what,* depending on a Preposition, in the sense of *what thing,* whether the Preposition immediately precedes *what,* or comes after the Verb by which it may be governed: as—What are you thinking of? *à quoi pensez-vous?* what do you complain of? *de quoi vous plaignez-vous?* as if it were in English: *To what do you think? of what do you complain?*

5. *Dont, de qui, duquel, de laquelle, desquels, desquelles,* of *or* from whom *or* which, *or* whose, in the same sense, are used for the indirect object of the Verb when it requires *de* before it, with this distinction that *dont* is used for all sorts of objects of both genders and numbers; *de qui* with reference to persons only, and *duquel, de laquelle, desquels, desquelles,* with reference to things, and sometimes to persons. *Dont* and *de qui* are always immediately placed after the Noun to which they refer, and *duquel, de laquelle, desquels, desquelles,* in the place occupied by *of which* in English, when it comes after a Noun depending on a Preposition: as—*L'homme dont vous parlez,* the man of whom you speak; *la ville dont vous faites mention,* the town which you mention; *la personne de qui j'ai reçu cette nouvelle,* the person from whom I have received that news; *la Providence, sans le secours de laquelle nous ne pouvons réussir,* Providence, without the assistance of which we cannot succeed; *voilà des roses, dont l'odeur est très-agréable;* there are roses, the smell of which is very agreeable.

Dont can never be used to ask a question; therefore, whenever *of* or *from whom* or *which* are used interrogatively, they must always be expressed by *de qui,* with reference to persons only, and *duquel, de laquelle, desquels, desquelles,* with reference to persons and things, if the Verb on which they depend requires *de* before them: as—*De qui avez-vous reçu cette lettre?* from whom have you received that letter? *duquel parlez-vous?* of which do you speak? because the Verbs *recevoir* and *parler* require *de* before the Relative.

6.—*A qui* is used for *to whom,* or *whose,* in the same sense, in an interrogative sentence, with reference to persons only, of either gender or number; and, *auquel, à laquelle, auxquels, auxquelles,* for *to which,* referring to things, and sometimes, also, to persons, when the Verb governing *to whom,* or *to which,* requires *à* before their corresponding Pronouns in French: as—*A qui parlez-vous?* whom do you speak to?

à laquelle de ces fleurs donnez-vous la préférence? to which of these flowers do you give the preference?

Note.—If the Preposition, on which the Relative Pronouns depend, follows the Verb in English, it must always be put before them in French: as—Whom do you speak *to? à qui parlez-vous?* what do you complain *of? de quoi vous plaignez-vous?* as if it were, in English:—*To whom do you speak? of what do you complain?*

EXERCISE.

The bird which sings on that tree is very fine.—The cage which
oiseau chanter sur arbre ——

you have bought is much too small.—The apples which he has
acheter beaucoup trop petit pomme

sent us are all damaged.—The young man whom you recommended
envoyer endommager jeune recommander

to me (did not behave well) lately.—Who has ordered you to
ne s'est pas bien conduit ordonner de

bring that paper?—Whom do* you call?—What was* this lady
apporter papier appeler [3] [4]*dame*

telling you?—What were you doing in my room, when I (saw) you?
[2]*disait* [1] *faisiez ai vu*

—Which of those two ladies do* you like best?—To which of those
aimer

houses do* you give the preference?—From which of her brothers
maison donner préférence

have you (heard?)——— What lesson have you learnt?— What
reçu des nouvelles apprise De

grammar do* you use?—To what church do* you go?—Who is that
se servir aller

tall thin man?— What were you thinking of*?—What (does he
grand [2]*maigre* [1] *A penser se*

complain) of?—The lady from whom I received that information is
plaint-il avis

dead.—The town which you mention is not far from here?—
mort faites mention loin ici

(There is) a rose, the smell of which is very agreeable, but (I am afraid
Voilà —— [3] [4]*odeur* [1] [2] *je crains bien*

it will soon fade.)——The man whose wit and talents you
qu'elle ne se fane bientôt esprit [5] [6]*talent* [1]

admired (so much) is gone away* for ever.———Providence,
[2]*admirer* [3]*tant partir jamais* ———

without the assistance of which we cannot succeed.—Whom did you
sans secours ne pouvons réussir avez

receive that letter from?—There is red and white wine, which
reçu [2]*rouge du vin blanc* [1]*vin duquel*

will you have*.—Whom do* you wish to speak to?—Whom did you
désirer avez

give that order to?—To which of those houses will you go?—
donné ordre

(Send me back) the dictionary which I lent you.—This muslin is
renvoyez-moi dictionnaire ai prêté mousseline

the same which you (showed me before.)——Have you seen the
même m'avez déjà montrée vu

house of which I spoke to you?—All the advantages which we enjoy
avantage dont jouir

on earth come from God.—The daughter of Minos gave a thread to
sur terre venir —— donner fil

Theseus, (by means) of which he went out of the labyrinth.—
Thésée au moyen sortir labyrinthe

Alexander, to whose valour the Greeks owed (so many) victories,
Alexandre [2] [1]*valeur Grec devoir tant de victoire*

died at thirty-three years of* age.—I do* not know whom I must
mourut [2]*de* [3] [4] [5] [1]*l'* *sais dois*

go to.—The master to whom I shall recommend you is very clever.—
maître habile

Idleness is a vice to which young people are (very much) inclined.—
Paresse — jeunes gens pl. *très enclin*

The glory to which heroes sacrifice is often a false glory.—Who goes
gloire héros sacrifier faux

there?—Whom shall I apply to?—Which of your sisters learns
s'adresser apprend

French?—What book are you (reading) now?——What are her
lisez à présent

reasons?—What a* shocking accident!—What is your opinion on that
raison terrible —— avis

affair?—What are* you doing there?—What do* you want?—What
faites désirer

have you done with your money?—What does* he aim at?—What
fait de viser

does* your brother apply himself to?—If I had known the deplorable
[2] [3] [1]*s'appliquer su déplorable*

situation to which she is reduced, I should have sent her some
état réduit envoyer

money.——Is the exercise which I gave you to write too
[9]*Est-il* [1] [2] [3] [4] [6]*ai donné* [5] [7] [8]*écrire trop*

difficult?—The wine we drank yesterday was not very good.
difficile que bûmes

ARTICLE IV.

Of Indefinite Pronouns.

Indefinite Pronouns are so called because they denote persons and things in a vague and general way, without particularising them.—They are the following:—

One,	On.
Whoever, *Whosoever,* *Any one who,* or *that,* *Any body who,* or *that,*	Quiconque, qui que ce soit qui.
Whomsoever,	Qui que ce soit que.
Some body, *Some one,* *Any body,* *Any one,*	Quelqu'un, quelqu'une.
Each,	Chacun, chacune.
Every body, *Every one,*	Tout le monde.
Every, *Each,*	Chaque; tous les, toutes les; tout, toute.
No body, *No one,* *Not any body,* *Not any one,*	Personne.
No,	Nul, nulle; aucun, aucune.
None,	Aucun, aucune.
Not one, *Not any,*	Pas un, pas une.
Nothing, *Not any thing,*	Rien.
The same,	Le même, la même, les mêmes.
Many, *Several,*	Plusieurs.
Such,	Tel, telle; tels, telles.
Some, *Any,*	Quelque, quelques; and sometimes *quelconque, quelconques.*
Whatever,	Quelque, quelques, with *que* before the next Verb, which must be put in the Subjunctive Mood; and also, *quel que, quelle que; quels que, quelles que,* in two words, with the following Verb, likewise, in the Subjunctive Mood.

However, *Howsoever,* *Though ever so much,* *Though ever so little,* *Let ever so,*	*Quelque* and *tout,* indeclinable, with *que* before the next Verb, which must be put in the Subjunctive Mood after *quelque,* and in the Indicative after *tout.*
Whatever, *Whatsoever,* *Whichever,* *Whichsoever,*	Quelque chose que ; quoi que ce soit que ; quoi que.
All,	Tout, toute; tous, toutes.
All the, *The whole of,*	Tout le, toute la ; tous les, toutes les.
The whole,	Le tout.
All that, *Every thing that,*	Tout ce qui, tout ce que.
Another,	Un autre, une autre.
Others,	Les autres ; *autrui,* after a Preposition.
Each other, *One another,*	L'un l'autre, l'une l'autre ; les uns les autres, les unes les autres.
Both, *One and another,*	L'un et l'autre, l'une et l'autre ; les uns et les autres, les unes et les autres : tous les deux, toutes les deux, *or* tous deux, toutes deux.
Either,	L'un ou l'autre, l'une ou l'autre ; les uns ou les autres, les unes ou les autres.
Neither,	Ni l'un ni l'autre, ni l'une ni l'autre ; ni les uns ni les autres, ni les unes ni les autres.

Observe.—*On* is used in French in all vague and general expressions of reports : such as—*It is said, it is reported,* &c. In all indefinite expressions formed with *one, people, they :* as—*They fought like desperate men* ; and in all passive, indeterminate expressions : as—*I was told, he was told,* &c. putting the Verb of which it is the subject in the third person singular of the active voice, and any Adjective or Participle referring to it in the masculine singular, if *on* refers to men ; in the feminine, if to women ; and in the plural, either masculine or feminine, according to the sense, if including an idea of plurality : as —It is said, it is reported, *on dit ;* they fought like desperate men, *on se battit en désespérés ;* I was told, *on me dit ;* he was told, *on lui dit ;* as if it were in English—*one says, one fought, one told,* &c.

L'on is elegantly used instead of *on,* after *et, si, ou,* to avoid the harsh sound which would result from the meeting of those words with *on* ; thus we say—*et l'on, si l'on, ou l'on,* and not *et on, si on, ou on :* as—*Si l'on faisait la paix j'irais en France* ; if peace were made I should go to France ; and not *si on,* &c.

L'on is also used instead of *on* after *que,* when the following word begins with *c* or *q*, for the like purpose of avoiding the harsh sound which would result from their meeting together : as—*Ce que l'on conçoit bien s'exprime clairement,* and not *ce qu'on conçoit bien,* &c.

But *on* must always be used after *et, si, ou, que,* when the following word is one of the Pronouns *le, la, les, lui, leur,* or any other word with which *l'on* would have a disagreeable sound: as—*On le lui a dit;* he has been told of it; and not *l'on le lui a dit.*

On is in general to be preferred to *l'on,* and it would be ridiculous to begin a sentence, or a part of it, by *l'on:* as—*On aime une femme aimable, on la chérit, on l'adore;* we love an amiable woman, we cherish and adore her; and not *l'on aime une femme aimable, l'on la chérit, l'on l'adore.*

On and *l'on* being always the subject of the Verb, precede it, except in an interrogative sentence, when *on* goes after, like the personal pronouns; in which case, if the Verb ends with a vowel, a *t,* with a hyphen on each side of it, is put between the Verb and *on:* as—What will they do? *que fera-t-on?*

As to *l'on,* it can never be used for the subject of any Verb in the interrogative, it must always be *on.*

General Rule.—*On* is generally repeated in French before every Verb of which it is the nominative, although the expression equivalent to it in English may be used before the first Verb only, and understood before those which succeed, if several follow; in which case the Conjunction *and* used before the last Verb in English is elegantly suppressed in French: as—He is praised, threatened, and caressed; *on le loue, on le menace, on le caresse;* and not *et on le caresse.*

Aucun, nul, ni l'un ni l'autre, pas un, or their feminine, *aucune, nulle, ni l'une ni l'autre, pas une,* also *personne* and *rien,* always require *ne* before the Verb of which they are the subject or object, with the Adjective or Participle referring to them in the singular masculine if relating to men, and in the feminine if to women: as—I say nothing, *je ne dis rien;* nobody told you so, *personne ne vous l'a dit,* &c. always putting the Verb in the third person singular, if these Pronouns are its subject.

For any farther explanation see the Syntax, on Indefinite Pronouns.

EXERCISE.

They say that the French will not succeed in Spain.—It is reported
dit que Français réussir en Espagne

that the Spaniards have won the last battle.—I was told yesterday
Espagnols gagner dernier bataille

that the royal family was coming back to town.—Do* they talk of
famille revenir parler

peace?—People attribute the invention of (gun powder) to Berthold
paix attribuer —— poudre à canon ——

Scherward, of Friburg.—When one has deviated from the paths of
—— Fribourg s'est écarté sentier

virtue, one ought to* endeavour to (get into them again.)—(What
devoir chercher y rentrer Que

news is there?) None.—(Is it thought) that Marshal N** (will be)
*dit-on de nouveau rien Croit-on maréchal N** soit*

acquitted? No; people think that he will be condemned to death.—
acquitter penser condamner

If peace were made, I should go to France with you.—We learn bet-
en —— apprend

ter what we understand, than what we (do not.)——Do that,
ce que comprend que ne comprend pas Faites

or (you will be punished.)—She has been informed of it.——Bring
l'on vous punira mander Apporter

your papers and they will be examined.—False reports are often
papiers examiner [4]Faux [5]bruit [2]

circulated.—What do they say in that country of the French revolution?
[1]fait [3]courir Que dans pays ——

—(I shall have some fruit sent) from the country.—We love an amiable
On m'enverra du fruit campagne

woman, we cherish and adore her.—Somebody told me so. Well,
chérir adorer [3]a dit [1] [2]l' Hé bien

whoever told it you was wrong.—Has any body written to him?—
[3]a dit [2]l' [1] avait tort écrit

Every body believes it.—Nobody (came here) to-day.—If I had the
croit [2] [1]il n'est venu

least idea that she is dead, nobody (could induce me to believe) the
moindre idée qu' fût mort ne pourrait me faire croire

contrary.—I have seen none of his friends.—He knows nothing.—
contraire sait

Every one has his own* manner of thinking and acting.—Every coun-
manière d'agir

try has its laws and customs.—No man is free from error.—(There
loi usage exempt erreur Il n'y

was not) a single lady.—The same thing does* not please at all times.
avait pas seul plaît en

—Many people say so.—When we apply ourselves to several
[2]disent [1]le

sciences (at once,) we seldom succeed in any.——She is always
—— à la fois rarement réussir aucun

asking me why such or such a* thing.—Whatsoever merit he
à [2]demander [1] mérite

may have, he will never succeed.—Whatever services you have
——

rendered me, I have been thankful (for them.)—Whatever your
rendre [1] [3] [4] [5]reconnaissant [2]en [1] [3]

birth and elevation may be, you ought not to* despise any
[4]naissance[5] votre élévation [2]être devoir mépriser per-

body.—However foolish fashions may be, people follow them.——
sonne fou [2]mode [1]être suit

Whatever may happen, give me notice (of it.)—All men and wo-
Quoi qu' arriver donner m' [2]avis [1]en toutes
men are mortal.—Were all his friends there?—All that you say
mortel [5]étaient-ils [1] [2] [3] [4]y dites
is not true.—Do* not speak ill of others.—Another would not have
vrai parler mal
behaved in that manner.—They will both come.—Either
se comporter de [2]tous les deux [1]venir [3]
of* you can do me that favour.—Neither of* them* (knows)
[1]vous [2]pouvez faire plaisir [6] [1]ils[2]ne[3]savent
what to* do.
[4]quoi [5]faire.

CHAPTER V.

OF VERBS.

The Verb is the word, *par excellence;* it forms a part of every sentence, and is the tie of our thoughts; it alone has the property not only of manifesting their existence in relation to each other, but also of expressing the reference which they may have to the present, past, or future; for instance: *Les femmes sont aimables,* women are amiable; the Verb *sont* is the word with which I connect the word *femmes* with *aimables,* and by which I express, in that sentence, a reference to the present.

The Verb may be defined: *a word by which we denote that the person or thing of which we speak, either performs such or such an action,* or *is, was,* or *will be in such or such a state;* or again, according to several most esteemed authors: it is *a word of which the principal use is to signify affirmation.*

ARTICLE I.

Of the different Sorts of Verbs.

There are two sorts of Verbs, the *Substantive* and the *Adjective.*

There is only one *Substantive Verb,* which is—*être,* to be. It is called *Substantive,* because it merely denotes that the subject of which we speak, or which is the object of our thoughts, exists, has existed, or will exist, in relation with the modification expressed by the attribute,

without ever including that modification in its own signification; for instance: *Napoléon était un grand conquérant*, Napoleon was a great conqueror: the Verb *était* only affirms the existence of the subject, *Napoléon*, in relation with the modification of *grand conquérant*.

There are five *Adjective Verbs;* the *Active, Passive, Neuter, Pronominal,* and *Unipersonal.* They are called *Adjective*, because they express, in one word, the existence of the subject, and its relation to any modification included in their own signification; for instance: *Je joue*, I play; *joue* is an Adjective Verb, because it includes the Verb *être*, and the Adjective *jouant ; je joue* being, in fact, the true equivalent of this proposition: *Je suis jouant.*

The Verb *être* taken in the sense of *exister* is itself an *Adjective Verb;* for instance: *Dieu est*, God is, is precisely the same as if I had said: *Dieu est existant*, God is existing.

1. *Active Verbs* are those of which the subject performs the action which they express, and which have, or may have, at the same time for object, a Noun not preceded by any Preposition, as for instance: *Il aime Sophie*, he loves Sophia; *aime* is an Active Verb, because the action which it expresses, namely, that of loving, is performed by its subject, *il;* and it is immediately followed by *Sophie*, which is its direct regimen, or object.

A Verb may also be known to be an active one, when it will admit after the present of the Indicative the words, *quelqu'un*, some body; *quelque chose*, something; therefore, *chanter*, to sing; *consoler*, to console; are Active Verbs, because we can say: *Elle chante quelque chose*, she sings something; *je console quelqu'un*, I console some body.

2. *Passive Verbs* are those of which the subject is affected in any particular manner; or rather, of which the subject receives or suffers the action which they express, and which have no direct object: as— *Louise est aimée*, Louisa is loved; *est aimée* is a Passive Verb, because its subject, *Louise*, receives the action of being loved, which the Verb expresses; and *Louise* is, consequently, the term of the action, instead of being its cause, or mover.

3. *Neuter Verbs* are of two sorts:—1st, Those expressing an action performed by the subject, which either is, or can be, directed towards an object or a term, with the help of a Preposition, as may be seen by the following examples: *Il nuit à ma réputation*, he injures my reputation; *il vient*, he is coming; the action expressed by either of these two Verbs, *nuit* and *vient*, is performed by their subject *il*, and directed in the first example towards the object, *ma réputation*, with the help of the Preposition *à;* and in the second, it can be directed towards a term with a Preposition, as for instance: *Il vient de la campagne*, he comes from the country; these two Verbs are, consequently, neuter. —2dly. Those expressing an action performed by the subject, but which being concentrated within themselves, can never be directed towards any object; or rather, those merely expressing the *state, situation, manner of being*, or *existing of the subject*, such as: *Je dors*, I sleep; *j'ex*[illegible], I exist; which Verbs, *dors* and *existe*, merely express the sta[illegible] the subject *je.*

[illegible]ter Verbs can never be followed by the words: *Quelqu'un, quelque* c[illegible]not say: *Je dors quelqu'un*, or *quelque chose*, in which respect they d[illegible]Verbs, which always admit of those expressions.

4. *Pronominal Verbs* are those which are conjugated throughout their different tenses and persons, with two Pronouns of the same person, thus: *Je me, tu te, il* or *elle se, nous nous, vous vous, ils* or *elles se*, in the sense of—*myself, thyself, himself, herself, ourselves, yourselves, themselves*, either expressed or not in English: as—*Je me lève*, I rise; *tu te lèves*, thou risest, &c. *Je me suis levé*, I have risen; *tu t'es levé*, thou hast risen, &c. *nous nous sommes flattés*, we have flattered ourselves; *vous vous êtes flattés*, you have flattered yourselves, &c. &c.

The Present of the Infinitive, and *the Present Participle*, with their compounds, must, however, be excepted, as they have only one Pronoun: as—*Se lever*, to rise; *s'être levé*, to have risen; *se levant*, rising; *s'étant levé*, having risen. *The second person singular, the first and the second plural of the Imperative*, also, admit but one Pronoun only; as—*Lève-toi*, rise thou; *levons-nous*, let us rise; *levez-vous*, rise ye or you.

5. *Unipersonal Verbs*, otherwise called *Impersonal*, are Verbs which are only used in the third person singular of their different tenses: as—*Il y a*, there is; *il faut*, it is necessary; *il importe*, it is of importance.

It will not be superfluous to observe, that among Unipersonal Verbs, some are such essentially, that is to say, cannot be used otherwise than in the third person singular: as—*il pleut*, it rains; *il neige*, it snows; and others accidentally, being some times Unipersonal and sometimes Personal, according as the Pronoun *il*, which precedes them, is taken in an indeterminate manner, or with reference to a Noun antecedent; as for instance: *Il convient d'y aller*, it is becoming to go there; *il arrive souvent que*, it often happens that; in which sentences: *il convient* and *il arrive* are Impersonal, because the Pronoun *il* preceding them does not refer to any Noun antecedent. But in this: *pardonnez à votre fils, il convient de son tort*, pardon your son, he acknowledges his error; *il convient* is a Personal Verb, because it refers to the word *fils*, which is mentioned before.

ARTICLE II.

Of Numbers and Persons in Verbs.

There are two Numbers in Verbs, as in Nouns, *the singular* and *the plural*; *the singular*, when a single person or thing performs the action expressed by the Verb: as—*Je chante*, I sing; *tu marches*, thou walkest. The *plural*, when two or several persons concur to the same action: as—*Nous chantons*, we sing; *ils dorment*, they sleep.

In each Number there are three Persons: *the first, the second*, and *the third*; *the first* is the person who speaks; *the second*, the person spoken to; and *the third*, the person spoken of.

There are three Pronouns to represent those three Persons: *je*, I, for *the first* in the singular; *tu*, thou, for *the second*; *il* or *elle*, he [illegible] for *the third*; *nous*, we, for *the first* in the plural; *vous*, y[illegible] *second*; *ils* or *elles*, they, for *the third*.

In French as in English, though speaking to one per[illegible]

second person plural *vous*, you, is used for politeness sake instead of the second singular, *tu*, thou: thus we say: *Mademoiselle, vous écrivez fort bien*, and not *tu écris fort bien*, you write very well, Miss.

But when *vous* is used instead of *tu*, in a compound tense of a *Pronominal, Passive*, or *Neuter Verb*, of which the compound tenses are formed with *être*, or before any tense of the Verb *être*, with reference to an Adjective or a Participle following, the Participle or Adjective must not, in any case, take the sign of the plural, though *vous* be plural; as for instance: *Mademoiselle, vous êtes bien aimable*, and not *aimables*, Miss, you are very amiable.

Observe.—Though politeness requires *vous* to be used generally instead of *tu*, it is a constant practice for *parents* to use *tu* and not *vous* when speaking and writing to any of their children; for *brothers, sisters, friends*, a *man* and *his wife* to do the same, when speaking together or writing to each other. *Tu* is also used when a person is addressed in a contemptuous or passionate manner, &c. as—*Si tu ne sors pas je* . . . . if you don't go out I . . . . instead of: *si vous ne sortez pas*, which would not be so expressive.

In *requests* and *petitions* the third person must be used instead of the second, though the second is used in English: as for instance, if asking a favour, you must say—*Monsieur, me rendra un grand service si* . . . and not: *Monsieur, vous me rendrez*, &c. Sir, you will render me a great service if . . . . In fashionable families, servants also, when addressing their masters, or mistresses, or any other person of distinction, must employ the third person instead of the second, and say, for instance: *Monsieur, est-il servi? Mademoiselle, désire-t-elle du vin?* and not *Monsieur, êtes-vous servi? Mademoiselle, désirez-vous du vin?* as in English: *Sir, have you been served? Miss, do you choose any wine?* which would not be so correct.

ARTICLE III.

Of Moods.

Mood signifies manner. We call *Moods* the different manners of using a Verb, to express the different affections of our mind, or the various ways in which an action is performed or suffered.

A Verb may be used in five different ways: in an *indefinite, positive, conditional, imperative*, and *subordinate way*; which constitute five Moods, in Verbs, namely: *the Infinitive, the Indicative, the Conditional, the Imperative*, and *the Subjunctive*.

1. *The Infinitive.* This Mood is so called, because it expresses a thing or action in an indefinite manner, without any reference to numbers or persons: as—*Finir*, to finish; *commencer*, to begin; *recevoir*, to receive.

2. *The Indicative* affirms in a positive and absolute manner: as—*J'aime ma patrie*, I like my country; *je connais mon devoir*, I know my duty. It is called *Indicative*, because it always denotes affirmation in a simple and direct way, without depending on any other word, whatever may be the time to which the affirmation relates.

3. *The Conditional* denotes that a thing or an action either would take or would have taken place, depending on a condition; for instance: *La patrie serait heureuse, si chacun remplissait ses devoirs*, the country would be happy if every one did his duty.

4. *The Imperative* is used for *commanding, exhorting, entreating*, or

permitting: as—*Apprends à obéir pour commander aux autres,* learn to obey in order to command others.

5. *The Subjunctive* expresses affirmation in a subordinate manner, being generally dependant either on a Conjunction, or on another Verb followed by *que*: as—*En cas que je chantasse,* in case I should sing; *il faut que j'y aille,* I must go; *je désire que vous veniez;* I wish you may come.

Each of the above Moods has different tenses, except the Imperative, which has only one.

ARTICLE IV.

Of the Tenses.

Tense being the distinction of *time,* we call *tenses* the different forms which a verb assumes to express the *present, past, or future.*

Tenses may be divided into *simple* and *compound.* The *simple* are those which consist of a single Verb: as—*écrire,* to write; *j'écris,* I write. The *compound* consist of two, being formed with the different tenses of the Verb *avoir,* to have, or, *être,* to be, and a past participle: as—*J'ai vu M. C***,* I have seen Mr. C***; *j'aurais eu fini plutôt si....,* I should have finished sooner, if......

There are five tenses in the Infinitive Mood: *the present, the preterite, the present participle, the past participle,* and *the participle future.*

The Indicative has eight: *the present, the imperfect, the definite preterite, the indefinite preterite, the preterite anterior, the pluperfect, the future simple,* and *the future past.*

The Conditional has two: *the present* and *the past.*

The Imperative has only one, which is either *present* or *future.*

The Subjunctive has four: *the present, the imperfect, the preterite,* and *the pluperfect.*

Observations on the above Tenses.

1. *The present of the Infinitive.* This tense is used to specify, in an indeterminate manner, the Verb of which we wish to speak, as:—*Donner,* to give; *danser,* to dance; *finir,* to finish, &c. It denotes either a *present, past,* or *future,* according as the Verb or expression preceding or following expresses the *present, past,* or *future;* as for instance: —*Je l'entends rire,* I hear him laughing, for *the present; je l'ai entendu rire,* I heard him laughing, for *the past; je l'entendrai rire,* I shall hear him laughing, for *the future,* &c.

2. *The preterite of the Infinitive* is used to express a thing past, relatively to the tense of the Verb which precedes it: as—*Je croyais vous avoir entendu rire,* I thought I heard you laughing.

Note.—The Participles being explained at length in the Syntax will not be noticed in this place.

3. *The present of the Indicative* is used to represent an action, fact,

or event, as passing at the time in which it is mentioned: as—*Je chante*, I sing; *il vient*, he comes, or is coming.

4. *The Imperfect* is used in French to represent the actions, inclinations, or qualifications, the character, condition, or situation of persons and things at a determined and particular time, whether expressed or understood: as—when I was taking an airing yesterday I saw a very fine lady, whose features, complexion, and dress, united all the graces of Venus, and whose hair, flowing in wavy ringlets down her shoulders, was tied with a beautiful ribbon; *comme* je me promenais *hier, je vis une charmante dame, dont les traits, le teint, l'habit,* réunissaient *toutes les grâces de Venus, et dont les longs cheveux qui* descendaient *en boucles ondoyantes sur ses épaules* étaient *attachés avec un superbe ruban.*

The Imperfect is also used: 1st, in mentioning customs and manners, whether of private individuals or of nations: as—His father went every day to the play, *son père allait tous les jours à la comédie;* we played at cards every evening, *nous jouions aux cartes tous les soirs;* running, swimming, hunting, were the favourite diversions of the ancient Romans, whilst the women and the old men were entrusted with the domestic affairs, *la course, la nage, la chasse, étaient les amusemens favoris des anciens Romains, tandis que les femmes et les vieillards étaient chargés des soins du ménage.*

2. In describing the character of nations, whether ancient or modern, or of persons that are dead, though the Perfect Definite and sometimes the Indefinite are also used: as—Napoleon was a great general, *Napoléon était un grand général;* the Romans were very powerful, *les Romains étaient très-puissans.*

3. In giving the character of persons who are still living, although if a vague and undetermined period of time is expressed, the Imperfect, or Perfect Indefinite, may be indifferently used: as—This lady was very beautiful in her youth, *cette dame était très-belle dans sa jeunesse;* or, *a été très-belle.*

4. When the Present Participle of a Verb can be used with *was* or *were*, instead of the Perfect Definite: as—While they endeavoured to...., *that is to say:* while they were endeavouring, *tandis qu'ils tâchaient de,* &c.

5. To denote things which are always the same: as—She was always in such a hurry; *elle était toujours si pressée.*

6. *The Imperfect* is, likewise, used to express any circumstance which happened to take place at the same time that an accident, fact, event, or action, took place, in which case, the Verb denoting the fact, event, action, or accident, in the second part of the sentence, is put into the Definite Preterite; if it is question of a thing which happened in a time now quite elapsed; and in the Indefinite, if the time is not quite elapsed.—In such a case the Imperfect expresses a present with respect to something past: as—*Je passais quand vous tombâtes,* I was passing as you fell, for a time quite past; and *je passais quand vous êtes tombé,* I was passing when you fell, for a time not quite elapsed; to-day, for instance.

The sentence frequently begins by the fact, event, action, or accident, and finishes by the circumstance which took place at the same time: as—*Il tomba lorsque je passais,* he fell as I was passing.

If it be required to express two circumstances which happened to take place at the same time, they must be both put in the Imperfect: as—*Vous dansiez lorsque je chantais,* you were dancing when I was singing; *lorsque j'étais à la campagne, je me promenais tous les jours,* when I was in the country, I took a walk every day.

Finally.— *The Imperfect* is used sometimes after *si,* if, denoting condition or supposition: as—*Si je connaissais vos intentions, je les executerais,* if I knew your intentions, I would fulfil them; *il ne serait pas si misérable, s'il fesait plus d'attention à ses affaires,* he would not be so miserable if he paid more attention to his business.

5. *The Preterite:* this tense is used in historical narratives, and, also, to express real definite facts which happened in a time quite elapsed, and at the distance, at least, of a day from the time in which we speak: as—I saw him last year, *je le vis l'année dernière,* because last year is quite elapsed; but you could not say:—*Je le vis ce matin, cette semaine, ce mois, cette année,* as you say in English: *I*

saw him this morning, this week, this month, this year; because, when we say *this morning, week, month,* or *year,* the time in which we speak is not considered to be yet elapsed; then you must use the *Indefinite Preterite,* and say :—*Je l'ai vu ce matin, cette semaine, ce mois, cette année.*

6. *The Indefinite Preterite* is used when we speak of any thing that has happened in a time which is not yet over: as—*To-day, this morning, this week, this month,* &c. and also, *last night,* when rendered in French by *cette nuit:* as—I saw him this morning, *je l'ai vu ce matin;* I did not sleep last night, *je n'ai pas dormi cette nuit.*

It is also used in speaking of any action or thing done in an indefinite time, though quite elapsed: as—He has travelled much, *il a beaucoup voyagé;* I saw him once, *je l'ai vu une fois.*

Note.—*The Indefinite* or *Definite Preterite,* especially in familiar conversation, are promiscuously used in speaking of common events, such as the general occurrences in life, though the time may be specified, and quite past: for instance—I supped with him last night, *je soupai avec lui,* ou *j'ai soupé avec lui hier au soir.*

7. *The Preterite Anterior* is commonly used to express a thing past, and done before another equally past, for which reason it is called *anterior.* It may be divided into *anterior definite* and *anterior indefinite:* the *anterior definite* is used to express a thing past and performed before another equally past, in a time quite elapsed, as in this sentence :—When she had acknowledged her errors, she was ashamed of them, *quand elle eut reconnu ses erreurs elle en fut honteuse. The Anterior Indefinite* is used to express a thing past, done before another, in a time which is not yet quite elapsed: as—*Quand j'ai eu déjeûné ce matin, j'ai été à la bourse,* when I had breakfasted this morning, I went to the Exchange. This tense, whether *definite* or *indefinite,* is always accompanied by a Conjunction, or an Adverb of time, by which it may be distinguished from the Pluperfect.

8. *The Pluperfect* is used to represent a thing not only as past, but prior to another equally past, or, in other terms, to denote that a thing or action was already done when another, equally past, took place: as—*J'avais dansé quand vous vîntes,* I had danced when you came.

9. *The Future Simple* is used to express that a thing will take place in a time which is yet to come, whether determined or not: as—I shall set out for Paris in a month, *je partirai pour Paris dans un mois.* This future has the signification of an *Imperative* when it expresses a command or a prohibition made to any person: as—*Vous respecterez vos parens,* you shall respect your parents; *vous ne mentirez point,* you shall not tell a falsehood.

10. *The Future Anterior* or *Past* is used to express that, when or after an action, fact, event, or any thing has taken place, another will be done: as, for instance—When I have finished my business, I shall go and see you, *quand j'aurai fini mes affaires, j'irai vous voir.* This future is commonly preceded by one of the Conjunctions *dès que, aussitôt que,* as soon as; *après que, quand,* when; or similar ones—in which case, the Verb, which is generally in the present of the indicative in English, must always be put in *the future* in French.

The Future Past intimates also, that an action will be fully accomplished at or before the time of another future action or event: as—The two houses will have finished their business when the king comes to prorogue them, *les deux chambres*

auront fini leurs affaires, quand le roi viendra les proroger; in this case it is not preceded by the above Conjunctions.

11. *The Conditional Present.*—This tense denotes that a thing would take place, depending on a condition: as—We should taste a great many pleasures if we knew well how to employ our time, *nous goûterions bien des jouissances si nous savions faire un bon usage du tems.*

12. *The Conditional Past* denotes that a thing would have been done in a time past, if the condition on which it depended had taken place: as—I should have been to see you, had the weather been fine, *j'aurais été vous voir, s'il avait fait beau temps.*

13. *The Imperative* denotes the action of praying, commanding, exhorting, or entreating, and implies *a present* with respect to the action of commanding, praying, exhorting, &c. and *a future* with respect to the fulfilling of the thing ordered: as—*Venez ici,* come here.

The French sometimes use the first person plural of *the Imperative,* though referring to a subject singular, as, for instance: a man speaking to himself will say: *Secourons le,* let me help him; *oublions ses torts,* let me forget his wrongs. In such a case, if any Adjective or Participle, referring to the subject of the Verb, should follow, it is put in the singular: as—*Soyons sage,* let me be wise; *vivons caché, libre, et content,* let me live retired, free, and contented.

14. *The Present of the Subjunctive* expresses either a present or a future; but as, in either case, it does not differ by its termination as the tenses of the Indicative do, it is by the sense only that it can be distinguished; as for instance: *Votre cousin est très-modeste quoiqu'il soit très-instruit,* your cousin is very modest though he is very clever; in which sentence *soit* expresses a present; whilst in this:—*Je désire que vous alliez le voir,* I wish you to go and see him, *alliez* expresses a future.

15. *The Imperfect of the Subjunctive,* like the *Imperfect of the Indicative,* denotes that an action was present with relation to another: as—*Quoiqu'il la maltraitât souvent, elle était toujours gaie,* although he often used her ill, she was always gay. It may also express *a future,* as in this sentence: *Je souhaiterais que vous ne vinssiez que demain,* I should wish you to come to-morrow only, what the *Imperfect of the Indicative* cannot.

16. *The Preterite of the Subjunctive* is used to denote an action past, as in this example: They are delighted that you have become acquainted with them, *ils sont enchantés que vous ayez fait leur connaissance.* It may also express *a future anterior:* as—We shall not seal that letter before you have read it, *nous ne cacheterons pas cette lettre que vous ne l'ayez lue.*

17. *The Pluperfect of the Subjunctive* like *the Pluperfect of the Indicative* denotes that an action was past with reference to another equally past. It admits likewise of a future signification: Ex.—*Je ne croyais pas que vous eussiez sitôt fini,* I did not think that you would have done so soon; in which sentence, *vous eussiez fini* expresses a past; but in this: *Je voudrais que vous eussiez fini quand je reviendrai,* I should wish you to have done against my return, *eussiez fini* expresses a future past.

ARTICLE V.

Of Conjugations.

Having remarked that all the Verbs of the French language end in their *Infinitive Mood* in one of these four terminations, *er*, *ir*, *oir*, and *re:* as—*Chanter*, to sing; *finir*, to finish; *recevoir*, to receive; and *rendre*, to return; we have divided them into four classes, under the denominations of *Conjugations*, using the variations of the Verbs *chanter*, *finir*, *recevoir*, and *rendre*, as models of the *four Conjugations.*

But as there are a great many Verbs which, though ending in one of these four ways, *er*, *ir*, *oir*, and *re*, are not regular, that is to say, do not follow the same variations as—*chanter*, *finir*, *recevoir*, and *rendre*, through all their tenses and persons, we shall more particularly point out those which follow the four regular conjugations.

1. All Verbs ending in *the Infinitive Mood* in *er*, except *aller*, *s'en aller*, *envoyer*, and *renvoyer*, are conjugated like *chanter*.

2. All Verbs ending in the *Infinitive Mood* in *ir*, and of which *the Present Participle* terminates in *issant:* as—*Punir*, *punissant*, are conjugated like *finir*.

3. All Verbs, of which *the Infinitive* ends in *evoir*, and *the Present Participle* in *evant:* as—*Devoir*, *devant*, are conjugated like *recevoir.*

4. All Verbs, *the Infinitive* of which ends in *dre;* the *Present Participle* in *dant*, and the *Past Participle* in *du:* as—*Pendre*, *pendant*, *pendu*, are conjugated like *rendre*.

All the other Verbs are irregular, and will be found exemplified under the article of Irregular Verbs.

Observe.—Conjugating a Verb is to give it the different forms of the Verb which serves as a model to its conjugation; and to do this with greater facility, it must be particularly observed, that in a Verb there are *radical* and *final letters;* that is to say, letters which precede the termination, and letters which constitute the termination: as for instance, in the four above Verbs—*Chanter*, *finir*, *recevoir*, *rendre*, the *radical letters* are: *chant*, *fin*, *rec*, *ren;* and the final: *er*, *ir*, *evoir*, *dre*. The first, that is to say, the *radical*, never change throughout all the different tenses and persons of the Verb; whilst the *second*, namely, *the final*, do, according to the tense and person: therefore, whenever it is required to use a Verb according to one of the four Conjugations, separate the *radical letters* from those of the termination in the *Infinitive;* use then the *radical letters* which you have separated in lieu of the *radical letters* of the Conjugation to which the Verb belongs, putting the terminations of the different tenses after: as for instance, *Punir*, which is conjugated like *finir;* divide *pun* from the termination *ir*, and use *pun* wherever *fin* is used, throughout all the different parts of the Verb.

As to the irregular Verbs, they must all be learnt according to the order in which they are arranged, under their article.

ARTICLE VI.

Of the Auxiliary Verbs *Avoir* and *Etre.*

Although *avoir* and *être* be Irregular Verbs, our continual need of

them to form the compound tenses of other Verbs obliges us to place them before the four principal Conjugations.

§. 1.

COMPOUND TENSES FORMED WITH *AVOIR.*

The compound tenses of Verbs formed with *avoir* are :—1. Its own compound tenses, by the addition of its past participle *eu* to the end of its simple tenses: thus—*Avoir,* simple; *avoir eu,* compound: *j'ai,* simple; *j'ai eu,* compound, &c.

2. Those of *être,* by adding the *past participle* of *être,* which is *été,* to the end of its simple tenses: as—*Etre,* simple; *avoir été,* compound; *je suis,* simple; *j'ai été,* compound, &c.

3. Those of *active Verbs,* by adding their *past participle* to the end of its simple tenses: thus—*Aimer,* simple; *avoir aimé,* compound; *j'aime,* simple; *j'ai aimé,* compound, &c.

4. Those of all *neuter Verbs,* of which the participle is indeclinable, and which are formed equally by the addition of their past participle to its simple tenses: as—*Je dors,* simple; *j'ai dormi,* compound; *je marche,* simple; *j'ai marché,* compound, &c.

5. Those of a great many *unipersonal Verbs,* by adding also their *past participle* to its simple tenses: as—*Falloir,* simple; *avoir fallu,* compound; *il faut,* simple; *il a fallu,* compound.

§. 2.

COMPOUND TENSES FORMED WITH *ETRE.*

The compound tenses of Verbs formed with the auxiliary *être* are: —1. The compound tenses of all *neuter Verbs,* of which the past participle is declinable: as—*Etre parti, je suis parti;* from *partir: être arrivé, je suis arrivé, elle est arrivée;* from *arriver.*

2. The compound tenses of *pronominal Verbs,* though formed with the tenses of *to have* in English: as—*Je me suis promené,* I have been walking; *elle s'est mariée,* she has married.

3. All *passive Verbs,* by the addition of the past participle of an active Verb to its simple tenses: as—*Etre aimé,* to be loved; *il est aimé,* he is loved; from the Verb *aimer.*

It may not be superfluous here to add, that *avoir* and its different tenses are also used to form the compound tenses of the following Verbs: *Accoucher, embellir, demeurer, sortir, grandir, passer, changer, échouer,* and some others, when they denote an action, whilst *être* must be used when those Verbs express the passive state or being of any person or thing: thus, for instance, we say: *Madame a accouché à neuf heures ce matin,* to express the action of *accoucher;* and, *madame est accouchée,* to denote that she is lying in: *comme elle a embelli,* to express the action of embellishing; and, *comme elle est embellie,* denoting her present state of embellishment: *il a demeuré à Londres,* to express that he has lived in London; and, *il est demeuré à Londres,* implying that he has stopped in London: *il a sorti ce matin,* to say that he has been out this morning, and is returned; and *il est sorti,* implying that he is gone out: *il a bien grandi,* signifying the action of growing; and, *il est bien grandi,* to express the state of growth in which he is: *il a passé par ici,* to express the action of passing; and, *il est passé,* if you wish to say that he is gone: *cet homme a changé de sentiment,* to express that he has altered his mind; and, *cette femme est bien changée,* to denote the state of alteration in which she is now: *le vaisseau a échoué,* signifying the ac-

tion of running aground: and, *le vaisseau est échoué*, if you wish to express the state of a ship after having run aground: &c. We also say, in speaking of any thing which one has forgotten to mention: *ce que j'avais à vous dire m'a échappé;* and of a thing done or said without thinking, *il lui est échappé un mot.*

The thirteen following Verbs, though expressing an action, and conjugated with *to have* in their compound tenses in English, require *être* in French—*Aller*, to go; *arriver*, to arrive; *décéder*, *mourir*, to die; *naître*, to be born; *tomber*, *choir*, to fall; *venir*, to come; *devenir*, to become; *disconvenir*, to disagree; *intervenir*, to intervene; *parvenir*, to attain; *revenir*, to return; *survenir*, to happen; *éclore*, to hatch.

Observe.—The Verbs *avoir* and *être* are only auxiliaries when they are used to form the compound tenses of other Verbs; in any other case, *avoir* is an Adjective Verb, as *chanter*, to sing, implying the signification of possessing; and *être* sometimes Adjective and sometimes Substantive, as it has been previously explained.

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB *Avoir*, to have, AFFIRMATIVELY.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.

PRESENT.

To have,
Avoir.

PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

Having,
Ayant.†

PAST PARTICIPLE.

Had,
Eu, eue.

COMPOUND TENSES.

PRETERITE.

To have had,
Avoir eu.

PARTICIPLE PRESENT COMPOUND.

Having had,
Ayant eu.

PARTICIPLE FUTURE.

Being to have,
Devant avoir.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

I have,
J'ai.‡

Thou hast,
Tu as.§

PRETERITE INDEFINITE.

I have had,
J'ai eu.

Thou hast had,
Tu as eu.

---

† Though we write *ayant* we pronounce *ai-iant;* the same is to be observed in all words in which *y* is used instead of two *i's.*

‡ We write *j'ai* and pronounce *jé.*

§ GENERAL RULE.—The second person singular in all Verbs is always terminated by an *s* in every tense, except, however, in the Verbs *vouloir*, *pouvoir*, *valoir*, *prévaloir*, of which the first and second persons singular of the present of the Indicative take an *x* at their termination: as, for instance—*Vouloir*, *je veux*, *tu veux;* *pouvoir*, *je peux;* or, better, *je puis*, *tu peux;* *valoir*, *je vaux*, *tu vaux;* *prévaloir*, *je prévaux*, *tu prévaux.*

He has,
Il a.

She has,
Elle a.

We have,
Nous avons.

You have,
Vous avez.†

They have,
Ils *or* Elles ont.

He has had,
Il a eu.

She has had,
Elle a eu.

We have had,
Nous avons eu.

You have had,
Vous avez eu.

They have had,
Ils *or* Elles ont eu.

IMPERFECT.

I had,
J'avais.‡

Thou hadst,
Tu avais.

He had,
Il avait.

She had,
Elle avait.

We had,
Nous avions.

You had,
Vous aviez.

They had,
Ils *or* Elles avaient.

PLUPERFECT.

I had had,
J'avais eu.

Thou hadst had,
Tu avais eu.

He had had,
Il avait eu.

She had had,
Elle avait eu.

We had had,
Nous avions eu.

You had had,
Vous aviez eu.

They had had,
Ils *or* Elles avaient eu.

PRETERITE.

I had,
J'eus.§

Thou hadst,
Tu eus.

He had,
Il eut.

She had,
Elle eut.

We had,
Nous eûmes.‖

You had,
Vous eûtes.

They had,
Ils *or* Elles eurent.

PRETERITE ANTERIOR.

I had had,
J'eus eu.

Thou hadst had,
Tu eus eu.

He had had,
Il eut eu.

She had had,
Elle eut eu.

We had had,
Nous eûmes eu.

You had had,
Vous eûtes eu.

They had had,
Ils *or* Elles eurent eu.

† General Rule.—The second person plural in all Verbs is always terminated with an *s* or a *z*; it is terminated with *z* when the *e* which immediately precedes is pronounced with the sound of *a* in the English alphabet, and with *s* when it is not pronounced at all: as—*vous avez, vous aimez, vous eûtes, vous aimâtes, vous reçûtes,* &c.

‡ *J'avais* is pronounced *j'avès.*

§ *J'eus* is pronounced *j'u.*

‖ A circumflex accent (ˆ) is always placed over the last vowel of the last syllable but one in *the first* and *second persons plural* of the Preterite of the Indicative in all Verbs.

FUTURE SIMPLE.

I shall or *will have,*
J'aurai.

Thou shalt or *wilt have,*
Tu auras.

He shall or *will have,*
Il aura.

She shall or *will have,*
Elle aura.

We shall or *will have,*
Nous aurons.

You shall or *will have,*
Vous aurez.

They shall or *will have,*
Ils *or* Elles auront.

FUTURE PAST.

I shall or *will have had,*
J'aurai eu.

Thou shalt or *wilt have had,*
Tu auras eu.

He shall or *will have had,*
Il aura eu.

She shall or *will have had,*
Elle aura eu.

We shall or *will have had,*
Nous aurons eu.

You shall or *will have had,*
Vous aurez eu.

They shall or *will have had,*
Ils *or* Elles auront eu.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

I would or *should have,*
J'aurais.

Thou would'st or *should'st have,*
Tu aurais.

He would or *should have,*
Il aurait.

She would or *should have,*
Elle aurait.

We would or *should have,*
Nous aurions.

You would or *should have,*
Vous auriez.

They would or *should have,*
Ils *or* Elles auraient.

PAST.

I would or *should have had,*
J'aurais, *or* J'eusse eu.

Thou would'st or *should'st have had,*
Tu aurais, *or* Tu eusses eu.

He would or *should have had,*
Il aurait, *or* Il eût eu.†

She would or *should have had,*
Elle aurait, *or* Elle eût eu.

We would or *should have had,*
Nous aurions, *or* Nous eussions eu.

You would or *should have had,*
Vous auriez, *or* Vous eussiez eu.

They would or *should have had,*
Ils *or* Elles auraient, *or* Ils *or* Elles eussent eu.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT OR FUTURE.

No first person in the singular.

Have thou, Aie.
Let him have, Qu'il ait.
Let her have, Qu'elle ait.
Let us have, Ayons.
Have ye, Ayez.
Let them have, Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles aient.

† A circumflex accent (^) is always required over the *u* which precedes the *t* in the third person singular of the Conditional Past, as above.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

That I may have,
Que j'aie.
That thou mayst have,
Que tu aies.
That he may have,
Qu'il ait,†
That she may have,
Qu'elle ait.
That we may have,
Que nous ayons.
That you may have,
Que vous ayez.
That they may have,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles aient.

PRETERITE.

That I may have had,
Que j'aie eu.
That thou mayst have had,
Que tu aies eu.
That he may have had,
Qu'il ait eu.
That she may have had,
Qu'elle ait eu.
That we may have had,
Que nous ayons eu.
That you may have had,
Que vous ayez eu.
That they may have had,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles aient eu.

IMPERFECT.

That I might have,
Que j'eusse.
That thou mightest have,
Que tu eusses.
That he might have,
Qu'il eût.‡
That she might have,
Qu'elle eût.
That we might have,
Que nous eussions.
That you might have,
Que vous eussiez.
That they might have,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles eussent.

PLUPERFECT.

That I might have had,
Que j'eusse eu.
That thou mightest have had,
Que tu eusses eu.
That he might have had,
Qu'il eût eu.
That she might have had,
Qu'elle eût eu.
That we might have had,
Que nous eussions eu.
That you might have had,
Que vous eussiez eu.
That they might have had,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles eussent eu.

---

† We say and write *qu'il ait* and never *qu'il aie.* It is an exception to the general rule which requires in all Verbs, regular or irregular, the third person singular of the Imperative and Present of the Subjunctive to be terminated with an *e* mute.

‡ A circumflex accent (^) is always placed over the last vowel which comes before the *t* final, in the *third person singular* of the Preterite of the Subjunctive in all Verbs.

Conjugation of *Avoir*, to have, negatively.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Simple Tenses.

PRESENT.

Not to have,
Ne pas avoir.

PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

Not having,
N'ayant pas.

PARTICIPLE PAST.

Had,
Eu, eue.

Compound Tenses.

PRETERITE.

Not to have had,
N'avoir pas eu.

PARTICIPLE PRESENT COMPOUND.

Not having had,
N'ayant pas eu.

PARTICIPLE FUTURE.

Not being to have,
Ne devant pas avoir.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

I have not,
Je n'ai pas.
Thou hast not,
Tu n'as pas.
He has not,
Il n'a pas.
She has not,
Elle n'a pas.
We have not,
Nous n'avons pas.
You have not,
Vous n'avez pas.
They have not,
Ils n'ont pas *or* Elles n'ont pas.

IMPERFECT.

I had not,
Je n'avais pas.
Thou hadst not,
Tu n'avais pas.
He had not,
Il n'avait pas.
She had not,
Elle n'avait pas.
We had not,
Nous n'avions pas.

PRETERITE INDEFINITE.

I have not had,
Je n'ai pas eu.
Thou hast not had,
Tu n'as pas eu.
He has not had,
Il n'a pas eu.
She has not had,
Elle n'a pas eu.
We have not had,
Nous n'avons pas eu.
You have not had,
Vous n'avez pas eu.
They have not had,
Ils n'ont pas eu *or* Elles n'ont pas eu.

PLUPERFECT.

I had not had,
Je n'avais pas eu.
Thou hadst not had,
Tu n'avais pas eu.
He had not had,
Il n'avait pas eu.
She had not had,
Elle n'avait pas eu.
We had not had,
Nous n'avions pas eu.

You had not,
Vous n'aviez pas.

They had not,
Ils n'avaient pas *or* Elles n'avaient pas.

You had not had,
Vous n'aviez pas eu.

They had not had,
Ils n'avaient pas eu *or* Elles n'avaient pas eu.

PRETERITE.

I had not,
Je n'eus pas.

Thou had'st not,
Tu n'eus pas.

He had not,
Il n'eut pas.

She had not,
Elle n'eut pas.

We had not,
Nous n'eûmes pas.

You had not,
Vous n'eûtes pas.

They had not,
Ils n'eurent pas *or* Elles n'eurent pas.

PRETERITE ANTERIOR.

I had not had,
Je n'eus pas eu.

Thou had'st not had,
Tu n'eus pas eu.

He had not had,
Il n'eut pas eu.

She had not had,
Elle n'eut pas eu.

We had not had,
Nous n'eûmes pas eu.

You had not had,
Vous n'eûtes pas eu.

They had not had,
Ils n'eurent pas eu *or* Elles n'eurent pas eu.

FUTURE SIMPLE.

I shall or *will not have,*
Je n'aurai pas.

Thou shalt or *wilt not have,*
Tu n'auras pas.

He shall or *will not have,*
Il n'aura pas.

She shall or *will not have,*
Elle n'aura pas.

We shall or *will not have,*
Nous n'aurons pas.

You shall or *will not have,*
Vous n'aurez pas.

They shall or *will not have,*
Ils n'auront pas *or* Elles n'auront pas.

FUTURE PAST.

I shall or *will not have had,*
Je n'aurai pas eu.

Thou shalt or *wilt not have had,*
Tu n'auras pas eu.

He shall or *will not have had,*
Il n'aura pas eu.

She shall or *will not have had,*
Elle n'aura pas eu.

We shall or *will not have had,*
Nous n'aurons pas eu.

You shall or *will not have had,*
Vous n'aurez pas eu.

They shall or *will not have had,*
Ils n'auront pas eu *or* Elles n'auront pas eu.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

I should or *would not have,*
Je n'aurais pas.

Thou should'st or *would'st not have,*
Tu n'aurais pas.

He should or *would not have,*
Il n'aurait pas.

PAST.

I should or *would not have had,*
Je n'aurais pas eu.

Thou should'st or *would'st not have had,*
Tu n'aurais pas eu.

He should or *would not have had,*
Il n'aurait pas eu.

She should or *would not have,*
Elle n'aurait pas.

We should or *would not have,*
Nous n'aurions pas.

You should or *would not have,*
Vous n'auriez pas.

They should or *would not have,*
Ils n'auraient pas *or* Elles n'auraient pas.

She should or *would not have had,*
Elle n'aurait pas eu.

We should or *would not have had,*
Nous n'aurions pas eu.

You should or *would not have had,*
Vous n'auriez pas eu.

They should or *would not have had,*
Ils n'auraient pas eu *or* Elles n'auraient pas eu.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT OR FUTURE.

Do thou not have,	N'aie pas.
Let him not have,	Qu'il n'ait pas.
Let her not have,	Qu'elle n'ait pas.
Let us not have,	N'ayons pas.
Do ye or *you not have,*	N'ayez pas.
Let them not have,	Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles n'aient pas.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

That I may not have,
Que je n'aie pas.

That thou may'st not have,
Que tu n'aies pas.

That he may not have,
Qu'il n'ait pas.

That she may not have,
Qu'elle n'ait pas.

That we may not have,
Que nous n'ayons pas.

That you may not have,
Que vous n'ayez pas.

That they may not have,
Qu'ils n'aient pas *or* Qu'elles n'aient pas.

PRETERITE.

That I may not have had,
Que je n'aie pas eu.

That thou may'st not have had,
Que tu n'aies pas eu.

That he may not have had,
Qu'il n'ait pas eu.

That she may not have had,
Qu'elle n'ait pas eu.

That we may not have had,
Que nous n'ayons pas eu.

That you may not have had,
Que vous n'ayez pas eu.

That they may not have had,
Qu'ils n'aient pas eu *or* Qu'elles n'aient pas eu.

IMPERFECT.

That I might not have,
Que je n'eusse pas.

That thou might'st not have,
Que tu n'eusses pas.

That he might not have,
Qu'il n'eût pas.

That she might not have,
Qu'elle n'eût pas.

PLUPERFECT.

That I might not have had,
Que je n'eusse pas eu.

That thou might'st not have had,
Que tu n'eusses pas eu.

That he might not have had,
Qu'il n'eût pas eu.

That she might not have had,
Qu'elle n'eût pas eu.

That we might not have,
Que nous n'eussions pas.

That you might not have,
Que vous n'eussiez pas.

That they might not have,
Qu'ils n'eussent pas *or* Qu'elles n'eussent pas.

That we might not have had,
Que nous n'eussions pas eu.

That you might not have had,
Que vous n'eussiez pas eu.

That they might not have had,
Qu'ils n'eussent pas eu *or* Qu'elles n'eussent pas eu.

CONJUGATION OF *Avoir*, to have, INTERROGATIVELY.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.

PRESENT.

Have I,
Ai-je?

Hast thou,
As-tu?

Has he,
A-t-il?

Has she,
A-t-elle?

Have we,
Avons-nous?

Have you,
Avez-vous?

Have they,
Ont-ils *or* Ont-elles?

IMPERFECT.

Had I,
Avais-je?

Had'st thou,
Avais-tu?

Had he,
Avait-il?

Had she,
Avait-elle?

Had we,
Avions-nous?

Had you,
Aviez-vous?

Had they,
Avaient-ils *or* Avaient-elles?

COMPOUND TENSES.

PRETERITE INDEFINITE.

Have I had,
Ai-je eu?

Hast thou had,
As-tu eu?

Has he had,
A-t-il eu?

Has she had,
A-t-elle eu?

Have we had,
Avons-nous eu?

Have you had,
Avez-vous eu?

Have they had,
Ont-ils eu *or* Ont-elles eu?

PLUPERFECT.

Had I had,
Avais-je eu?

Had'st thou had,
Avais-tu eu?

Had he had,
Avait-il eu?

Had she had,
Avait-elle eu?

Had we had,
Avions-nous eu?

Had you had,
Aviez-vous eu?

Had they had,
Avaient-ils eu *or* Avaient-elles eu?

PRETERITE.

Had I,
Eus-je ?

Had'st thou,
Eus-tu ?

Had he,
Eut-il ?

Had she,
Eut-elle ?

Had we,
Eûmes-nous ?

Had you,
Eûtes-vous ?

Had they,
Eurent-ils *or* Eurent-elles ?

PRETERITE ANTERIOR.

Had I had,
Eus-je eu ?

Had'st thou had,
Eus-tu eu ?

Had he had,
Eut-il eu ?

Had she had,
Eut-elle eu ?

Had we had,
Eûmes-nous eu ?

Had you had,
Eûtes-vous eu ?

Had they had,
Eurent-ils eu *or* Eurent-elles eu ?

FUTURE SIMPLE.

Shall or *will I have,*
Aurai-je ?

Shalt or *wilt thou have,*
Auras-tu ?

Shall or *will he have,*
Aura-t-il ?

Shall or *will she have,*
Aura-t-elle ?

Shall or *will we have,*
Aurons-nous ?

Shall or *will you have,*
Aurez-vous ?

Shall or *will they have,*
Auront-ils *or* Auront-elles ?

FUTURE PAST.

Shall or *will I have had,*
Aurai-je eu ?

Shalt or *wilt thou have had,*
Auras-tu eu ?

Shall or *will he have had,*
Aura-t-il eu ?

Shall or *will she have had,*
Aura-t-elle eu ?

Shall or *will we have had,*
Aurons-nous eu ?

Shall or *will you have had,*
Aurez-vous eu ?

Shall or *will they have had,*
Auront-ils eu *or* Auront-elles eu ?

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

Should or *would I have,*
Aurais-je ?

Should'st or *would'st thou have,*
Aurais-tu ?

Should or *would he have,*
Aurait-il ?

Should or *would she have,*
Aurait-elle ?

Should or *would we have,*
Aurions-nous ?

Should or *would you have,*
Auriez-vous ?

PAST.

Should or *would I have had,*
Aurais-je eu ?

Should'st or *would'st thou have had,*
Aurais-tu eu ?

Should or *would he have had.*
Aurait-il eu ?

Should or *would she have had,*
Aurait-elle eu ?

Should or *would we have had,*
Aurions-nous eu ?

Should or *would you have had,*
Auriez-vous eu ?

Should or *would they have,*
Auraient-ils *or* Auraient-elles ?

Should or *would they have had,*
Auraient-ils eu *or* Auraient-elles eu ?

Conjugation of *Avoir*, to have, interrogatively and negatively.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Simple Tenses.

PRESENT.

Have I not,
N'ai-je pas ?

Hast thou not,
N'as-tu pas ?

Has he not,
N'a-t-il pas ?

Has she not,
N'a-t-elle pas ?

Have we not,
N'avons-nous pas ?

Have you not,
N'avez-vous pas ?

Have they not,
N'ont-ils pas *or* N'ont-elles pas?

IMPERFECT.

Had I not,
N'avais-je pas?

Had'st thou not,
N'avais-tu pas ?

Had he not,
N'avait-il pas ?

Had she not,
N'avait-elle pas ?

Had we not,
N'avions-nous pas ?

Had you not,
N'aviez-vous pas ?

Had they not,
N'avaient-ils pas *or* N'avaient-elles pas ?

Compound Tenses.

PRETERITE INDEFINITE.

Have I not had,
N'ai-je pas eu ?

Hast thou not had,
N'as-tu pas eu ?

Has he not had,
N'a-t-il pas eu ?

Has she not had,
N'a-t-elle pas eu ?

Have we not had,
N'avons-nous pas eu ?

Have you not had,
N'avez-vous pas eu ?

Have they not had,
N'ont-ils pas eu *or* N'ont-elles pas eu ?

PLUPERFECT.

Had I not had,
N'avais-je pas eu ?

Had'st thou not had,
N'avais-tu pas eu ?

Had he not had,
N'avait-il pas eu?

Had she not had,
N'avait-elle pas eu ?

Had we not had,
N'avions-nous pas eu ?

Had you not had,
N'aviez-vous pas eu ?

Had they not had,
N'avaient-ils pas eu *or* N'avaient-elles pas eu ?

PRETERITE.

Had I not,
N'eus-je pas?
Had'st thou not,
N'eus-tu pas?
Had he not,
N'eut-il pas?
Had she not,
N'eut-elle pas?
Had we not,
N'eûmes-nous pas?
Had you not,
N'eûtes-vous pas?
Had they not,
N'eurent-ils pas *or* N'eurent-elles pas?

PRETERITE ANTERIOR.

Had I not had,
N'eus-je pas eu?
Had'st thou not had,
N'eus-tu pas eu?
Had he not had,
N'eut-il pas eu?
Had she not had,
N'eut-elle pas eu?
Had we not had,
N'eûmes-nous pas eu?
Had you not had,
N'eûtes-vous pas eu?
Had they not had,
N'eurent-ils pas eu *or* N'eurent-elles pas eu?

FUTURE SIMPLE.

Shall or *will I not have,*
N'aurai-je pas?
Shalt or *wilt thou not have,*
N'auras-tu pas?
Shall or *will he not have,*
N'aura-t-il pas?
Shall or *will she not have,*
N'aura-t-elle pas?
Shall or *will we not have,*
N'aurons-nous pas?
Shall or *will you not have,*
N'aurez-vous pas?
Shall or *will they not have,*
N'auront-ils pas *or* N'auront-elles pas?

FUTURE PAST.

Shall or *will I not have had,*
N'aurai-je pas eu?
Shalt or *wilt thou not have had,*
N'auras-tu pas eu?
Shall or *will he not have had,*
N'aura-t-il pas eu?
Shall or *will she not have had,*
N'aura-t-elle pas eu?
Shall or *will we not have had,*
N'aurons-nous pas eu?
Shall or *will you not have had,*
N'aurez-vous pas eu?
Shall or *will they not have had,*
N'auront-ils pas eu *or* N'auront-elles pas eu?

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

Should or *would I not have,*
N'aurais-je pas?
Should'st or *would'st thou not have,*
N'aurais-tu pas?
Should or *would he not have,*
N'aurait-il pas?
Should or *would she not have,*
N'aurait-elle pas?
Should or *would we not have,*
N'aurions-nous pas?
Should or *would you not have,*
N'auriez-vous pas?

PAST.

Should or *would I not have had,*
N'aurais-je pas eu?
Should'st or *would'st thou not have had,*
N'aurais-tu pas eu?
Should or *would he not have had,*
N'aurait-il pas eu?
Should or *would she not have had,*
N'aurait-elle pas eu?
Should or *would we not have had,*
N'aurions-nous pas eu?
Should or *would you not have had,*
N'auriez-vous pas eu?

Should or *would they not have,*
N'auraient-ils pas *or* N'auraient-elles pas?

Should or *would they not have had,*
N'auraient-ils pas eu *or* N'auraient-elles pas eu?

Observation.—When the pupil has learnt and written *Avoir* in the four different ways, as exemplified above, he must recapitulate it as follows, using indiscriminately the different tenses, one *in the affirmative*, one *in the negative*, one *in the interrogative*, and one *in the interrogative and negative*, for the sake of practice; thus introducing the four ways in which it can be used, although going through it only once. This recapitulation will serve as a model for learning all the other Verbs, as it would take up too much time to learn and write each of them separately, these four different ways, at full length. Besides, from the knowledge of *Avoir*, as above exemplified, any one must be sufficiently acquainted with the different manners of using a Verb, to be able (when having learnt any other Verb according to the following recapitulation) to repeat any tense of it, either *affirmatively*, *negatively*, *interrogatively*, or *interrogatively* and *negatively*, if desired; as the same method, which has been adopted, is employed for the conjugation of any other Verb.

Recapitulation of the Verb *Avoir*, to have,

In which the four different manners of using a Verb are introduced, although the Verb is written only once.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

Affir. *To have,*
Avoir.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

Neg. *Not having,*
N'ayant pas.

PAST PARTICIPLE.

Had,
Eu, eue.

PRETERITE.

To have had,
Avoir eu.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE, COMPOUND.

Not having had,
N'ayant pas eu.

PARTICIPLE FUTURE.

Being to have,
Devant avoir.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

Affir. *I have,*
J'ai.

Thou hast,
Tu as.

He has,
Il a.

She has,
Elle a.

We have,
Nous avons.

You have,
Vous avez.

They have,
Ils ont *or* Elles ont.

PRETERITE INDEFINITE.

I have had,
J'ai eu.

Thou hast had,
Tu as eu.

He has had,
Il a eu.

She has had,
Elle a eu.

We have had,
Nous avons eu.

You have had,
Vous avez eu.

They have had,
Ils ont eu *or* Elles ont eu.

IMPERFECT.

Neg. *I had not,*
Je n'avais pas.
Thou had'st not,
Tu n'avais pas.
He had not,
Il n'avait pas.
She had not,
Elle n'avait pas.
We had not,
Nous n'avions pas.
You had not,
Vous n'aviez pas.
They had not,
Ils n'avaient pas *or* Elles n'avaient pas.

PRETERITE.

Int. *Had I,*
Eus-je ?
Had'st thou,
Eus-tu ?
Had he,
Eut-il ?
Had she,
Eut-elle ?
Had we,
Eûmes-nous ?
Had you,
Eûtes-vous ?
Had they,
Eurent-ils *or* Eurent-elles ?

FUTURE SIMPLE.

Int. and Neg.
Shall or *will I not have,*
N'aurai-je pas ?
Shalt or *wilt thou not have,*
N'auras-tu pas ?
Shall or *will he not have,*
N'aura-t-il pas ?
Shall or *will she not have,*
N'aura-t-elle pas ?
Shall or *will we not have,*
N'aurons-nous pas ?
Shall or *will you not have,*
N'aurez-vous pas ?
Shall or *will they not have,*
N'auront-ils pas *or* N'auront-elles pas ?

PLUPERFECT.

I had not had,
Je n'avais pas eu.
Thou had'st not had,
Tu n'avais pas eu.
He had not had,
Il n'avait pas eu.
She had not had,
Elle n'avait pas eu.
We had not had,
Nous n'avions pas eu.
You had not had,
Vous n'aviez pas eu.
They had not had,
Ils n'avaient pas eu *or* Elles n'avaient pas eu.

PRETERITE ANTERIOR.

Had I had,
Eus-je eu ?
Had'st thou had,
Eus-tu eu ?
Had he had,
Eut-il eu ?
Had she had,
Eut-elle eu ?
Had we had,
Eûmes-nous eu ?
Had you had,
Eûtes-vous eu ?
Had they had,
Eurent-ils eu *or* Eurent-elles eu?

FUTURE PAST.

Shall or *will I not have had,*
N'aurai-je pas eu ?
Shalt or *wilt thou not have had,*
N'auras-tu pas eu ?
Shall or *will he not have had,*
N'aura-t-il pas eu ?
Shall or *will she not have had,*
N'aura-t-elle pas eu ?
Shall or *will we not have had,*
N'aurons-nous pas eu ?
Shall or *will you not have had,*
N'aurez-vous pas eu ?
Shall or *will they not have had,*
N'auront-ils pas eu *or* N'auront-elles pas eu ?

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

Affir. *I would* or *should have,*
J'aurais.

Thou would'st or *should'st have,*
Tu aurais.

He would or *should have,*
Il aurait.

She would or *should have,*
Elle aurait.

We would or *should have,*
Nous aurions.

You would or *should have,*
Vous auriez.

They would or *should have,*
Ils *or* Elles auraient.

PAST.

I would or *should have had,*
J'aurais *or* J'eusse eu.

Thou would'st or *should'st have had,*
Tu aurais *or* Tu eusses eu.

He would or *should have had,*
Il aurait *or* Il eût eu.

She would or *should have had,*
Elle aurait *or* Elle eût eu.

We would or *should have had,*
Nous aurions *or* Nous eussions eu.

You would or *should have had,*
Vous auriez *or* Vous eussiez eu.

They would or *should have had,*
Ils *or* Elles auraient *or* Ils *or* Elles eussent eu.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PREENT OR FUTURE.

Neg.	*Have thou not,*	N'aie pas.
	Let him not have,	Qu'il n'ait pas.
	Let her not have,	Qu'elle n'ait pas.
	Let us not have,	N'ayons pas.
	Do ye or *you not have,*	N'ayez pas.
	Let them not have,	Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles n'aient pas.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

Affir. *That I may have,*
Que j'aie.

That thou mays't have,
Que tu aies.

That he may have,
Qu'il ait.

That she may have,
Qu'elle ait.

That we may have,
Que nous ayons.

That you may have,
Que vous ayez.

That they may have,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles aient.

PRETERITE.

That I may have had,
Que j'aie eu.

That thou may'st have had,
Que tu aies eu.

That he may have had,
Qu'il ait eu.

That she may have had,
Qu'elle ait eu.

That we may have had,
Que nous ayons eu.

That you may have had,
Que vous ayez eu.

That they may have had,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles aient eu.

IMPERFECT.

Neg. *That I might not have,*
Que je n'eusse pas.

That thou mightest not have,
Que tu n'eusses pas.

That he might not have,
Qu'il n'eût pas.

That she might not have,
Qu'elle n'eût pas.

That we might not have,
Que nous n'eussions pas.

That you might not have,
Que vous n'eussiez pas.

That they might not have,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles n'eussent pas.

PLUPERFECT.

That I might not have had,
Que je n'eusse pas eu.

That thou mightest not have had,
Que tu n'eusses pas eu.

That he might not have had,
Qu'il n'eût pas eu.

That she might not have had,
Qu'elle n'eût pas eu.

That we might not have had,
Que nous n'eussions pas eu.

That you might not have had,
Que vous n'eussiez pas eu.

That they might not have had,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles n'eussent pas eu.

NOTE.—Although the following Verbs are all written in the affirmative, the pupil must practise them in the four different ways, the better to enable him to use them any way when required.

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB *Etre*, to be.

SIMPLE TENSES.

PRESENT.

To be,
Etre.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

Being,
Etant.

PAST PARTICIPLE.

Been,
Eté.†

COMPOUND TENSES.

PRETERITE.

To have been,
Avoir été.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE COMPOUND.

Having been,
Ayant été.

PARTICIPLE FUTURE.

Being to be,
Devant être.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

I am,
Je suis.

Thou art,
Tu es.

He is,
Il est.

PRETERITE INDEFINITE.

I have been,
J'ai été.

Thou hast been,
Tu as été.

He has been,
Il a été.

---

† The Past Participle *été* never changes its termination either in the masculine or feminine, singular or plural.

She is,
Elle est.

We are,
Nous sommes.

You are,
Vous êtes.

They are,
Ils *or* Elles sont.

IMPERFECT.

I was,
J'étais.

Thou wast,
Tu étais.

He was,
Il était.

She was,
Elle était.

We were,
Nous étions.

You were,
Vous étiez.

They were,
Ils *or* Elles étaient.

PRETERITE.

I was,
Je fus.

Thou wast,
Tu fus.

He was,
Il fut.

She was,
Elle fut.

We were,
Nous fûmes.

You were,
Vous fûtes.

They were,
Ils *or* Elles furent.

FUTURE SIMPLE.

I shall or *will be,*
Je serai.

Thou shalt or *wilt be,*
Tu seras.

He shall or *will be,*
Il sera.

She shall or *will be,*
Elle sera.

She has been,
Elle a été.

We have been,
Nous avons été.

You have been,
Vous avez été.

They have been,
Ils *or* Elles ont été.

PLUPERFECT.

I had been,
J'avais été.

Thou had'st been,
Tu avais été.

He had been,
Il avait été.

She had been,
Elle avait été.

We had been,
Nous avions été

You had been,
Vous aviez été.

They had been,
Ils *or* Elles avaient été.

PRETERITE ANTERIOR.

I had been,
J'eus été

Thou had'st been,
Tu eus été.

He had been,
Il eut été.

She had been,
Elle eut été.

We had been,
Nous eûmes été.

You had been,
Vous eûtes été.

They had been,
Ils *or* Elles eurent été.

FUTURE PAST.

I shall or *will have been,*
J'aurai été.

Thou shalt or *wilt have been,*
Tu auras été.

He shall or *will have been,*
Il aura été.

She shall or *will have been,*
Elle aura été.

We shall or *will be,*
Nous serons.
You shall or *will be,*
Vous serez.
They shall or *will be,*
Ils *or* Elles seront.

We shall or *will have been,*
Nous aurons été.
You shall or *will have been,*
Vous aurez été.
They shall or *will have been,*
Ils *or* Elles auront été.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

I would or *should be,*
Je serais.
Thou would'st or *should'st be,*
Tu serais.
He would or *should be,*
Il serait.
She would or *should be,*
Elle serait.
We would or *should be,*
Nous serions.
You would or *should be,*
Vous seriez.
They would or *should be,*
Ils *or* Elles seraient.

PAST.

I would or *should have been,*
J'aurais *or* J'eusse été.
Thou would'st or *should'st have been,*
Tu aurais *or* Tu eusses été.
He would or *should have been,*
Il aurait *or* Il eût été.
She would or *should have been,*
Elle aurait *or* Elle eût été.
We would or *should have been,*
Nous aurions *or* Nous eussions été.
You would or *should have been,*
Vous auriez *or* Vous eussiez été.
They would or *should have been,*
Ils *or* Elles auraient *or* Ils *or* Elles eussent été.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT OR FUTURE.

Be thou,	Sois.
Let him be,	Qu'il soit.
Let her be,	Qu'elle soit.
Let us be,	Soyons.
Be (ye or *you,)*	Soyez.
Let them be,	Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles soient.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

That I may be,
Que je sois.
That thou may'st be,
Que tu sois.
That he may be,
Qu'il soit.

PAST.

That I may have been,
Que j'aie été.
That thou may'st have been,
Que tu aies été.
That he may have been,
Qu'il ait été.

That she may be,
Qu'elle soit.
That we may be,
Que nous soyons.
That you may be,
Que vous soyez.
That they may be,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles soient.

That she may have been,
Qu'elle ait été.
That we may have been,
Que nous ayons été.
That you may have been,
Que vous ayez été.
That they may have been,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles aient été.

IMPERFECT.

That I might be,
Que je fusse.
That thou mightest be,
Que tu fusses.
That he might be,
Qu'il fût.
That she might be,
Qu'elle fût.
That we might be,
Que nous fussions.
That you might be,
Que vous fussiez.
That they might be,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles fussent.

PLUPERFECT.

That I might have been,
Que j'eusse été.
That thou mightest have been,
Que tu eusses été.
That he might have been,
Qu'il eût été.
That she might have been,
Qu'elle eût été.
That we might have been,
Que nous eussions été.
That you might have been,
Que vous eussiez été.
That they might have been,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles eussent été.

ARTICLE VII.

Of Regular Conjugations.

It has already been observed that there are four regular Conjugations in the French language ending, in the Infinitive Mood, in *er, ir, evoir,* and *dre:* as—*parler,*† *finir, recevoir,* and *entendre.*†

In all Verbs *to* is the mark of the *Infinitive; was,* with the Present Participle of the *Imperfect,* and also *did,* with the Infinitive without *to; shall* or *will* of the *Future; would* or *should* of the *Conditional; may* of the *Present of the Subjunctive; might* of the *Preterite;* and *let* of the *Imperative.*

---

† Although it has been previously mentioned that the Verb *chanter,* to sing, would be adopted as a model of the First Conjugation, and *rendre,* to render, of the Fourth, *parler,* to speak, and *entendre,* to hear, being of more general use, will be exemplified instead.

§. 1.

First Conjugation; *Parler*, to speak.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Simple Tenses.

PRESENT.

To speak,
Parler.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

Speaking,
Parlant.

PAST PARTICIPLE.

Spoken,
Parlé.

Compound Tenses.

PRETERITE.

To have spoken,
Avoir parlé.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE COMPOUND.

Having spoken,
Ayant parlé.

PARTICIPLE FUTURE.

Being to speak,
Devant parler.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

I speak or *am speaking,*
Je parle.

Thou speakest or *art speaking,*
Tu parles.

He speaks or *is speaking,*
Il parle.

She speaks or *is speaking,*
Elle parle.

We speak or *are speaking,*
Nous parlons.

You speak or *are speaking,*
Vous parlez.

They speak or *are speaking,*
Ils *or* Elles parlent.

IMPERFECT.

I was speaking,
Je parlais.

Thou wast speaking,
Tu parlais.

He was speaking,
Il parlait.

She was speaking,
Elle parlait.

PRETERITE INDEFINITE.

I have spoken or *have been speaking,*
J'ai parlé.

Thou hast spoken or *hast been speaking,*
Tu as parlé.

He has spoken or *has been speaking,*
Il a parlé.

She has spoken or *has been speaking,*
Elle a parlé.

We have spoken or *have been speaking,*
Nous avons parlé.

You have spoken or *have been speaking,*
Vous avez parlé.

They have spoken or *have been speaking,*
Ils *or* Elles ont parlé.

PLUPERFECT.

I had spoken,
J'avais parlé.

Thou had'st spoken,
Tu avais parlé.

He had spoken,
Il avait parlé.

She had spoken,
Elle avait parlé.

We were speaking,
Nous parlions.
You were speaking,
Vous parliez.
They were speaking,
Ils *or* Elles parlaient.

We had spoken,
Nous avions parlé.
You had spoken,
Vous aviez parlé.
They had spoken,
Ils *or* Elles avaient parlé.

PRETERITE.

I spoke,
Je parlai.
Thou spokest,
Tu parlas.
He spoke,
Il parla.
She spoke,
Elle parla.
We spoke,
Nous parlâmes.
You spoke,
Vous parlâtes.
They spoke,
Ils *or* Elles parlèrent.

PRETERITE ANTERIOR.

I had spoken,
J'eus parlé.
Thou had'st spoken,
Tu eus parlé.
He had spoken,
Il eut parlé.
She had spoken,
Elle eut parlé.
We had spoken,
Nous eûmes parlé.
You had spoken,
Vous eûtes parlé.
They had spoken,
Ils *or* Elles eurent parlé.

FUTURE SIMPLE.

I shall or *will speak,*
Je parlerai.
Thou shalt or *wilt speak,*
Tu parleras.
He shall or *will speak,*
Il parlera.
She shall or *will speak,*
Elle parlera.
We shall or *will speak,*
Nous parlerons.
You shall or *will speak,*
Vous parlerez.
They shall or *will speak,*
Ils *or* Elles parleront.

FUTURE PAST.

I shall or *will have spoken,*
J'aurai parlé.
Thou shalt or *wilt have spoken,*
Tu auras parlé.
He shall or *will have spoken,*
Il aura parlé.
She shall or *will have spoken,*
Elle aura parlé.
We shall or *will have spoken,*
Nous aurons parlé.
You shall or *will have spoken,*
Vous aurez parlé.
They shall or *will have spoken,*
Ils *or* Elles auront parlé.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

I would or *should speak,*
Je parlerais.
Thou would'st or *should'st speak,*
Tu parlerais.
He would or *should speak,*
Il parlerait.

PAST.

I would or *should have spoken,*
J'aurais *or* J'eusse parlé.
Thou would'st or *should'st have spoken,*
Tu aurais *or* Tu eusses parlé.
He would or *should have spoken,*
Il aurait *or* Il eût parlé.

She would or should speak,
Elle parlerait.
We would or should speak,
Nous parlerions.
You would or should speak,
Vous parleriez.
They would or should speak,
Ils *or* Elles parleraient.

She would or should have spoken,
Elle aurait *or* Elle eût parlé.
We would or should have spoken,
Nous aurions *or* Nous eussions parlé.
You would or should have spoken,
Vous auriez *or* Vous eussiez parlé.
They would or should have spoken,
Ils *or* Elles auraient *or* Ils *or* Elles eussent parlé.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT OR FUTURE.

Speak or *speak thou,*	Parle.
Let him speak,	Qu'il parle.
Let her speak,	Qu'elle parle.
Let us speak,	Parlons.
Speak (ye or *you,)*	Parlez.
Let them speak,	Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles parlent.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

That I may speak,
Que je parle.
That thou may'st speak,
Que tu parles.
That he may speak,
Qu'il parle.
That she may speak,
Qu'elle parle.
That we may speak,
Que nous parlions.
That you may speak,
Que vous parliez.
That they may speak,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles parlent.

PRETERITE.

That I may have spoken,
Que j'aie parlé.
That thou may'st have spoken,
Que tu aies parlé.
That he may have spoken,
Qu'il ait parlé.
That she may have spoken,
Qu'elle ait parlé.
That we may have spoken,
Que nous ayons parlé.
That you may have spoken,
Que vous ayez parlé.
That they may have spoken,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles aient parlé.

IMPERFECT.

That I might speak,
Que je parlasse.
That thou mightest speak,
Que tu parlasses.
That he might speak,
Qu'il parlât.

PLUPERFECT.

That I might have spoken,
Que j'eusse parlé.
That thou mightest have spoken,
Que tu eusses parlé.
That he might have spoken,
Qu'il eût parlé.

That she might speak,
Qu'elle parlât.

That we might speak,
Que nous parlassions.

That you might speak,
Que vous parlassiez.

That they might speak,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles parlassent.

That she might have spoken,
Qu'elle eût parlé.

That we might have spoken,
Que nous eussions parlé.

That you might have spoken,
Que vous eussiez parlé.

That they might have spoken,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles eussent parlé.

Additional tenses.—The two following tenses, which may be termed—*past just elapsed*, and *past elapsed before another thing or action took place*, require particular attention, being of the utmost importance.

1. The *past just elapsed*, expressing a thing or action which has just been done, is rendered in English by the Present of the Indicative of the Verb *to have*, with the Adverb *just*, followed by the Past Participle of any Verb: as—*I have just spoken, she has just spoken*, &c. In French, *have* with *just* is expressed by the Present of the Indicative of the Verb *venir* followed by *de*, putting the Past Participle in the Present of the Infinitive: as follows—

I have just spoken or *been speaking,*
Je viens de parler.

Thou hast just spoken or *been speaking,*
Tu viens de parler.

He has just spoken or *been speaking,*
Il vient de parler.

She has just spoken or *been speaking,*
Elle vient de parler.

We have just spoken or *been speaking,*
Nous venons de parler.

You have just spoken or *been speaking,*
Vous venez de parler.

They have just spoken or *been speaking,*
Ils *or* Elles viennent de parler.

2. The *past elapsed before another thing or action took place* expresses that a thing or action had just been done when another took place; and is Englished by the Imperfect of the Verb *to have* with the Adverb *just*, followed as in the *first past* by a Past Participle: as—*I had just spoken, she had just spoken*, &c. in French, *had* with *just* is expressed by the Imperfect of *venir*, followed by *de* as in the *past just elapsed*, putting equally the Past Participle in the Present of the Infinitive: as—

I had just spoken or *been speaking.*
Je venais de parler.

Thou had'st just spoken or *been speaking,*
Tu venais de parler.

He had just spoken or *been speaking,*
Il venait de parler.

She had just spoken or *been speaking,*
Elle venait de parler.

We had just spoken or *been speaking,*
Nous venions de parler.

You had just spoken or *been speaking,*
Vous veniez de parler.

They had just spoken or *been speaking,*
Ils *or* Elles venaient de parler.

Note.—The above two tenses can be used with any Verb.

Observe.—All Verbs ending in *er* in the Present of the Infinitive Mood are regular, and conjugated in the same manner as *parler*, with the exception, however, of the four following—*Aller*, to go; *s'en aller*, to go away; *envoyer*, to send; *renvoyer*, to send back; which are irregular. They will be found fully exemplified under the article of Irregular Verbs.

As to the *unipersonal Verbs*, such as—*Bruiner*, to drizzle; *dégeler*, to thaw; *éclairer*, to lighten; *geler*, to freeze; *gréler*, to hail; *importer*, to matter; *neiger*, to snow; *résulter*, to result; *tonner*, to thunder, &c. though only used in the third person singular of their different tenses, admit, at that person, precisely the same terminations as *parler*.

The Verbs ending in the Present of the Infinitive Mood in *ayer*, *eyer*, *oyer*, *uyer*, *cer*, *éer*, *ger*, *ier*, *eler*, *eter*, and *uer*, although regular, will be found exemplified after the fourth conjugation of *Pronominal Verbs*, on account of some difficulties arising from the varieties of spelling in many of their tenses, some of them undergoing a change of letters, others requiring letters to be doubled, and others having the accentuation different from the Infinitive.

---

§. 2.

SECOND CONJUGATION; *Finir*, to finish.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.	COMPOUND TENSES.
PRESENT.	PRETERITE.
To finish, Finir.	*To have finished*, Avoir fini.
PRESENT PARTICIPLE.	PRESENT PARTICIPLE COMPOUND.
Finishing, Finissant.	*Having finished*, Ayant fini.
PAST PARTICIPLE.	PARTICIPLE FUTURE.
Finished, Fini, ie; is, ies.	*Being to finish*, Devant finir.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.	PRETERITE INDEFINITE.
I finish or *am finishing*, Je finis.	*I have finished*, J'ai fini.
Thou finishest or *art finishing*, Tu finis.	*Thou hast finished*, Tu as fini.

He finishes or *is finishing*,
Il finit.

She finishes or *is finishing*,
Elle finit.

We finish or *are finishing*,
Nous finissons.

You finish or *are finishing*,
Vous finissez.

They finish or *are finishing*,
Ils *or* Elles finissent.

IMPERFECT.

I was finishing,
Je finissais.

Thou wast finishing,
Tu finissais.

He was finishing,
Il finissait.

She was finishing,
Elle finissait.

We were finishing,
Nous finissions.

You were finishing,
Vous finissiez.

They were finishing,
Ils *or* Elles finissaient.

PRETERITE.

I finished,
Je finis.

Thou finished'st,
Tu finis.

He finished,
Il finit.

She finished,
Elle finit.

We finished,
Nous finîmes.

You finished,
Vous finîtes.

They finished,
Ils *or* Elles finirent.

FUTURE SIMPLE.

I shall or *will finish*,
Je finirai.

Thou shalt or *wilt finish*,
Tu finiras.

He shall or *will finish*,
Il finira.

He has finished,
Il a fini.

She has finished,
Elle a fini.

We have finished,
Nous avons fini.

You have finished,
Vous avez fini.

They have finished,
Ils *or* Elles ont fini.

PLUPERFECT.

I had finished,
J'avais fini.

Thou had'st finished,
Tu avais fini.

He had finished,
Il avait fini.

She had finished,
Elle avait fini.

We had finished,
Nous avions fini.

You had finished,
Vous aviez fini.

They had finished,
Ils *or* Elles avaient fini.

PRETERITE ANTERIOR.

I had finished,
J'eus fini.

Thou had'st finished,
Tu eus fini.

He had finished,
Il eut fini.

She had finished,
Elle eut fini.

We had finished,
Nous eûmes fini.

You had finished,
Vous eûtes fini.

They had finished,
Ils *or* Elles eurent fini.

FUTURE PAST.

I shall or *will have finished*,
J'aurai fini.

Thou shalt or *wilt have finished*,
Tu auras fini.

He shall or *will have finished*,
Il aura fini.

She shall or *will finish*,
Elle finira.

We shall or *will finish*,
Nous finirons.

You shall or *will finish*,
Vous finirez.

They shall or *will finish*,
Ils *or* Elles finiront.

She shall or *will have finished*,
Elle aura fini.

We shall or *will have finished*,
Nous aurons fini.

You shall or *will have finished*,
Vous aurez fini.

They shall or *will have finished*,
Ils *or* Elles auront fini.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

I would or *should finish*,
Je finirais.

Thou would'st or *should'st finish*,
Tu finirais.

He would or *should finish*,
Il finirait.

She would or *should finish*,
Elle finirait.

We would or *should finish*,
Nous finirions.

You would or *should finish*,
Vous finiriez.

They would or *should finish*,
Ils *or* Elles finiraient.

PAST.

I would or *should have finished*,
J'aurais *or* J'eusse fini.

Thou would'st or *should'st have finished*,
Tu aurais *or* Tu eusses fini.

He would or *should have finished*,
Il aurait *or* Il eût fini.

She would or *should have finished*,
Elle aurait *or* Elle eût fini.

We would or *should have finished*,
Nous aurions *or* Nous eussions fini.

You would or *should have finished*,
Vous auriez *or* Vous eussiez fini.

They would or *should have finished*,
Ils *or* Elles auraient, *or* Ils *or* Elles eussent fini.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT OR FUTURE.

Finish, or *finish thou*,	Finis.
Let him finish,	Qu'il finisse.
Let her finish,	Qu'elle finisse.
Let us finish,	Finissons.
Finish, or *finish ye* or *you*,	Finissez.
Let them finish,	Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles finissent.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

That I may finish,
Que je finisse.

That thou may'st finish,
Que tu finisses.

PRETERITE.

That I may have finished,
Que j'aie fini.

That thou may'st have finished,
Que tu aies fini.

That he may finish,
Qu'il finisse.

That she may finish,
Qu'elle finisse.

That we may finish,
Que nous finissions.

That you may finish,
Que vous finissiez.

That they may finish,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles finissent.

That he may have finished,
Qu'il ait fini.

That she may have finished,
Qu'elle ait fini.

That we may have finished,
Que nous ayons fini.

That you may have finished,
Que vous ayez fini.

That they may have finished,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles aient fini.

IMPERFECT.

That I might finish,
Que je finisse.

That thou mightest finish,
Que tu finisses.

That he might finish,
Qu'il finît.

That she might finish,
Qu'elle finît.

That we might finish,
Que nous finissions.

That you might finish,
Que vous finissiez.

That they might finish,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles finissent.

PLUPERFECT.

That I might have finished,
Que j'eusse fini.

That thou mightest have finished,
Que tu eusses fini.

That he might have finished,
Qu'il eût fini.

That she might have finished,
Qu'elle eût fini.

That we might have finished,
Que nous eussions fini.

That you might have finished,
Que vous eussiez fini.

That they might have finished,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles eussent fini.

ADDITIONAL TENSES.

PAST, JUST ELAPSED.

I have just finished or *been finishing,*
Je viens de finir.

Thou hast just finished or *been finishing,*
Tu viens de finir.

He has just finished or *been finishing,*
Il vient de finir.

She has just finished or *been finishing,*
Elle vient de finir.

We have just finished or *been finishing,*
Nous venons de finir.

You have just finished or *been finishing,*
Vous venez de finir.

They have just finished or *been finishing,*
Ils *or* Elles viennent de finir.

PAST, ELAPSED BEFORE ANOTHER THING OR ACTION TOOK PLACE.

I had just finished or *been finishing,*
Je venais de finir.

Thou had'st just finished,
Tu venais de finir.

He had just finished,
Il venait de finir.

She had just finished,
Elle venait de finir.

We had just finished,
Nous venions de finir.

You had just finished,
Vous veniez de finir.

They had just finished,
Ils *or* Elles venaient de finir.

Observe.—All Verbs ending in *ir* in the Present of the Infinitive Mood, and of which the Present Participle terminates in *issant*, are regular, and are conjugated precisely after the same manner as *finir;* such are the following, which, except a few others we have omitted, on account of being very little used, are the only regular ones of the Second Conjugation. Any other ending in *ir* in the Infinitive Mood, and of which the Present Participle has not *issant* at its termination, is irregular, and will be found exemplified under the article of Irregular Verbs.

Applaudir, *to applaud.*
Approfondir, *to search into.*
Accomplir, *to accomplish.*
Avertir, *to warn.*
Avilir, *to vilify.*
Assujétir, *to subdue.*
Abolir, *to abolish.*
Abêtir, *to stupify.*
Abonnir, *to improve.*
Aboutir, *to end.*
Abrutir, *to brutalize.*
Accourcir, *to shorten.*
Adoucir, *to soften.*
Affadir, *to render insipid.*
Affermir, *to strengthen.*
Affaiblir, *to weaken.*
Affranchir, *to free.*
Agir, *to act.*
Agrandir, *to enlarge.*
Aguerrir, *to inure to war.*
Aigrir, *to make sour.*
Alourdir, *to make dull.*
Amaigrir, *to make lean.*
Ameublir, *to make moveable.*
Amincir, *to make thinner.*
Amoindrir, *to lessen.*
Amollir, *to mollify.*
Amortir, *to deaden.*
Anéantir, *to annihilate.*
Anoblir, *to make noble.*
Aplanir, *to level.*
Aplatir, *to flatten.*
Appauvrir, *to impoverish.*
Appésantir, *to make heavy.*
Arrondir, *to make round.*
Assainir, *to drain.*
Asservir, *to enslave.*
Assortir, *to match.*
Assoupir, *to make drowsy.*
Assouplir, *to break in a horse.*
Assourdir, *to deafen.*
Assouvir, *to satiate.*
Attendrir, *to make tender.*
Attérir, *to land.*
Attiédir, *to cool.*
Ahurir, *to amaze.*
Amatir, *to unpolish gold or silver.*
Abâtardir, *to bastardize.*
Bannir, *to banish.*
Bâtir, *to build.*
Bênir, *to bless.*
Blanchir, *to wash.*
Blêmir, *to grow pale.*
Bleuir, *to make blue.*
Blondir, *to grow fair.*
Bondir, *to bound.*
Brunir, *to make brown, dark.*
Bouffir, *to swell, to blow up.*
Brouir, *to blast, to blight.*
Brandir, *to brandish.*
Chérir, *to love dearly.*
Choisir, *to choose.*
Compatir, *to commiserate.*
Convertir, *to convert.*
Croupir, *to stagnate.*
Crépir, *to rough-cast.*
Chauvir des oreilles, *to prick up the ears.*
Catir, *to gloss.*
Définir, *to define.*
Défleurir, *to take off the blossom, to let fall its blossom.*
Dégarnir, *to unfurnish.*
Dégauchir, *to straighten.*
Dégourdir, *to remove a stiffness.*
Dégrossir, *to chip off.*
Déguerpir, *to quit, knock off.*
Démaigrir, *to cut off.*
Décatir, *to ungloss.*
Débrutir, *to chip off, to polish.*
Démolir, *to demolish.*
Démunir, *to improvide.*
Dépérir, *to decay.*
Dépolir, *to unpolish.*
Déroidir, *to unstiffen.*
Dérougir, *to take off the redness.*
Désassortir, *to unmatch.*
Désemplir, *to empty a little.*
Désensevelir, *to strip the dead.*
Désobéir, *to disobey.*
Désunir, *to disunite.*
Divertir, *to divert.*
Durcir, *to harden.*
Eblouir, *to dazzle.*
Eclaircir, *to clear up.*
Ecrouir, *to cold-beat metals.*
Elargir, *to widen.*
Embellir, *to embellish.*
Emplir, *to fill.*
Empuantir, *to infect.*
Enchérir, *to outbid.*
Endurcir, *to harden.*
Enforcir, *to strengthen.*
Enfouir, *to hide in the ground.*
Engloutir, *to swallow up.*
Engourdir, *to benumb.*
Enhardir, *to embolden.*

Enlaidir, *to grow ugly.*
Ennoblir, *to ennoble.*
Enorgueillir, *to make proud.*
Enrichir, *to enrich.*
Ensevelir, *to shroud.*
Envahir, *to invade.*
Epaissir, *to thicken.*
Equarrir, *to square.*
Etablir, *to establish.*
Etourdir, *to stun.*
Etrécir, *to straiten.*
Farcir, *to stuff.*
Finir, *to finish.*
Fléchir, *to soften.*
Flétrir, *to fade.*
Fleurir, *to blossom, to flourish.*
Foiblir, *to slacken.*
Fouir, *to dig.*
Fourbir, *to furbish.*
Fournir, *to furnish.*
Fraîchir, (*a sea term, speaking of the wind*) *to freshen.*
Franchir, *to leap over.*
Frémir, *to shudder.*
Garantir, *to warrant.*
Garnir, *to furnish.*
Gémir, *to groan.*
Glapir, *to yelp, to squeak.*
Grandir, *to grow tall.*
Gravir, *to climb up.*
Grossir, *to make or grow bigger.*
Guérir, *to cure, to heal.*
Haïr, *to hate.*
Hennir, *to neigh.*
Havir, *to scorch.*
Investir, *to invest.*
Intervertir, *to disorder.*
Jaillir, *to spout out.*
Jaunir, *to grow yellow.*
Jouir, *to enjoy.*
Languir, *to languish.*
Lotir, *to divide into lots.*
Maigrir, *to grow thin.*
Matir, *to make unpolished.*
Meurtrir, *to bruise.*
Moisir, *to mould.*
Mollir, *to soften, to slacken.*
Mugir, *to low.*
Munir, *to store, or provide with.*
Mûrir, *to ripen.*
Nantir, *to ensure, to secure.*
Noircir, *to blacken.*
Nourrir, *to nourish.*
Obéir, *to obey.*
Obscurcir, *to darken.*
Ourdir, *to warp.*
Pâlir, *to turn pale.*
Parfournir, *to complete, to make up.*
Pâtir, *to suffer.*
Périr, *to perish.*
Pervertir, *to pervert.*
Pétrir, *to knead.*
Polir, *to polish.*
Pourrir, *to rot.*
Préétablir, *to pre-establish.*
Préfinir, *to appoint.*
Prémunir, *to provide, to forewarn.*
Punir, *to punish.*
Rabêtir, *to stupify.*
Rabougrir, *to stunt.*
Raboutir, *to piece, to patch.*
Raccourcir, *to shorten.*
Racornir, *to make hard and tough.*
Radoucir, *to sweeten, to soften.*
Raffermir, *to make stronger, more firm, more fast.*
Rafraîchir, *to cool.*
Ragaillardir, *to make merry.*
Ragrandir, *to enlarge again.*
Rajeunir, *to grow young again.*
Ralentir, *to slacken.*
Ramaigrir, *to make lean again, and to grow thin again.*
Ramoindrir, *to lessen.*
Ramoitir, *to moisten.*
Ramollir, *to soften.*
Rancir, *to grow rancid, rusty.*
Ravilir, *to debase.*
Ravir, *to ravish.*
Réagir, *to react.*
Rébâtir, *to rebuild.*
Rebaudir, *to caress dogs.*
Rebénir, *to bless again.*
Reblanchir, *to new wash or whiten.*
Rebondir, *to rebound.*
Rebrunir, *to burnish again.*
Rechampir, *to set off.*
Recrépir, *to rough-cast again.*
Refléchir, *to reflect.*
Refleurir, *to blossom, or flourish again.*
Refroidir, *to cool.*
Régir, *to govern, to manage.*
Rejaillir, *to spurt up.*
Réjouir, *to rejoice.*
Rélargir, *to make wider again.*
Rembrunir, *to make darker.*
Remplir, *to fill again.*
Renchérir, *to raise the price of.*
Rendurcir, *to harden again.*
Répartir, *to divide.*
Resplendir, *to shine very bright.*
Ressaisir, *to seize again.*
Ressortir, *to be under the jurisdiction.*
Rétablir, *to re-establish.*
Rétentir, *to re-sound.*
Rétrécir, *to straiten.*
Réunir, *to reunite.*
Réussir, *to succeed.*
Reverdir, *to become green again.*
Revernir, *to varnish again.*
Revomir, *to vomit again.*
Roidir, *to stiffen.*
Rôtir, *to roast.*
Rougir, *to redden.*
Rouir, *to sleep.*
Roussir, *to redden, to grow red.*
Rugir, *to roar.*
Saillir, *to project, to gush out.*
Saisir, *to seize.*
Salir, *to soil, to dirt.*
Sancir, *to sink.*
Sertir, *to set a gem.*
Sévir, *to use severely.*
Subir, *to undergo.*
Subvertir, *to subvert.*
Surenchérir, *to outbid.*
Se tapir, *to squat.*
S'accroupir, *to squat down.*
Se blottir, *to squat.*
Se candir, *to candy.*
Se chancir, *to grow mouldy.*
Se clapir, *to lie squat.*
Se dénantir, *to strip oneself.*
Se dessaisir, *to dispossess oneself.*
S'ébahir, *to be amazed.*
S'épanouir, *to blow.*
S'évanouir, *to faint.*
Se havir, *to be scorched.*
Se rabougrir, *to grow stunted.*
Se racornir, *to grow hard and tough.*
Se refroidir, *to grow cool.*
Tarir, *to drain, to dry up.*
Ternir, *to tarnish.*
Tiédir, *to cool.*
Trahir, *to betray.*
Transir, *to chill.*
Travestir, *to disguise.*
Unir, *to unite.*
Verdir, *to paint green, to grow green.*
Vernir, *to varnish.*
Vieillir, *to grow old.*
Vomir, *to vomit.*

§. 3.

THIRD CONJUGATION; *Recevoir,* TO RECEIVE.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.

PRESENT.

To receive,
Recevoir.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

Receiving,
Recevant.

PAST PARTICIPLE.

Received,
Reçu, ue; us, ues.

COMPOUND TENSES.

PRETERITE.

To have received,
Avoir reçu.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE COMPOUND.

Having received,
Ayant reçu.

PARTICIPLE FUTURE.

Being to receive,
Devant recevoir.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

I receive,
Je reçois.
Thou receivedst,
Tu reçois.
He receives,
Il reçoit.
She receives,
Elle reçoit
We receive,
Nous recevons.
You receive,
Vous recevez.
They receive,
Ils *or* Elles reçoivent.

IMPERFECT.

I was receiving,
Je recevais.
Thou wast receiving,
Tu recevais.
He was receiving,
Il recevait.
She was receiving,
Elle recevait.

PRETERITE INDEFINITE.

I have received,
J'ai reçu.
Thou hast received,
Tu as reçu.
He has received,
Il a reçu.
She has received,
Elle a reçu.
We have received,
Nous avons reçu.
You have received,
Vous avez reçu.
They have received,
Ils *or* Elles ont reçu.

PLUPERFECT.

I had received,
J'avais reçu.
Thou had'st received,
Tu avais reçu.
He had received,
Il avait reçu.
She had received,
Elle avait reçu.

We were receiving,
Nous recevions.

You were receiving,
Vous receviez.

They were receiving,
Ils *or* Elles recevaient.

We had received,
Nous avions reçu.

You had received,
Vous aviez reçu.

They had received,
Ils *or* Elles avaient reçu.

PRETERITE.

I received,
Je reçus.

Thou received'st,
Tu reçus.

He received,
Il reçut.

She received,
Elle reçut.

We received,
Nous reçûmes.

You received,
Vous reçûtes.

They received,
Ils *or* Elles reçurent.

PRETERITE ANTERIOR.

I had received,
J'eus reçu.

Thou had'st received,
Tu eus reçu.

He had received,
Il eut reçu.

She had received,
Elle eut reçu.

We had received,
Nous eûmes reçu.

You had received,
Vous eûtes reçu.

They had received,
Ils *or* Elles eurent reçu.

FUTURE SIMPLE.

I shall or *will receive,*
Je recevrai.

Thou shalt or *wilt receive,*
Tu recevras.

He shall or *will receive,*
Il recevra.

She shall or *will receive,*
Elle recevra.

We shall or *will receive,*
Nous recevrons.

You shall or *will receive,*
Vous recevrez.

They shall or *will receive,*
Ils *or* Elles recevront.

FUTURE PAST.

I shall or *will have received,*
J'aurai reçu.

Thou shalt or *wilt have received,*
Tu auras reçu.

He shall or *will have received,*
Il aura reçu.

She shall or *will have received,*
Elle aura reçu.

We shall or *will have received,*
Nous aurons reçu.

You shall or *will have received,*
Vous aurez reçu.

They shall or *will have received,*
Ils *or* Elles auront reçu.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

I would or *should receive,*
Je recevrais.

Thou would'st or *should'st receive,*
Tu recevrais.

He would or *should receive,*
Il recevrait.

PAST.

I would or *should have received,*
J'aurais *or* J'eusse reçu.

Thou would'st or *should'st have received,*
Tu aurais *or* Tu eusses reçu.

He would or *should have received,*
Il aurait *or* Il eût reçu.

She would or *should receive,*
Elle recevrait.

We would or *should receive,*
Nous recevrions.

You would or *should receive,*
Vous recevriez.

They would or *should receive,*
Ils *or* Elles recevraient.

She would or *should have received,*
Elle aurait *or* Elle eût reçu.

We would or *should have received,*
Nous aurions *or* Nous eussions reçu.

You would or *should have received,*
Vous auriez *or* Vous eussiez reçu.

They would or *should have received,*
Ils *or* Elles auraient, *or* Ils *or* Elles eussent reçu.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT OR FUTURE.

Receive, or *receive thou,*	Reçois.
Let him receive,	Qu'il reçoive.
Let her receive,	Qu'elle reçoive.
Let us receive,	Recevons.
Receive (ye or *you,)*	Recevez.
Let them receive,	Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles reçoivent.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

That I may receive,
Que je reçoive.

That thou may'st receive,
Que tu reçoives.

That he may receive,
Qu'il reçoive.

That she may receive,
Qu'elle reçoive.

That we may receive,
Que nous recevions.

That you may receive,
Que vous receviez.

That they may receive,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles reçoivent.

PRETERITE.

That I may have received,
Que j'aie reçu.

That thou may'st have received,
Que tu aies reçu.

That he may have received,
Qu'il ait reçu.

That she may have received,
Qu'elle ait reçu.

That we may have received,
Que nous ayons reçu.

That you may have received,
Que vous ayez reçu.

That they may have received,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles aient reçu.

IMPERFECT.

That I might receive,
Que je reçusse.

That thou mightest receive,
Que tu reçusses.

That he might receive,
Qu'il reçût.

That she might receive,
Qu'elle reçût.

That we might receive,
Que nous reçussions.

PLUPERFECT.

That I might have received,
Que j'eusse reçu.

That thou mightest have received,
Que tu eusses reçu.

That he might have received,
Qu'il eût reçu.

That she might have received,
Qu'elle eût reçu.

That we might have received,
Que nous eussions reçu.

That you might receive,
Que vous reçussiez.

That they might receive,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles reçussent.

That you might have received,
Que vous eussiez reçu.

That they might have received,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles eussent reçu.

ADDITIONAL TENSES.

PAST JUST ELAPSED.

I have just received,
Je viens de recevoir.

Thou hast just received,
Tu viens de recevoir.

He has just received,
Il vient de recevoir.

She has just received,
Elle vient de recevoir.

We have just received,
Nous venons de recevoir.

You have just received,
Vous venez de recevoir.

They have just received,
Ils *or* Elles viennent de recevoir.

PAST, ELAPSED BEFORE ANOTHER THING OR ACTION TOOK PLACE.

I had just received,
Je venais de recevoir.

Thou had'st just received,
Tu venais de recevoir.

He had just received,
Il venait de recevoir.

She had just received,
Elle venait de recevoir.

We had just received,
Nous venions de recevoir.

You had just received,
Vous veniez de recevoir.

They had just received,
Ils *or* Elles venaient de recevoir.

Observe.—All Verbs ending in *evoir* in the Present of the Infinitive Mood, and *evant* in the Present Participle are regular, and conjugated precisely after the same manner as *recevoir*. Such are: *apercevoir* and *s'apercevoir*, to perceive; *concevoir*, to conceive; *devoir*, to owe, to be indebted; *décevoir*, to deceive; *percevoir*, to gather; *redevoir*, to owe again, which, with *recevoir*, are the only regular ones of the Third Conjugation. All the others ending in the Infinitive Mood in *oir* are irregular, and will be found exemplified under the article of Irregular Verbs.

§. 4.

FOURTH CONJUGATION; *Entendre*, to hear, to understand.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Simple Tenses.

PRESENT.

To hear,
Entendre.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

Hearing,
Entendant.

PAST PARTICIPLE.

Heard,
Entendu.

Compound Tenses.

PRETERITE.

To have heard,
Avoir entendu.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE COMPOUND.

Having heard,
Ayant entendu.

PARTICIPLE FUTURE.

Being to hear,
Devant entendre.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

I hear,
J'entends.
Thou hearest,
Tu entends.
He hears,
Il entend.
She hears,
Elle entend.
We hear,
Nous entendons.
You hear,
Vous entendez.
They hear,
Ils *or* Elles entendent.

IMPERFECT.

I did hear,
J'entendais.
Thou did'st hear,
Tu entendais.
He did hear,
Il entendait.
She did hear,
Elle entendait.
We did hear,
Nous entendions.

PRETERITE INDEFINITE.

I have heard,
J'ai entendu.
Thou hast heard,
Tu as entendu.
He has heard,
Il a entendu.
She has heard,
Elle a entendu.
We have heard,
Nous avons entendu.
You have heard,
Vous avez entendu.
They have heard,
Ils *or* Elles ont entendu.

PLUPERFECT.

I had heard,
J'avais entendu.
Thou had'st heard,
Tu avais entendu.
He had heard,
Il avait entendu.
She had heard,
Elle avait entendu.
We had heard,
Nous avions entendu.

You did hear,
Vous entendiez.

They did hear,
Ils *or* Elles entendaient.

PRETERITE.

I heard,
J'entendis.

Thou heard'st,
Tu entendis.

He heard,
Il entendit.

She heard,
Elle entendit.

We heard,
Nous entendîmes.

You heard,
Vous entendîtes.

They heard.
Ils *or* Elles entendirent.

FUTURE SIMPLE.

I shall or *will hear,*
J'entendrai.

Thou shalt or *wilt hear,*
Tu entendras.

He shall or *will hear,*
Il entendra.

She shall or *will hear,*
Elle entendra.

We shall or *will hear,*
Nous entendrons.

You shall or *will hear,*
Vous entendrez.

They shall or *will hear,*
Ils *or* Elles entendront.

You had heard,
Vous aviez entendu.

They had heard,
Ils *or* Elles avaient entendu.

PRETERITE ANTERIOR.

I had heard,
J'eus entendu.

Thou had'st heard,
Tu eus entendu.

He had heard,
Il eut entendu.

She had heard,
Elle eut entendu.

We had heard,
Nous eûmes entendu.

You had heard,
Vous eûtes entendu.

They had heard,
Ils *or* Elles eurent entendu.

FUTURE PAST.

I shall or *will have heard,*
J'aurai entendu.

Thou shalt or *wilt have heard,*
Tu auras entendu.

He shall or *will have heard,*
Il aura entendu.

She shall or *will have heard,*
Elle aura entendu.

We shall or *will have heard,*
Nous aurons entendu.

You shall or *will have heard,*
Vous aurez entendu.

They shall or *will have heard,*
Ils *or* Elles auront entendu.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

I would or *should hear,*
J'entendrais.

Thou would'st or *should'st hear,*
Tu entendrais.

He would or *should hear,*
Il entendrait.

She would or *should hear,*
Elle entendrait.

PAST.

I would or *should have heard,*
J'aurais *or* J'eusse entendu.

Thou would'st or *should'st have heard,*
Tu aurais *or* Tu eusses entendu.

He would or *should have heard,*
Il aurait *or* Il eût entendu.

She would or *should have heard,*
Elle aurait *or* Elle eût entendu.

We would or *should hear,* Nous entendrions.	*We would* or *should have heard,* Nous aurions *or* Nous eussions entendu.
You would or *should hear,* Vous entendriez.	*You would* or *should have heard,* Vous auriez *or* Vous eussiez entendu.
They would or *should hear,* Ils *or* Elles entendraient.	*They would* or *should have heard,* Ils *or* Elles auraient, *or* Ils *or* Elles eussent entendu.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT OR FUTURE.

Hear, or *hear thou,*	Entends.
Let him hear,	Qu'il entende.
Let her hear,	Qu'elle entende.
Let us hear,	Entendons.
Hear (ye or *you,)*	Entendez.
Let them hear,	Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles entendent.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.	PRETERITE.
That I may hear, Que j'entende.	*That I may have heard,* Que j'aie entendu.
That thou may'st hear, Que tu entendes.	*That thou may'st have heard,* Que tu aies entendu.
That he may hear, Qu'il entende.	*That he may have heard,* Qu'il ait entendu.
That she may hear, Qu'elle entende.	*That she may have heard,* Qu'elle ait entendu.
That we may hear, Que nous entendions.	*That we may have heard,* Que nous ayons entendu.
That you may hear, Que vous entendiez.	*That you may have heard,* Que vous ayez entendu.
That they may hear, Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles entendent.	*That they may have heard,* Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles aient entendu.

IMPERFECT.	PLUPERFECT.
That I might hear, Que j'entendisse.	*That I might have heard,* Que j'eusse entendu.
That thou mightest hear, Que tu entendisses.	*That thou mightest have heard,* Que tu eusses entendu.
That he might hear, Qu'il entendît.	*That he might have heard,* Qu'il eût entendu.
That she might hear, Qu'elle entendît.	*That she might have heard,* Qu'elle eût entendu.

That we might hear,
Que nous entendissions.

That you might hear,
Que vous entendissiez.

That they might hear,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles entendissent.

That we might have heard,
Que nous eussions entendu.

That you might have heard,
Que vous eussiez entendu.

That they might have heard,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles eussent entendu.

ADDITIONAL TENSES.

PAST JUST ELAPSED.

I have just heard,
Je viens d'entendre.

Thou hast just heard,
Tu viens d'entendre.

He has just heard,
Il vient d'entendre.

She has just heard,
Elle vient d'entendre.

We have just heard,
Nous venons d'entendre.

You have just heard,
Vous venez d'entendre.

They have just heard,
Ils *or* Elles viennent d'entendre.

PAST, ELAPSED BEFORE ANOTHER THING OR ACTION TOOK PLACE.

I had just heard,
Je venais d'entendre.

Thou had'st just heard,
Tu venais d'entendre.

He had just heard,
Il venait d'entendre.

She had just heard,
Elle venait d'entendre.

We had just heard,
Nous venions d'entendre.

You had just heard,
Vous veniez d'entendre.

They had just heard,
Ils *or* Elles venaient d'entendre.

Observe.—All Verbs ending in *dre* in the Present of the Infinitive, in *dant* in the Present Participle, and *du* in the Past Participle, are regular of the Fourth Conjugation, and conjugated precisely after the same manner as *entendre;* such are the following, which, with very few, if any, exceptions, are the only regular ones of the Fourth Conjugation.

Attendre, *to wait* or *wait for; to expect.*
Appendre, *to append.*
Correspondre, *to correspond.*
Confondre, *to confound.*
Condescendre, *to condescend.*
Défendre, *to defend, to forbid.*
Descendre, *to come* or *go down, to descend, to take down.*
Dépendre, *to depend.*
Détendre, *to unbend.*
Distendre, *to distend.*
Détordre, *to untwist.*
Démordre, *to recede from.*
Etendre, *to spread.*
Epandre, *to scatter.*
Fondre, *to melt.*
Fendre, *to cleave.*
Mordre, *to bite.*
Mévendre, *to undersell.*
Prétendre, *to pretend.*
Pendre, *to hang.*
Pourfendre, *to split a man in two with a single blow.*
Pondre, *to lay eggs.*
Parfondre, *to melt equally.*
Perdre, *to lose.*
Reperdre, *to lose again.*
Rendre, *to render, to return.*
Répandre, *to spill, to shed.*
Rependre, *to hang up again.*
Revendre, *to sell again, to sell by retail.*
Retendre, *to stretch again.*
Refendre, *to split* or *cleave again.*
Répondre, *to answer, to reply.*
Refondre, *to melt* or *cast again.*
Retondre, *to shear again.*
Retordre, *to twist again.*
Remordre, *to bite again.*
Sous-entendre, *to understand.*
Suspendre, *to suspend.*
Survendre, *to sell too dear.*
Se morfondre, *to spend oneself.*
Tendre, *to bend.*
Tondre, *to shear.*
Tordre, *to twist.*
Vendre, *to sell.*

Any other Verb ending in *re* in the Present of the Infinitive is irregular, and conjugated after its own model under the article of Irregular Verbs.

ARTICLE VIII.

Of Pronominal Verbs, otherwise called Reflected.

Pronominal Verbs have not a Conjugation peculiar to themselves; they are conjugated after the same manner as the Verbs to whose Conjugation they belong, having the same terminations as those Verbs throughout all their Simple Tenses.

Their Compound Tenses are formed by the addition of their *Past Participle* to the Simple Tenses of *être* which are Englished by the Simple Tenses of *to have*, the *Past Participle* always agreeing in gender and number in French with their direct object when represented by the Pronouns *me, te, se, nous, vous,* which precede: as—*Nous ne nous sommes pas encore lavés,* we have not yet washed; *elle s'est beaucoup négligée,* she has neglected herself much.

Those Verbs always require two Pronouns of the same person throughout their different tenses: thus—*je me, tu te, il* or *elle se, nous nous, vous vous, ils* or *elles se,* in the sense of *myself, thyself, himself, herself, ourselves, yourselves, themselves,* either expressed or not in English: as—*Je me lève,* I rise; *elle se promène,* she walks, &c. We must, however, except the *Present of the Infinitive, the Present Participle,* and their Compounds, which only admit one Pronoun: as—*Se promener,* to walk; *se promenant,* walking; *s'être promené,* to have walked; *s'étant promené,* having walked; and also *the Imperative,*

which requires only one in the *second person singular* and in *the first* and *second plural:* as—*Lève-toi,* rise thou; *levons-nous,* let us rise; *levez-vous,* rise ye *or* you; *ne vous levez pas,* do not rise.

When *Pronominal Verbs* are used either affirmatively, negatively, interrogatively, or interrogatively and negatively, the Pronouns and Negations come in the following order, always placing *me, te, se, nous, vous,* immediately before the Verb in the Simple Tenses, and before the Auxiliary in the Compound: as—*Je me promène, tu te promènes,* &c. *Je me suis promené, tu t'es promené,* &c. *Je ne me promène pas, tu ne te promènes pas,* &c. *Je ne me suis pas promené, tu ne t'es pas promené,* &c. *me promenais-je? te promenais-tu?* &c. *m'étais-je promené? t'étais-tu promené?* &c. *Ne me promenais-je pas? ne te promenais-tu pas?* &c. *ne m'étais-je pas promené? ne t'étais-tu pas promené?* &c.

All *Pronominal Verbs* have *se* or *s'* before their Infinitive in French, in the sense of *oneself* in English; but as there are a great many Verbs which do not admit *oneself* in English, and are, notwithstanding, *Pronominal* in French, a particular attention must be paid to the list of *Pronominal Verbs* annexed to the Four following Conjugations, in which the greater part of those Verbs are included.

---

§. 1.

First Conjugation of Pronominal Verbs.

Se promener, to walk.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Simple Tenses.	Compound Tenses.
PRESENT.	**PRETERITE.**
To walk,	*To have walked,*
Se promener.	S'être promené.
PRESENT PARTICIPLE.	**PRESENT PARTICIPLE COMPOUND.**
Walking,	*Having walked,*
Se promenant.	S'étant promené.
PAST PARTICIPLE.	**PARTICIPLE FUTURE.**
Walked,	*Being to walk,*
Promené, ée; és, ées.	Devant se promener.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.	PRETERITE INDEFINITE.
I walk or *am walking,*	*I have walked* or *been walking,*
Je me promène.	Je me suis promené, *or* ée.
Thou walkest or *art walking,*	*Thou hast walked* or *been walking,*
Tu te promènes.	Tu t'es promené, *or* ée.

He walks or *is walking,* Il se promène.	*He has walked* or *been walking,* Il s'est promené.
She walks or *is walking,* Elle se promène.	*She has walked* or *been walking,* Elle s'est promenée.
We walk or *are walking,* Nous nous promenons.	*We have walked* or *been walking,* Nous nous sommes promenés, *or* ées.
You walk or *are walking.* Vous vous promenez.	*You have walked* or *been walking,* Vous vous êtes promenés, *or* ées.
They walk or *are walking.* Ils *or* Elles se promènent.	*They have walked* or *been walking,* Ils se sont promenés *or* Elles se sont promenées.

IMPERFECT.	PLUPERFECT.
I was walking, Je me promenais.	*I had walked* or *been walking,* Je m'étais promené, *or* ée.
Thou wast walking, Tu te promenais.	*Thou had'st walked* or *been walking,* Tu t'étais promené, *or* ée.
He was walking, Il se promenait.	*He had walked* or *been walking,* Il s'était promené.
She was walking, Elle se promenait.	*She had walked* or *been walking,* Elle s'était promenée.
We were walking, Nous nous promenions.	*We had walked* or *been walking,* Nous nous étions promenés, *or* ées.
You were walking, Vous vous promeniez.	*You had walked* or *been walking,* Vous vous étiez promenés, *or* ées.
They were walking, Ils *or* Elles se promenaient.	*They had walked* or *been walking,* Ils s'étaient promenés *or* Elles s'étaient promenées.

PRETERITE.	PRETERITE ANTERIOR.
I walked, Je me promenai.	*I had walked,* Je me fus promené, *or* ée.
Thou walked'st, Tu te promenas.	*Thou had'st walked,* Tu te fus promené, *or* ée.
He walked, Il se promena.	*He had walked,* Il se fut promené.
She walked, Elle se promena.	*She had walked,* Elle se fut promenée.
We walked, Nous nous promenâmes.	*We had walked,* Nous nous fûmes promenés, *or* ées.
You walked, Vous vous promenâtes.	*You had walked,* Vous vous fûtes promenés, *or* ées.
They walked, Ils *or* Elles se promenèrent.	*They had walked,* Ils se furent promenés *or* Elles se furent promenées.

FUTURE SIMPLE.	FUTURE PAST.
I shall or *will walk,* Je me promènerai.	*I shall* or *will have walked,* Je me serai promené, *or* ée.
Thou shalt or *wilt walk,* Tu te promèneras.	*Thou shalt* or *wilt have walked,* Tu te seras promené, *or* ée.

He shall or *will walk*, Il se promènera.	*He shall* or *will have walked*, Il se sera promené.
She shall or *will walk*, Elle se promènera.	*She shall* or *will have walked*, Elle se sera promenée.
We shall or *will walk*, Nous nous promènerons.	*We shall* or *will have walked*, Nous nous serons promenés, *or* ées.
You shall or *will walk*, Vous vous promènerez.	*You shall* or *will have walked*, Vous vous serez promenés, *or* ées.
They shall or *will walk*, Ils *or* Elles se promèneront	*They shall* or *will have walked*, Ils se seront promenés *or* Elles se seront promenées.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.	PAST.
I would or *should walk*, Je me promènerais.	*I would* or *should have walked*, Je me serais *or* Je me fusse promené, *or* ée.
Thou would'st or *should'st walk*, Tu te promènerais.	*Thou would'st* or *should'st have walked*, Tu te serais *or* Tu te fusses promené, *or* ée.
He would or *should walk*, Il se promènerait.	*He would* or *should have walked*, Il se serait *or* Il se fût promené.
She would or *should walk*, Elle se promènerait.	*She would* or *should have walked*, Elle se serait *or* Elle se fût promenée.
We would or *should walk*, Nous nous promènerions.	*We would* or *should have walked*, Nous nous serions *or* Nous nous fussions promenés, *or* ées.
You would or *should walk*, Vous vous promèneriez.	*You would* or *should have walked*, Vous vous seriez *or* Vous vous fussiez promenés, *or* ées.
They would or *should walk*, Ils *or* Elles se promèneraient.	*They would* or *should have walked*, Ils se seraient *or* Ils se fussent promenés, *or* Elles se seraient *or* Elles se fussent promenées.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT OR FUTURE.

1. Affirmatively.

Walk (thou,)	Promène-toi.
Let him walk,	Qu'il se promène.
Let her walk,	Qu'elle se promène.
Let us walk,	Promenons-nous.
Walk (ye or *you,)*	Promenez-vous.
Let them walk,	Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles se promènent.

2. Negatively.

Walk thou not,	Ne te promène pas.
Let him not walk,	Qu'il ne se promène pas.

Let her not walk,	Qu'elle ne se promène pas.
Let us not walk,	Ne nous promenons pas.
Walk ye not,	Ne vous promenez pas.
Let them not walk,	Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles ne se promènent pas.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

That I may walk,
Que je me promène.

That thou mayest walk,
Que tu te promènes.

That he may walk,
Qu'il se promène.

That she may walk,
Qu'elle se promène.

That we may walk,
Que nous nous promenions.

That you may walk,
Que vous vous promeniez.

That they may walk,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles se promènent.

PRETERITE.

That I may have walked,
Que je me sois promené, *or* ée.

That thou mayest have walked,
Que tu te sois promené, *or* ée.

That he may have walked,
Qu'il se soit promené.

That she may have walked,
Qu'elle se soit promenée.

That we may have walked,
Que nous nous soyons promenés, *or* ées.

That you may have walked,
Que vous vous soyez promenés, *or* ées.

That they may have walked,
Qu'ils se soient promenés *or* Qu'elles se soient promenées.

IMPERFECT.

That I might walk,
Que je me promenasse.

That thou mightest walk,
Que tu te promenasses.

That he might walk,
Qu'il se promenât.

That she might walk,
Qu'elle se promenât.

That we might walk,
Que nous nous promenassions.

That you might walk,
Que vous vous promenassiez.

That they might walk,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles se promenassent.

PLUPERFECT.

That I might have walked,
Que je me fusse promené, *or* ée.

That thou mightest have walked,
Que tu te fusses promené, *or* ée.

That he might have walked,
Qu'il se fût promené.

That she might have walked,
Qu'elle se fût promenée.

That we might have walked,
Que nous nous fussions promenés, *or* ées

That you might have walked,
Que vous vous fussiez promenés, *or* ées

That they might have walked,
Qu'ils se fussent promenés, *or* Qu'elles se fussent promenées.

ADDITIONAL TENSES.

PAST, JUST ELAPSED.

I have just been walking,
Je viens de me promener.

Thou hast just been walking,
Tu viens de te promener.

He has just been walking,
Il vient de se promener.
She has just been walking,
Elle vient de se promener.
We have just been walking,
Nous venons de nous promener.
You have just been walking,
Vous venez de vous promener.
They have just been walking,
Ils *or* Elles viennent de se promener.

PAST, ELAPSED BEFORE ANOTHER THING OR ACTION TOOK PLACE.

I had just been walking,
Je venais de me promener.
Thou had'st just been walking,
Tu venais de te promener.
He had just been walking,
Il venait de se promener.
She had just been walking,
Elle venait de se promener.
We had just been walking,
Nous venions de nous promener.
You had just been walking,
Vous veniez de vous promener.
They had just been walking,
Ils *or* Elles venaient de se promener.

Observe.—All *Pronominal Verbs* of the First Conjugation are conjugated after the same manner as *se promener.*

The three following—*aller,* to go; *envoyer,* to send; *renvoyer,* to send back; if used in a Pronominal way, must be excepted; they, indeed, require the same Pronouns exactly in the same order as the above Verb, but they must follow their Conjugations as exemplified under the article of *Irregular Verbs.*

§. 2.

Second Conjugation of Pronominal Verbs.

Se réjouir, to rejoice.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.	PRETERITE.
To rejoice,	*To have rejoiced,*
Se réjouir.	S'être réjoui.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

Rejoicing,
Se réjouissant.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE COMPOUND.

Having rejoiced,
S'étant réjoui.

PAST PARTICIPLE.

Rejoiced,
Réjoui, ie; is, ies.

PARTICIPLE FUTURE.

Being to rejoice,
Devant se réjouir.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

I rejoice or *am rejoicing,*
Je me réjouis.
Thou rejoicest or *art rejoicing,*
Tu te réjouis.
He rejoices or *is rejoicing,*
Il se réjouit.
She rejoices or *is rejoicing,*
Elle se réjouit.
We rejoice or *are rejoicing,*
Nous nous réjouissons.
You rejoice or *are rejoicing,*
Vous vous réjouissez.
They rejoice or *are rejoicing,*
Ils *or* Elles se réjouissent.

PRETERITE INDEFINITE.

I have rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Je me suis réjoui, *or* ie.
Thou hast rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Tu t'es réjoui, *or* ie.
He has rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Il s'est réjoui.
She has rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Elle s'est réjouie.
We have rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Nous nous sommes réjouis, *or* ies.
You have rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Vous vous êtes réjouis, *or* ies.
They have rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Ils se sont réjouis *or* Elles se sont réjouies.

IMPERFECT.

I was rejoicing,
Je me réjouissais.
Thou wast rejoicing,
Tu te réjouissais.
He was rejoicing,
Il se réjouissait.
She was rejoicing,
Elle se réjouissait.
We were rejoicing,
Nous nous réjouissions.
You were rejoicing,
Vous vous réjouissiez.
They were rejoicing,
Ils *or* Elles se réjouissaient.

PLUPERFECT.

I had rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Je m'étais réjoui, *or* ie.
Thou had'st rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Tu t'étais réjoui, *or* ie.
He had rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Il s'était réjoui.
She had rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Elle s'était réjouie.
We had rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Nous nous étions réjouis, *or* ies.
You had rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Vous vous étiez réjouis, *or* ies.
They had rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Ils s'étaient réjouis *or* Elles s'étaient réjouies.

PRETERITE.

I rejoiced,
Je me réjouis.
Thou rejoiced'st,
Tu te réjouis.

PRETERITE ANTERIOR.

I had rejoiced,
Je me fus réjoui, *or* ie.
Thou had'st rejoiced,
Tu te fus réjoui, *or* ie.

He rejoiced,
Il se réjouit.

She rejoiced,
Elle se réjouit.

We rejoiced,
Nous nous réjouîmes.

You rejoiced,
Vous vous réjouîtes.

They rejoiced,
Ils *or* Elles se réjouirent.

He had rejoiced,
Il se fut réjoui.

She had rejoiced,
Elle se fut réjouie.

We had rejoiced,
Nous nous fûmes réjouis, *or* ies.

You had rejoiced,
Vous vous fûtes réjouis, *or* ies.

They had rejoiced,
Ils se furent réjouis *or* Elles se furent réjouies.

FUTURE SIMPLE.

I shall or *will rejoice,*
Je me réjouirai.

Thou shalt or *wilt rejoice,*
Tu te réjouiras.

He shall or *will rejoice,*
Il se réjouira.

She shall or *will rejoice,*
Elle se réjouira.

We shall or *will rejoice,*
Nous nous réjouirons.

You shall or *will rejoice,*
Vous vous réjouirez.

They shall or *will rejoice,*
Ils *or* Elles se réjouiront.

FUTURE PAST.

I shall or *will have rejoiced,*
Je me serai réjoui, *or* ie.

Thou shalt or *wilt have rejoiced,*
Tu te seras réjoui, *or* ie.

He shall or *will have rejoiced,*
Il se sera réjoui.

She shall or *will have rejoiced,*
Elle se sera réjouie.

We shall or *will have rejoiced,*
Nous nous serons réjouis, *or* ies.

You shall or *will have rejoiced,*
Vous vous serez réjouis, *or* ies.

They shall or *will have rejoiced,*
Ils se seront réjouis *or* Elles se seront réjouies.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

I would or *should rejoice,*
Je me réjouirais.

Thou would'st or *should'st rejoice,*
Tu te réjouirais.

He would or *should rejoice,*
Il se réjouirait.

She would or *should rejoice,*
Elle se réjouirait.

We would or *should rejoice,*
Nous nous réjouirions.

You would or *should rejoice,*
Vous vous réjouiriez,

They would or *should rejoice,*
Ils *or* Elles es réjouiraient.

PAST.

I would or *should have rejoiced,*
Je me serais *or* Je me fusse réjoui, *or* ie.

Thou would'st or *should'st have rejoiced,*
Tu te serais *or* Tu te fusses réjoui, *or* ie.

He would or *should have rejoiced,*
Il se serait *or* Il se fût réjoui.

She would or *should have rejoiced,*
Elle se serait *or* Elle se fût réjouie.

We would or *should have rejoiced,*
Nous nous serions *or* Nous nous fussions rejouis, *or* ies.

You would or *should have rejoiced,*
Vous vous seriez *or* Vous vous fussiez réjouis, *or* ies.

They would or *should have rejoiced,*
Ils se seraient *or* Ils se fussent réjouis, *or* Elles se seraient *or* Elles se fussent réjouies.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT OR FUTURE.

1. Affirmatively.

Rejoice (thou,)	Réjouis-toi.
Let him rejoice,	Qu'il se réjouisse.
Let her rejoice,	Qu'elle se réjouisse.
Let us rejoice,	Réjouissons-nous.
Rejoice (ye or you,)	Réjouissez-vous.
Let them rejoice,	Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles se réjouissent.

2. Negatively.

Rejoice thou not,	Ne te réjouis pas.
Let him not rejoice,	Qu'il ne se réjouisse pas.
Let her not rejoice,	Qu'elle ne se réjouisse pas.
Let us not rejoice,	Ne nous réjouissons pas.
Rejoice ye not,	Ne vous réjouissez pas.
Let them not rejoice,	Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles ne se réjouissent pas.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.	PRETERITE.
That I may rejoice, Que je me réjouisse.	*That I may have rejoiced,* Que je me sois réjoui, *or* ie.
That thou may'st rejoice, Que tu te réjouisses.	*That thou may'st have rejoiced,* Que tu te sois réjoui, *or* ie.
That he may rejoice, Qu'il se réjouisse.	*That he may have rejoiced,* Qu'il se soit réjoui.
That she may rejoice, Qu'elle se réjouisse.	*That she may have rejoiced,* Qu'elle se soit réjouie.
That we may rejoice, Que nous nous réjouissions.	*That we may have rejoiced,* Que nous nous soyons réjouis, *or* ies.
That you may rejoice, Que vous vous réjouissiez.	*That you may have rejoiced,* Que vous vous soyez réjouis, *or* ies.
That they may rejoice, Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles se réjouissent	*That they may have rejoiced,* Qu'ils se soient réjouis, *or* Qu'elles se soient réjouies.

IMPERFECT.	PLUPERFECT.
That I might rejoice, Que je me réjouisse.	*That I might have rejoiced,* Que je me fusse réjoui, *or* ie.
That thou mightest rejoice, Que tu te réjouisses.	*That thou mightest have rejoiced,* Que tu te fusses réjoui, *or* ie.
That he might rejoice, Qu'il se réjouît.	*That he might have rejoiced,* Qui'l se fût réjoui.

That she might rejoice,
Qu'elle se réjouît.

That we might rejoice,
Que nous nous réjouissions.

That you might rejoice,
Que vous vous réjouissiez.

That they might rejoice,
Qu'ils se réjouissent *or* Qu'elles se réjouissent.

That she might have rejoiced,
Qu'elle se fût réjouie.

That we might have rejoiced,
Que nous nous fussions réjouis, *or* ies.

That you might have rejoiced,
Que vous vous fussiez rejouis, *or* ies.

That they might have rejoiced,
Qu'ils se fussent réjouis *or* Qu'elles se fussent réjouies.

ADDITIONAL TENSES.

PAST, JUST ELAPSED.

I have just rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Je viens de me réjouir,

Thou hast just rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Tu viens de te réjouir,

He has just rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Il vient de se réjouir.

She has just rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Elle vient de se réjouir.

We have just rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Nous venons de nous réjouir,

You have just rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Vous venez de vous réjouir.

They have just rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Ils *or* Elles viennent de se réjouir.

PAST, ELAPSED BEFORE ANOTHER THING OR ACTION TOOK PLACE.

I had just rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Je venais de me réjouir.

Thou had'st just rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Tu venais de te réjouir.

He had just rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Il venait de se réjouir.

She had just rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Elle venait de se réjouir.

We had just rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Nous venions de nous réjouir.

You had just rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Vous veniez de vous réjouir.

They had just rejoiced or *been rejoicing,*
Ils venaient de se réjouir *or* Elles venaient de se réjouir.

Observe.—All *Pronominal Verbs* of the Second Conjugation, if regular, are conjugated precisely after the same manner as the above.

§. 3.

Third Conjugation of Pronominal Verbs.

S'apercevoir, to perceive.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Simple Tenses.

PRESENT.

To perceive,
S'apercevoir.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

Perceiving,
S'apercevant.

PAST PARTICIPLE.

Perceived,
Aperçu, ue; us, ues.

Compound Tenses.

PRETERITE.

To have perceived,
S'être aperçu.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE COMPOUND.

Having perceived,
S'étant aperçu.

PARTICIPLE FUTURE.

Being to perceive,
Devant s'apercevoir.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

I perceive,
Je m'aperçois.

Thou perceivest,
Tu t'aperçois.

He perceives,
Il s'aperçoit.

She perceives,
Elle s'aperçoit.

We perceive,
Nous nous apercevons.

You perceive,
Vous vous apercevez.

They perceive,
Ils *or* Elles s'aperçoivent.

PRETERITE INDEFINITE.

I have perceived,
Je me suis aperçu, *or* ue.

Thou hast perceived,
Tu t'es aperçu, *or* ue.

He has perceived,
Il s'est aperçu.

She has perceived,
Elle s'est aperçue.

We have perceived,
Nous nous sommes aperçus, *or* ues.

You have perceived,
Vous vous êtes aperçus, *or* ues.

They have perceived,
Ils se sont aperçus *or* Elles se sont aperçues.

IMPERFECT.

I was perceiving,
Je m'apercevais.

Thou wast perceiving,
Tu t'apercevais.

He was perceiving,
Il s'apercevait.

She was perceiving,
Elle s'apercevait.

PLUPERFECT.

I had perceived,
Je m'étais aperçu, *or* ue.

Thou had'st perceived,
Tu t'étais aperçu, *or* ue.

He had perceived,
Il s'était aperçu.

She had perceived,
Elle s'était aperçue.

We were perceiving,
Nous nous apercevions.
You were perceiving,
Vous vous aperceviez.
They were perceiving,
Ils *or* Elles s'apercevaient.

We had perceived,
Nous nous étions aperçus, *or* ues
You had perceived,
Vous vous étiez aperçus, *or* ues.
They had perceived,
Ils s'étaient aperçus *or* Elles s'étaient aperçues.

PRETERITE.

I perceived,
Je m'aperçus.
Thou perceived'st,
Tu t'aperçus.
He perceived,
Il s'aperçut.
She perceived,
Elle s'aperçut.
We perceived,
Nous nous aperçûmes.
You perceived,
Vous vous aperçûtes.
They perceived,
Ils *or* Elles s'aperçurent.

PRETERITE ANTERIOR.

I had perceived,
Je me fus aperçu, *or* ue.
Thou had'st perceived,
Tu te fus aperçu, *or* ue.
He had perceived,
Il se fut aperçu.
She had perceived,
Elle se fut aperçue.
We had perceived,
Nous nous fûmes aperçus, *or* ues
You had perceived,
Vous vous fûtes aperçus, *or* ues.
They had perceived,
Ils se furent aperçus *or* Elles se furent aperçues.

FUTURE SIMPLE.

I shall or *will perceive,*
Je m'apercevrai.
Thou shalt or *wilt perceive,*
Tu t'apercevras.
He shall or *will perceive,*
Il s'apercevra.
She shall or *will perceive,*
Elle s'apercevra.
We shall or *will perceive,*
Nous nous apercevrons.
You shall or *will perceive,*
Vous vous apercevrez.
They shall or *will perceive,*
Ils *or* Elles s'apercevront.

FUTURE PAST.

I shall or *will have perceived,*
Je me serai aperçu, *or* ue.
Thou shalt or *wilt have perceived,*
Tu te seras aperçu, *or* ue.
He shall or *will have perceived,*
Il se sera aperçu.
She shall or *will have perceived,*
Elle se sera aperçue.
We shall or *will have perceived,*
Nous nous serons aperçus, *or* ues
You shall or *will have perceived,*
Vous vous serez aperçus, *or* ues.
They shall or *will have perceived,*
Ils se seront aperçus *or* Elles se seront aperçues.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

I would or *should perceive,*
Je m'apercevrais.
Thou would'st or *should'st perceive,*
Tu t'apercevrais.

PAST.

I would or *should have perceived.*
Je me serais *or* Je me fusse aperçu, *or* ue.
Thou would'st or *should'st have perceived,*
Tu te serais *or* Tu te fusses aperçu, *or* ue.

He would or *should perceive,*
Il s'apercevrait.

She would or *should perceive,*
Elle s'apercevrait.

We would or *should perceive,*
Nous nous apercevrions.

You would or *should perceive,*
Vous vous apercevriez.

They would or *should perceive,*
Ils s'apercevraient *or* Elles s'apercevraient.

He would or *should have perceived,*
Il se serait aperçu.

She would or *should have perceived,*
Elle se serait aperçue.

We would or *should have perceived,*
Nous nous serions *or* Nous nous fussions aperçus, *or* ues.

You would or *should have perceived,*
Vous vous seriez *or* Vous vous fussiez aperçus, *or* ues.

They would or *should have perceived,*
Ils se seraient *or* Ils se fussent aperçus, *or* Elles se seraient *or* Elles se fussent aperçues.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT OR FUTURE.

1. Affirmatively.

Perceive (thou,)	Aperçois-toi.
Let him perceive,	Qu'il s'aperçoive.
Let her perceive,	Qu'elle s'aperçoive.
Let us perceive.	Apercevons-nous.
Perceive (ye or *you,)*	Apercevez-vous.
Let them perceive,	Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles s'aperçoivent.

2. Negatively.

Perceive thou not,	Ne t'aperçois pas.
Let him not perceive,	Qu'il ne s'aperçoive pas.
Let her not perceive,	Qu'elle ne s'aperçoive pas.
Let us not perceive,	Ne nous aperçevons pas.
Perceive ye not,	Ne vous apercevez pas.
Let them not perceive,	Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles ne s'aperçoivent pas.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

That I may perceive,
Que je m'aperçoive.

That thou may'st perceive,
Que tu t'aperçoives.

That he may perceive,
Qu'il s'aperçoive.

That she may perceive,
Qu'elle s'aperçoive.

That we may perceive,
Que nous nous apercevions.

PRETERITE.

That I may have perceived,
Que je me sois aperçu, *or* ue.

That thou may'st have perceived,
Que tu te sois aperçu, *or* ue.

That he may have perceived,
Qu'il se soit aperçu.

That she may have perceived,
Qu'elle se soit aperçue.

That we may have perceived,
Que nous nous soyons aperçus, *or* ues.

That you may perceive,
Que vous vous aperceviez.

That they may perceive,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles s'aperçoivent.

That you may have perceived,
Que vous vous soyez aperçus, *or* ues.

That they may have perceived,
Qu'ils se soient aperçus *or* Qu'elles se soient aperçues.

IMPERFECT.

That I might perceive,
Que je m'aperçusse.

That thou mightest perceive,
Que tu t'aperçusses.

That he might perceive,
Qu'il s'aperçût.

That she might perceive,
Qu'elle s'aperçût.

That we might perceive,
Que nous nous aperçussions.

That you might perceive,
Que vous vous aperçussiez.

That they might perceive,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles s'aperçussent.

PLUPERFECT.

That I might have perceived,
Que je me fusse aperçu, *or* ue.

That thou mightest have perceived,
Que tu te fusses aperçu, *or* ue.

That he might have perceived,
Qu'il se fût aperçu.

That she might have perceived,
Qu'elle se fût aperçue.

That we might have perceived,
Que nous nous fussions aperçus, *or* ues

That you might have perceived,
Que vous vous fussiez aperçus, *or* ues.

That they might have perceived,
Qu'ils se fussent aperçus *or* Qu'elles se fussent aperçues.

ADDITIONAL TENSES.

PAST, JUST ELAPSED.

I have just perceived,
Je viens de m'apercevoir.

Thou hast just perceived,
Tu viens de t'apercevoir.

He has just perceived,
Il vient de s'apercevoir.

She has just perceived,
Elle vient de s'apercevoir.

We have just perceived,
Nous venons de nous apercevoir.

You have just perceived,
Vous venez de vous apercevoir.

They have just perceived,
Ils *or* Elles viennent de s'apercevoir.

PAST, ELAPSED BEFORE ANOTHER THING OR ACTION TOOK PLACE.

I had just perceived,
Je venais de m'apercevoir.

Thou had'st just perceived,
Tu venais de t'apercevoir.

He had just perceived,
Il venait de s'apercevoir.

She had just perceived,
Elle venait de s'apercevoir.

We had just perceived,
Nous venions de nous apercevoir.

You had just perceived,
Vous veniez de vous apercevoir.

They had just perceived,
Ils *or* Elles venaient de s'apercevoir.

Observe.—If any other regular Verb of the Third Conjugation is used in a reflected way, it follows the example which has just been given of *Apercevoir*.

---

§. 4.

Fourth Conjugation of Pronominal Verbs.

Se rendre, to surrender. †

INFINITIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.

PRESENT.

To surrender,
Se rendre.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

Surrendering,
Se rendant.

PAST PARTICIPLE.

Surrendered,
Rendu, ue; us, ues.

COMPOUND TENSES.

PRETERITE.

To have surrendered,
S'être rendu.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE COMPOUND.

Having surrendered,
S'étant rendu.

PARTICIPLE FUTURE.

Being to surrender,
Devant se rendre.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

I surrender,
Je me rends.

Thou surrenderest,
Tu te rends.

He surrenders,
Il se rend.

She surrenders,
Elle se rend.

We surrender,
Nous nous rendons.

You surrender,
Vous vous rendez.

PRETERITE INDEFINITE.

I have surrendered,
Je me suis rendu, *or* ue.

Thou hast surrendered,
Tu t'es rendu, *or* ue.

He has surrendered,
Il s'est rendu.

She has surrendered,
Elle s'est rendue.

We have surrendered,
Nous nous sommes rendus, *or* ues.

You have surrendered,
Vous vous êtes rendus, *or* ues.

---

† *Observe.*—The above Verb means, also, *to repair, to go to, to lead to.*

They surrender,
Ils *or* Elles se rendent.

IMPERFECT.

I was surrendering,
Je me rendais.

Thou wast surrendering,
Tu te rendais.

He was surrendering,
Il se rendait.

She was surrendering,
Elle se rendait.

We were surrendering,
Nous nous rendions.

You were surrendering,
Vous vous rendiez.

They were surrendering,
Ils se rendaient *or* Elles se rendaient.

PRETERITE.

I surrendered,
Je me rendis.

Thou surrendered'st,
Tu te rendis.

He surrendered,
Il se rendit.

She surrendered,
Elle se rendit.

We surrendered,
Nous nous rendîmes.

You surrendered,
Vous vous rendîtes.

They surrendered,
Ils *or* Elles se rendirent.

FUTURE SIMPLE.

I shall or *will surrender,*
Je me rendrai.

Thou shalt or *wilt surrender,*
Tu te rendras.

He shall or *will surrender,*
Il se rendra.

She shall or *will surrender,*
Elle se rendra.

We shall or *will surrender,*
Nous nous rendrons.

You shall or *will surrender,*
Vous vous rendrez.

They have surrendered,
Ils se sont rendus *or* Elles se sont rendues.

PLUPERFECT.

I had surrendered,
Je m'étais rendu, *or* ue.

Thou had'st surrendered,
Tu t'étais rendu, *or* ue.

He had surrendered,
Il s'était rendu.

She had surrendered,
Elle s'était rendue.

We had surrendered,
Nous nous étions rendus, *or* ues.

You had surrendered,
Vous vous étiez rendus, *or* ues.

They had surrendered,
Ils s'étaient rendus *or* Elles s'étaient rendues.

PRETERITE ANTERIOR.

I had surrendered,
Je me fus rendu, *or* ue.

Thou had'st surrendered,
Tu te fus rendu, *or* ue.

He had surrendered,
Il se fut rendu.

She had surrendered,
Elle se fut rendue.

We had surrendered,
Nous nous fûmes rendus, *or* ues.

You had surrendered,
Vous vous fûtes rendus, *or* ues.

They had surrendered,
Ils se furent rendus *or* Elles se furent rendues.

FUTURE PAST.

I shall or *will have surrendered,*
Je me serai rendu, *or* ue.

Thou shalt or *wilt have surrendered,*
Tu te seras rendu, *or* ue.

He shall or *will have surrendered,*
Il se sera rendu.

She shall or *will have surrendered,*
Elle se sera rendue.

We shall or *will have surrendered,*
Nous nous serons rendus, *or* ues.

You shall or *will have surrendered,*
Vous vous serez rendus, *or* ues.

They shall or *will surrender,*
Ils se rendront *or* Elles se rendront.

They shall or *will have surrendered,*
Ils se seront rendus *or* Elles se seront rendues.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

I would or *should surrender,*
Je me rendrais.

Thou would'st or *should'st surrender,*
Tu te rendrais.

He would or *should surrender,*
Il se rendrait.

She would or *should surrender,*
Elle se rendrait.

We would or *should surrender,*
Nous nous rendrions.

You would or *should surrender,*
Vous vous rendriez.

They would or *should surrender,*
Ils *or* Elles se rendraient.

PAST.

I would or *should have surrendered,*
Je me serais *or* Je me fusse rendu, *or* ue.

Thou would'st or *should'st have surrendered,*
Tu te serais *or* Tu te fusses rendu, *or* ue.

He would or *should have surrendered,*
Il se serait *or* Il se fût rendu.

She would or *should have surrendered,*
Elle se serait *or* Elle se fût rendue.

We would or *should have surrendered,*
Nous nous serions *or* Nous nous fussions rendus, *or* ues.

You would or *should have surrendered,*
Vous vous seriez *or* Vous vous fussiez rendus, *or* ues.

They would or *should have surrendered,*
Ils se seraient *or* Ils se fussent rendus, *or* Elles se seraient *or* Elles se fussent rendues.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT OR FUTURE.

1. Affirmatively.

Surrender thou,	Rends-toi.
Let him surrender,	Qu'il se rende.
Let her surrender,	Qu'elle se rende.
Let us surrender,	Rendons-nous.
Surrender (ye or you,)	Rendez-vous.
Let them surrender,	Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles se rendent.

2. Negatively.

Do not surrender,	Ne te rends pas.
Let him not surrender,	Qu'il ne se rende pas.
Let her not surrender,	Qu'elle ne se rende pas.
Let us not surrender,	Ne nous rendons pas.
Surrender ye not,	Ne vous rendez pas.
Let them not surrender,	Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles ne se rendent pas.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

That I may surrender,
Que je me rende.

That thou may'st surrender,
Que tu te rendes.

That he may surrender,
Qu'il se rende.

That she may surrender,
Qu'elle se rende.

That we may surrender,
Que nous nous rendions.

That you may surrender,
Que vous vous rendiez.

That they may surrender,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles se rendent.

PRETERITE.

That I may have surrendered,
Que je me sois rendu, *or* ue.

That thou may'st have surrendered,
Que tu te sois rendu, *or* ue.

That he may have surrendered,
Qu'il se soit rendu.

That she may have surrendered,
Qu'elle se soit rendue.

That we may have surrendered,
Que nous nous soyons rendus, *or* ues.

That you may have surrendered,
Que vous vous soyez rendus, *or* ues.

That they may have surrendered,
Qu'ils se soient rendus *or* Qu'elles se soient rendues.

IMPERFECT.

That I might surrender,
Que je me rendisse.

That thou mightest surrender,
Que tu te rendisses.

That he might surrender,
Qu'il se rendît.

That she might surrender,
Qu'elle se rendît.

That we might surrender,
Que nous nous rendissions.

That you might surrender,
Que vous vous rendissiez.

That they might surrender,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles se rendissent.

PLUPERFECT.

That I might have surrendered,
Que je me fusse rendu, *or* ue.

That thou mightest have surrendered,
Que tu te fusses rendu, *or* ue.

That he might have surrendered,
Qu'il se fût rendu.

That she might have surrendered,
Qu'elle se fût rendue.

That we might have surrendered,
Que nous nous fussions rendus, *or* ues.

That you might have surrendered,
Que vous vous fussiez rendus, *or* ues.

That they might have surrendered,
Qu'ils se fussent rendus *or* Qu'elles se fussent rendues.

ADDITIONAL TENSES.

PAST, JUST ELAPSED.

I have just surrendered,
Je viens de me rendre.

Thou hast just surrendered,
Tu viens de te rendre.

He has just surrendered,
Il vient de se rendre.

She has just surrendered,
Elle vient de se rendre.
We have just surrendered,
Nous venons de nous rendre.
You have just surrendered,
Vous venez de vous rendre.
They have just surrendered,
Ils *or* Elles viennent de se rendre.

PAST, ELAPSED BEFORE ANOTHER THING OR ACTION TOOK PLACE.

I had just surrendered,
Je venais de me rendre.
Thou had'st just surrendered,
Tu venais de te rendre.
He had just surrendered,
Il venait de se rendre.
She had just surrendered,
Elle venait de se rendre.
We had just surrendered,
Nous venions de nous rendre.
You had just surrendered,
Vous veniez de vous rendre.
They had just surrendered,
Ils *or* Elles venaient de se rendre.

Observe. — All *Pronominal Verbs* of the Fourth Conjugation, if regular, that is to say, if ending in the Present of the Infinitive in *dre*, in *dant* in the Present Participle, and *du* in the Past Participle, are conjugated after the same manner as *se rendre.*

If any Irregular Verb of either of the Four Conjugations is used in a reflected way, the Pronouns and Negations are used with it, exactly in the same order as for the Regular Verbs, but the Verb follows the terminations of its own Conjugation according to its irregularities.

Almost all Active Verbs can be used in a reflected way.

§. 5.

The following is a list of several Verbs which, though not admitting in English the Pronouns—*oneself, myself, thyself, himself, herself, ourselves, yourselves, themselves,* are *Pronominal* in French.

S'abonner, *to subscribe.*
S'accorder, *to agree.*
S'accouder, *to lean on one's elbow.*
S'attacher à, *to stick to.*
S'abstenir, *to abstain.*
S'asseoir, *to sit down.*
S'aboucher, *to confer.*
S'acharner, *to fall tooth and nail upon.*
S'acheminer, *to set out for.*
S'adresser, *to apply to.*
S'agenouiller, *to kneel down.*
S'allier, *to match* or *to make an alliance.*
S'amender, *to grow better.*
S'apercevoir, *to perceive.*
S'apetisser, *to shrink.*
S'appauvrir, *to grow poor.*
S'appuyer sur, *to lean upon.*
S'arrêter, *to stay, to stop.*

S'assoupir, *to grow drowsy.*
S'attabler, *to sit down at table.*
S'attendre, *to expect.*
S'attendrir, *to be moved.*
S'attrister, *to grieve.*
S'attrouper, *to flock.*
S'avancer, *to move, come* or *go forward.*
S'acquitter, *to discharge.*
Se baigner, *to bathe.*
Se baisser, *to stoop.*
Se coucher, *to go to bed.*
Se complaire, *to delight in.*
Se déborder, *to overflow.*
Se débattre, *to struggle.*
Se dédire, *to recant, to go from one's word.*
Se défier, *to distrust.*
Se dépêcher, *to make haste.*
Se démettre, *to resign, to give up.*
Se désister, *to desist, to give over.*
Se déchaîner, *to break loose.*
Se dégoûter, *to be out of conceit with.*
Se déterminer, *to resolve upon.*
S'en aller, *to go away.*
S'emparer, *to seize upon.*
S'empresser, *to be eager.*
S'endormir, *to fall asleep.*
S'enfuir, *to run away.*
S'enhardir, *to grow bold.*
S'enraciner, *to take root.*
S'enrhumer, *to catch cold.*
S'enrichir, *to grow rich.*
S'entretenir, *to discourse with.*
S'envoler, *to fly away.*
S'épanouir, *to blow.*
S'esquiver, *to steal away.*
S'étonner, *to wonder.*
S'évanouir, *to faint away.*
S'évaporer, *to evaporate.*
S'évertuer, *to exert one's self.*
S'éclipser, *to vanish away.*
S'écouler, *to flow out, to elapse.*
S'efforcer, *to try, to strive.*
S'émerveiller, *to wonder.*
S'emporter, *to fly into a passion.*
S'endetter, *to run into debt.*
S'énivrer, *to get intoxicated.*
S'ennuyer, *to get weary.*
S'énorgueillir, *to grow proud.*
S'énquérir, *to inquire.*
S'entêter, *to take a strong fancy to, to be conceited.*
S'entremettre, *to intermeddle.*
S'étudier, *to make one's study.*
S'évader, *to make one's escape.*
S'expatrier, *to quit one's country.*
Se farder, *to paint.*
Se fier, *to trust.*
Se figurer, *to fancy.*
Se flétrir, *to fade away.*
Se fondre, *to melt.*
Se formaliser, *to take offence.*
Se fâcher, *to be angry.*
Se familiariser, *to grow familiar.*
Se figer, *to congeal.*
Se glisser, *to slip, to creep into.*
Se gangrener, *to gangrene.*
Se garder, *to beware.*
Se guérir, *to heal.*
Se hâter, *to make haste.*
S'impatienter, *to grow impatient.*
S'imaginer, *to fancy.*
S'ingérer, *to intermeddle.*
Se lever, *to rise.*
Se lasser, *to grow tired.*
Se liquéfier, *to become liquid.*
Se liguer, *to league.*
Se marier, *to marry.*
Se méfier, *to mistrust.*
Se méprendre, *to mistake.*
Se moquer, *to laugh at.*
Se mutiner, *to mutiny.*
Se mêler, *to meddle with.*
Se mourir, *to die.*
S'opposer, *to oppose.*
S'obstiner, *to be obstinate.*
S'opiniâtrer, *to be obstinately resolved.*
Se plaire, *to take delight in.*
Se piquer, *to be offended.*
Se plaindre, *to complain.*
Se promener, *to walk.*
Se paraliser, *to get palsied.*
Se putréfier, *to putrify.*
Se réjouir, *to rejoice.*
Se répentir, *to repent.*
Se reposer, *to rest.*
Se ressouvenir, *to remember.*
Se révolter, *to rebel.*
Se radoucir, *to grow mild.*
Se reconnaître, *to repent.*
Se récrier, *to exclaim.*
Se réfugier, *to take refuge.*
Se remplumer, *to new feather, to begin to thrive.*
Se rendormir, *to fall asleep again.*
Se renouveler, *to renew.*
Se résoudre, *to resolve.*
Se retirer, *to withdraw.*
Se rétracter, *to retract.*
Se roidir, *to withstand, to stiffen.*
Se rendre, *to surrender.*
Se saisir, *to seize, to lay hold of.*
Se soumettre, *to submit.*
Se souvenir, *to remember.*
Se soucier, *to care for.*
Se taire, *to be silent.*
Se terminer, *to end.*
Se vanter, *to boast.*
Se vendre, *to sell.*

Note.—There are several other Verbs besides the above which do not admit the Pronouns *oneself, himself,* &c. in English, and which are, however, Pronominal in French; but, as it would be too long to quote them here, we shall leave them to be learnt by practice and with the assistance of a good dictionary.

ARTICLE IX.

Of Pronominal Unipersonal Verbs.

Pronominal Unipersonal Verbs are generally Active Verbs used in the Third Person Singular only of their different Tenses, with one of the Pronouns *il*, it; *ceci*, this; *cela*, that; *celui-ci, celle-ci*, this one; *celui-là, celle-là*, that one; followed by *se;* or a Substantive likewise followed by *se*, for antecedent: as—*Ce drap se vend-il bien? Non, il ne se vend pas*, Does that cloth sell well? No, it does not sell at all. *Je crains que celui-ci ne se vende pas mieux*, I am afraid that this will not sell better.

But if those Verbs had for antecedent a Pronoun Plural: as—*ceux-ci, celles-ci*, these; *ceux-là, celles-là*, those; or a Substantive in the Plural: as—*Ces marchandises-ci*, these goods, followed also by *se*, as above, they should then be put in the Third Person Plural of their different Tenses: as—*Ces marchandises-ci se vendront bien, mais celles-là ne se vendront pas si bien*, these goods will sell well, but those will not sell so well.

The following example of *Pronominal Unipersonal Verbs* is of the Fourth Conjugation. We shall confine ourselves to it, persuaded that, the four ways in which a Verb can be used being introduced into it, the pupil will, with its assistance, easily understand the variations of any other *Pronominal Unipersonal Verb*, whatever may be its Conjugation, the Pronouns and Negations always coming in the same order, but the Verb taking the terminations of its own Conjugation.

§. 1.

Conjugation of Pronominal Unipersonal Verbs.

Se vendre, to sell.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Simple Tenses.	Compound Tenses.
PRESENT.	PRETERITE.
To sell, Se vendre.	*To have sold,* S'être vendu.
PRESENT PARTICIPLE.	PRESENT PARTICIPLE COMPOUND.
Selling, Se vendant.	*Having sold,* S'étant vendu.
PAST PARTICIPLE.	PARTICIPLE FUTURE.
Sold, Vendu.	*Being to sell,* Devant se vendre.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

It sells or *there is selling,*
Il se vend.
It does not sell,
Il ne se vend pas.
Does it sell?
Se vend-il ?
Does it not sell?
Ne se vend-il pas ?

PRETERITE INDEFINITE.

It has sold,
Il s'est vendu.
It has not sold,
Il ne s'est pas vendu.
Has it sold?
S'est-il vendu?
Has it not sold?
Ne s'est-il pas vendu?

IMPERFECT.

It was selling,
Il se vendait.
It was not selling,
Il ne se vendait pas.
Was it selling?
Se vendait-il ?
Was it not selling?
Ne se vendait-il pas ?

PLUPERFECT.

It had sold,
Il s'était vendu.
It had not sold,
Il ne s'était pas vendu.
Had it sold?
S'était-il vendu ?
Had it not sold?
Ne s'était-il pas vendu ?

PRETERITE.

It sold,
Il se vendit.
It sold not,
Il ne se vendit pas.
Did it sell?
Se vendit-il ?
Did it not sell?
Ne se vendit-il pas ?

PRETERITE ANTERIOR.

It had sold,
Il se fut vendu.
It had not sold,
Il ne se fut pas vendu.
Had it sold?
Se fut-il vendu ?
Had it not sold?
Ne se fut-il pas vendu ?

FUTURE SIMPLE.

It shall or *will sell,*
Il se vendra.
It shall or *will not sell,*
Il ne se vendra pas.
Shall or *will it sell ?*
Se vendra-t-il ?
Shall or *will it not sell?*
Ne se vendra-t-il pas ?

FUTURE PAST.

It shall or *will have sold,*
Il se sera vendu.
It shall or *will not have sold,*
Il ne se sera pas vendu.
Shall or *will it have sold ?*
Se sera-t-il vendu ?
Shall or *will it not have sold ?*
Ne se sera-t-il pas vendu ?

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

It would or *should sell,*
Il se vendrait.

PAST.

It would or *should have sold,*
Il se serait *or* Il se fût vendu.

It would or should not sell,	*It would or should not have sold,*
Il ne se vendrait pas.	Il ne se serait pas *or* Il ne se fût pas vendu.
Would or should it sell?	*Would or should it have sold?*
Se vendrait-il?	Se serait-il *or* Se fût-il vendu?
Would or should it not sell?	*Would or should it not have sold?*
Ne se vendrait-il pas?	Ne se serait-il pas *or* Ne se fût-il pas vendu?

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.	PRETERITE.
That it may sell,	*That it may have sold,*
Qu'il se vende.	Qu'il se soit vendu.
That it may not sell,	*That it may not have sold,*
Qu'il ne se vende pas.	Qu'il ne se soit pas vendu.

IMPERFECT.	PLUPERFECT.
That it might sell,	*That it might have sold,*
Qu'il se vendît.	Qu'il se fût vendu.
That it might not sell,	*That it might not have sold,*
Qu'il ne se vendît pas.	Qu'il ne se fût pas vendu.

Observe.—The *Present* and *Preterite* of the Infinitive of *Pronominal Unipersonal Verbs* may be used with another Verb, as follows:—*Ceci pourra se vendre,* this may sell; *cela aurait pu s'être vendu,* that might have sold. As to the *Participles,* they accord well with a Demonstrative Pronoun or a Substantive: as—*Ceci se vendant à ...* this selling at ...; *cela s'étant vendu à ...* that having sold at ...; *cet article devant se vendre à ...,* that article being to sell at ...

ARTICLE X.

VERBS ENDING IN THE PRESENT OF THE INFINITIVE IN *ayer, eyer, oyer, uyer, cer, éer, ger, ier, eler, eter,* AND *uer.*

The *y* of the Infinitive, in Verbs ending in *ayer, eyer, oyer,* and *uyer:* as—*Payer,* to pay; *grasseyer,* to lisp; *nettoyer,* to clean; *essuyer,* to wipe; is changed into *i* in those Tenses in which it comes before the termination *e, es,* or *ent* mute; which takes place in the *three first persons singular* and in *the third plural* of the *Present of the Indicative;* in all the persons of both *the Future* and *Conditional;* in the *second* and *third persons singular,* and in *the third plural* of the *Imperative;* in the *three first persons singular,* and in *the third plural* of the *present of the Subjunctive:* as—*Je paie, tu paies, il paie; ils* or *elles paient; je paierai* &c.; *je paierais,* &c.; *paie, qu'il paie, qu'ils* or *qu'elles paient; que je paie, que tu paies,* &c. and

not—*je paye, tu payes*, &c. But it is preserved before any other termination: as—*Nous payons, vous payez*, &c. &c.

In the above Verbs, and, in general, in all those of which the *Present Participle* ends in *yant*: as—*Croire, croyant; voir, voyant; fuir, fuyant; s'asseoir, s'asseyant*, &c. Both a *y* and an *i* are required at the two first persons plural of the Imperfect of the Indicative, and of the Present of the Subjunctive: as—*Nous payions, vous payiez; nous croyions, vous croyiez; que nous payions, que vous payiez; que nous croyions, que vous croyiez*, &c.

In Verbs ending in *cer*: as—*sucer*, to suck, a cedilla (¸) is required under the *c* in those Tenses in which it comes before *a* or *o*, in order to preserve its soft pronunciation of *s*: as—*suçant; je suçais, il suçait*, &c.

Verbs ending in *éer*, as—*Agréer*, to accept of, are spelled with one *e* only in those Tenses in which the termination begins by *a*, *o*, or *i*, as—*Agréant; j'agréais*, &c. and not *agréeant, j'agréeais*. But when the termination begins by any other letter, the two *e*'s of the Infinitive are preserved, as—*j'agréerais, tu agréerais*, &c.

In Verbs ending in *ger*, as—*Manger*, to eat, an *e* mute is required after *g* in those Tenses in which it comes before *a* or *o*, in order to preserve its soft pronunciation of *j*, as—*Mangeant; je mangeais*, &c. and not *mangant, je mangais*.

Verbs ending in *ier*, as—*Prier*, to pray, require two *i*'s at the two first persons plural of the Imperfect of the Indicative, and of the Present of the Subjunctive, that is to say, the *i* of the radical part of the Verb and that of the termination, thus—*Nous priions, vous priiez; que nous priions, que vous priiez*.

Verbs ending in *uer*, as *jouer*, to play, require a diæresis (¨) over the *i* at the two first persons plural of the Imperfect of the Indicative, and of the Present of the Subjunctive, as—*Nous jouïons, vous jouïez; que nous jouïons, que vous jouïez*.

The *l* and the *t* are generally doubled in Verbs ending in *eler* and *eter*, as—*Appeler*, to call, and *jeter*, to throw; before *e, es*, or *ent*, mute, as—*J'appelle, tu appelles, il appelle, ils* or *elles appellent; je jette, tu jettes, il jette, ils* or *elles jettent*, &c. But they are not doubled when they come before any other termination, as—*Nous appelons, vous appelez; nous jetons, vous jetez*, &c.

There are, however, a few exceptions annexed to the Conjugations of the above Verbs.

§. 1.

Conjugation of Verbs ending in *ayer*; as—
Payer, to pay.

Infinitive. Payer, *to pay*; payant, *paying*; payé, *paid*.
Avoir payé, ayant payé.

Ind. Pres. Je paie,	tu paies,	il *ou* elle paie;
Nous payons,	vous payez,	ils *ou* elles paient.

Imp.	Je payais,	tu payais,	il *ou* elle payait;
	Nous payions,	vous payiez,	ils *ou* elles payaient.
Pret.	Je payai,	tu payas,	il *ou* elle paya;
	Nous payâmes,	vous payâtes,	ils *ou* elles payèrent.
Fut.	Je paierai,	tu paieras,	il *ou* elle paiera;
	Nous paierons,	vous paierez,	ils *ou* elles paieront.
Cond. Pres.	Je paierais,	tu paierais,	il *ou* elle paierait;
	Nous paierions,	vous paieriez,	ils *ou* elles paieraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	paie,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle paie;
	Payons,	payez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles paient.
Sub. Pres.	Que je paie,	que tu paies,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle paie;
	Que nous payions,	que vous payiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles paient.
Imp.	Que je payasse,	que tu payasses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle payât;
	Que nous payassions,	que vous payassiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles payassent.

Conjugate after the same manner all Verbs ending in *ayer* and *eyer* in the Present of the Infinitve Mood: as—*Bégayer*, to stammer; *essayer*, to try; *effrayer*, to frighten; *bayer*, to gape; *grasseyer*, to lisp, &c. &c.

---

§. 2.

Conjugation of Verbs ending in *oyer*; as—*Nettoyer*, to clean.

Infinitive. Nettoyer, *to clean*; nettoyant, *cleaning*; Nettoyé, *cleaned.*
Avoir nettoyé, ayant nettoyé.

Ind. Pres.	Je nettoie,	tu nettoies,	il *ou* elle nettoie;
	Nous nettoyons,	vous nettoyez,	ils *ou* elles nettoient.
Imp.	Je nettoyais,	tu nettoyais,	il *ou* elle nettoyait;
	Nous nettoyions,	vous nettoyiez,	ils *ou* elles nettoyaient.
Pret.	Je nettoyai,	tu nettoyas,	il *ou* elle nettoya;
	Nous nettoyâmes,	vous nettoyâtes,	ils *ou* elles nettoyèrent.
Fut.	Je nettoierai,	tu nettoieras,	il *ou* elle nettoiera;
	Nous nettoierons,	vous nettoierez,	ils *ou* elles nettoieront.
Cond. Pres.	Je nettoierais,	tu nettoierais,	il *ou* elle nettoierait;
	Nous nettoierions,	vous nettoieriez,	ils *ou* elles nettoieraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	nettoie,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle nettoie;
	Nettoyons,	nettoyez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles nettoient.
Sub. Pres.	Que je nettoie,	que tu nettoies,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle nettoie;
	Que nous nettoyions,	que vous nettoyiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles nettoient.
Imp.	Que je nettoyasse,	que tu nettoyasses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle nettoyât;
	Que nous nettoyassions,	que vous nettoyassiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles nettoyassent.

Conjugate after the same manner all Verbs ending in *oyer* in the Present of the Infinitive Mood: such as—*Déployer*, to display; *aboyer*, to bark; *côtoyer*, to coast along; *employer*, to employ, &c.

Envoyer, to send, and *renvoyer*, to send back, differ in the Future and Conditional, making—*J'enverrai*, &c. *j'enverrais*, &c. *je renverrai*, &c. *je renverrais*, &c. and not—*J'envoyerai, j'envoyerais ; je renvoyerai, je renvoyerais*, &c.

---

§. 3.

Conjugation of Verbs in *uyer*; as—*Essuyer*, to wipe.

Infinitive. Essuyer, *to wipe ;* essuyant, *wiping ;* essuyé, *wiped.*
Avoir essuyé, ayant essuyé.

Ind. Pres.	J'essuie,	tu essuies,	il *ou* elle essuie ;
	Nous essuyons,	vous essuyez,	ils *ou* elles essuient.
Imp.	J'essuyais,	tu essuyais,	il *ou* elle essuyait ;
	Nous essuyions,	vous essuyiez,	ils *ou* elles essuyaient.
Pret.	J'essuyai,	tu essuyas,	il *ou* elle essuya ;
	Nous essuyâmes,	vous essuyâtes,	ils *ou* elles essuyèrent.
Fut.	J'essuierai,	tu essuieras,	il *ou* elle essuiera ;
	Nous essuierons,	vous essuierez,	ils *ou* elles essuieront.
Cond. Pres.	J'essuierais,	tu essuierais,	il *ou* elle essuierait ;
	Nous essuierions,	vous essuieriez,	ils *ou* elles essuieraient.
Imperative.	[*No* 1*st person.*]	essuie,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle essuie;
	Essuyons,	essuyez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles essuient.
Sub. Pres.	Que j'essuie,	que tu essuies,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle essuie ;
	Que nous essuyions,	que vous essuyiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles essuient.
Imp.	Que j'essuyasse,	que tu essuyasses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle essuyât ;
	Que nous essuyassions,	que vous essuyassiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles essuyassent.

Conjugate after the same manner all Verbs ending in *uyer*, as—*Appuyer*, to prop, to support ; *ennuyer*, to tire, &c. &c.

---

§. 4.

Conjugation of Verbs in *cer* ; as—*Commencer*, to begin, to commence.

Infinitive. Commencer, *to begin ;* commençant, *beginning ;* commencé, *began.*
Avoir commencé, ayant commencé.

Ind. Pres.	Je commence,	tu commences,	il *ou* elle commence ;
	Nous commençons,	vous commencez,	ils *ou* elles commencent.

Imp.	Je commençais,	tu commençais,	il *ou* elle commençait;
	Nous commencions,	vous commenciez,	ils *ou* elles commençaient.
Pret.	Je commençai,	tu commenças,	il *ou* elle commença;
	Nous commençâmes,	vous commençâtes,	ils *ou* elles commencèrent.
Fut.	Je commencerai,	tu commenceras,	il *ou* elle commencera;
	Nous commencerons,	vous commencerez,	ils *ou* elles commenceront.
Cond.Pres.	Je commencerais,	tu commencerais,	il *ou* elle commencerait;
	Nous commencerions,	vous commenceriez,	ils *ou* elles commenceraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	commence,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle commence;
	Commençons,	commencez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles commencent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je commence,	que tu commences,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle commence;
	Que nous commencions,	que vous commenciez	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles commencent.
Imp.	Que je commençasse,	que tu commençasses	qu'il *ou* qu'elle commençât;
	Que nous commençassions,	que vous commençassiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles commençassent.

Conjugate, after the same manner, all Verbs ending in *cer:* as—*Sucer,* to suck; *annoncer,* to announce; *avancer,* to advance, to get on; *devancer,* to outrun, to leave behind; *énoncer,* to utter; *pincer,* to pinch; *amorcer,* to bait; *bercer,* to rock; *délacer,* to unlace; *dépécer,* to cut up, to carve; *enfoncer,* to break open, to sink; *rincer,* to rinse, &c. &c.

---

§. 5.

Conjugation of Verbs in *éer;* as—*Agréer,* to accept of.

Infinitive. Agréer, *to accept of;* agréant, *accepting;* agréé, *accepted.*
Avoir agréé, ayant agréé.

Ind. Pres.	J'agrée,	tu agrées,	il *ou* elle agrée;
	Nous agréons,	vous agréez,	ils *ou* elles agréent.
Imp.	J'agréais,	tu agréais,	il *ou* elle agréait;
	Nous agréions,	vous agréiez,	ils *ou* elles agréaient.
Pret.	J'agréai,	tu agréas,	il *ou* elle agréa;
	Nous agréâmes,	vous agréâtes,	ils *ou* elles agréèrent.
Fut.	J'agréerai,	tu agréeras,	il *ou* elle agréera;
	Nous agréerons,	vous agréerez,	ils *ou* elles agréeront.
Cond.Pres.	J'agréerais,	tu agréerais,	il *ou* elle agréerait;
	Nous agréerions,	vous agréeriez,	ils *ou* elles agréeraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	agrée,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle agrée;
	Agréons,	agréez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles agréent.
Sub. Pres.	Que j'agrée,	que tu agrées,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle agrée;
	Que nous agréions,	que vous agréiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles agréent.
Imp.	Que j'agréasse,	que tu agréasses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle agréât;
	Que nous agréassions,	que vous agréassiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles agréassent.

Conjugate, after the same manner, all Verbs in *éer:* as—*Créer,* to create; *désagréer,* to displease, to dislike; *récréer,* to recreate; *suppléer,* to supply, &c.

The *Past Participle* of those Verbs takes three *e*'s in the *Feminine:* as—*Agréée;* and the Future and Conditional are commonly written with one only in poetry :—

Votre cœur d'Ardaric *agrérait*-il la flamme ?
CORNEILLE.

Nos hôtes *agréront* les soins qui leur sont dûs.
LA FONTAINE.

---

§. 6.

CONJUGATION OF VERBS IN *ger;* as—*Manger*, to eat.

Infinitive. Manger, *to eat ;* mangeant, *eating ;* mangé, *eaten.*
Avoir mangé, ayant mangé.

Ind. Pres.	Je mange, Nous mangeons,	tu manges, vous mangez,	il *ou* elle mange ; ils *ou* elles mangent.
Imp.	Je mangeais, Nous mangions,	tu mangeais, vous mangiez,	il *ou* elle mangeait ; ils *ou* elles mangeaient.
Pret.	Je mangeai, Nous mangeâmes,	tu mangeas, vous mangeâtes,	il *ou* elle mangea ; ils *ou* elles mangèrent.
Fut.	Je mangerai, Nous mangerons,	tu mangeras, vous mangerez,	il *ou* elle mangera ; ils *ou* elles mangeront.
Cond. Pres.	Je mangerais, Nous mangerions,	tu mangerais, vous mangeriez,	il *ou* elle mangerait ; ils *ou* elles mangeraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*] Mangeons,	mange, mangez,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle mange ; qu'ils *ou* qu'elles mangent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je mange, Que nous mangions,	que tu manges, que vous mangiez,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle mange ; qu'ils *ou* qu'elles mangent.
Imp.	Que je mangeasse, Que nous mangeassions,	que tu mangeasses, que vous mangeassiez,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle mangeât ; qu'ils *ou* qu'elles mangeassent.

Conjugate after the same manner all Verbs ending in *ger:* as—*arranger*, to set in order, to arrange ; *abréger*, to abridge ; *bouger*, to stir ; *corriger*, to correct ; *déranger*, to disorder ; *diriger*, to direct ; *dégager*, to disengage ; *encourager*, to encourage ; *engager*, to engage ; *gager*, to bet ; *juger*, to judge ; *ménager*, to manage ; *partager*, to partake of ; *ronger*, to gnaw ; *songer*, to think ; *venger*, to revenge ; *négliger*, to neglect, &c. &c.

§. 7.

Conjugation of Verbs in *ier*; as—*Prier*, to pray.

Infinitive. Prier, *to pray;* priant, *praying;* prié, *prayed.*
Avoir prié, ayant prié.

Ind. Pres.	Je prie, Nous prions,	tu pries, vous priez,	il *ou* elle prie; ils *ou* elles prient.
Imp.	Je priais, Nous priions,	tu priais, vous priiez,	il *ou* elle priait; ils *ou* elles priaient.
Pret.	Je priai, Nous priâmes,	tu prias, vous priâtes,	il *ou* elle pria; ils *ou* elles prièrent.
Fut.	Je prierai, Nous prierons,	tu prieras, vous prierez,	il *ou* elle priera; ils *ou* elles prieront.
Cond. Pres.	Je prierais, Nous prierions,	tu prierais, vous prieriez,	il *ou* elle prierait; ils *ou* elles prieraient.
Imperative.	[*No* 1*st person.*] Prions,	prie, priez,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle prie; qu'ils *ou* qu'elles prient.
Sub. Pres.	Que je prie, Que nous priions,	que tu pries, que vous priiez,	qu'il *ou* quelle prie; qu'ils *ou* qu'elles prient.
Imp.	Que je priasse, Que nous priassions,	que tu priasses, que vous priassiez,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle priât; qu'ils *ou* qu'elles priassent.

Conjugate after the same manner all Verbs in *ier:* as—*crier*, to cry; *certifier*, to certify; *décrier*, to cry down; *délier*, to untie; *étudier*, to study; *oublier*, to forget; *nier*, to deny; *plier*, to bend; *relier*, to bind, &c. &c.

---

§. 8.

Conjugation of Verbs in *eler*; as—*Appeler*, to call.

Infinitive. Appeler, *to call;* appelant, *calling;* appelé, *called.*
Avoir appelé, ayant appelé.

Ind. Pres.	J'appelle, Nous appelons,	tu appelles, vous appelez,	il *ou* elle appelle; ils *ou* elles appellent.
Imp.	J'appelais, Nous appelions,	tu appelais, vous appeliez,	il *ou* elle appelait; ils *ou* elles appelaient.
Pret.	J'appelai, Nous appelâmes,	tu appelas, vous appelâtes,	il *ou* elle appela; ils *ou* elles appelèrent.
Fut.	J'appellerai, Nous appellerons,	tu appelleras, vous appellerez,	il *ou* elle appellera; ils *ou* elles appelleront.
Cond. Pres.	J'appellerais, Nous appellerions,	tu appellerais, vous appelleriez,	il *ou* elle appellerait; ils *ou* elles appelleraient.

Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	appelle,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle appelle ;
	Appelons,	appelez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles appellent.
Sub. Pres.	Que j'appelle,	que tu appelles,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle appelle ;
	Que nous appelions,	que vous appeliez,	qu'ils *ou* quelles appellent.
Imp.	Que j'appelasse,	que tu appelasses,	qu'il *ou* quelle appelât ;
	Que nous appelassions,	que vous appelassiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles appelassent.

Conjugate after the same manner all Verbs in *eler:* as—*atteler*, to put horses to; *amonceler*, to heap up; *chanceler*, to totter; *dételer*, to unyoke; *étinceler*, to sparkle; *niveler*, to level; *rappeler*, to recall; *renouveler*, to renew; *ficeler*, to cord, to bind with packthread, &c.

The following, *bourreler*, to torment, to rack; *congeler*, to congeal; *déceler*, to detect; *dégeler*, to thaw; *geler*, to freeze; *harceler*, to teaze, to torment; *peler*, to peal; *recéler*, to secrete; *regeler*, to freeze again; must be excepted: instead of doubling the *l* they take a grave accent over the *e*, which precedes it in those Tenses in which it comes before *e*, *es*, or *ent* mute: as—*Il gèle*, it freezes; *il gèlera*, it will freeze; *il dégèle*, it thaws; *ils pèlent*, they peal, &c. &c. and not *ill gelle, il degelle, &c.*

---

§. 9.

CONJUGATION OF VERBS IN *eter:* as—*Jeter*, to throw.

Infinitive. Jeter, *to throw;* jetant, *throwing;* jeté, *thrown.*
Avoir jeté, ayant jeté.

Ind. Pret.	Je jette,	tu jettes,	il *ou* elle jette ;
	Nous jetons,	vous jetez,	ils *ou* elles jettent.
Imp.	Je jetais,	tu jetais,	il *ou* elle jetait ;
	Nous jetions,	vous jetiez,	ils *ou* elles jetaient.
Pret.	Je jetai,	tu jetas,	il *ou* elle jeta ;
	Nous jetâmes,	vous jetâtes,	ils *ou* elles jetèrent..
Fut.	Je jetterai,	tu jetteras,	il *ou* elle jettera ;
	Nous jetterons,	vous jetterez,	ils *ou* elles jetteront.
Cond.Pres.	Je jetterais,	tu jetterais,	il *ou* elle jetterait.
	Nous jetterions,	vous jetteriez,	ils *ou* elles jetteraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	jette,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle jette ;
	Jetons,	jetez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles jettent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je jette,	que tu jettes,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle jette.
	Que nous jetions,	que vous jetiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles jettent.
Imp.	Que je jetasse,	que tu jetasses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle jétât ;
	Que nous jetassions,	que vous jetassiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles jetassent.

Conjugate after the same manner the Verbs *projeter*, to project; *cacheter*, to seal; and in general all those ending in *eter* in the Infinitive Mood, except *acheter*, to buy; *colleter*, to collar; *coqueter*, to coquet; *décolleter*, to make bare, to uncover the breast; *étiqueter*, to ticket; *suracheter*, to overbuy; *trompeter*, to trumpet; which instead of doubling the *t*, take a grave accent (`) over the *e* which precedes

it, in those Tenses in which it comes before *e, es,* or *ent* mute: as—*J'achète, tu achètes, il achète, ils* or *elles achètent,* &c. &c. and not *j'achette, tu achettes,* &c.

Verbs ending in *écer, emer, ener, ever, evrer:* as—*Dépécer,* to carve; *semer,* to sow; *mener,* to take, to lead; *achever,* to finish; *sevrer,* to wean, take likewise a grave accent (`) over the *e* which precedes *c, m, n,* or *v,* before *e, es,* or *ent,* mute, instead of doubling them: as—*Je mène, tu mènes, il mène, ils* or *elles mènent; je mènerai,* &c. *je mènerais,* &c. and not *je menne, tu mennes,* &c.

Verbs ending in *ébrer,* as *célébrer,* to celebrate; *écer,* as *rapiécer,* to piece; *écher,* as *lécher,* to lick; *éder,* as *posséder,* to possess; *égler,* as *régler,* to regulate; *égner,* as *régner,* to reign; *égrer,* as *réintégrer,* to reintegrate; *éguer,* as *alléguer,* to allege; *éler,* as *révéler,* to reveal; *émer,* as *blasphémer,* to blaspheme; *éner,* as *aliéner,* to alienate; *équer,* as *hypothéquer,* to mortgage; *érer,* as *espérer,* to hope; *éter,* as *inquiéter,* to make uneasy; *étrer,* as *pénétrer,* to penetrate; change the acute accent which precedes the first consonant of the last syllable in the Infinitive, into a grave one before *e, es,* or *ent*: as—*J'espère, tu espères, il espère, ils* or *elles espèrent; j'espèrerai,* &c. *j'espèrerais,* &c. *que j'espère, que tu espères,* &c. &c.

---

§. 10.

Conjugation of Verbs in *uer;* as—*Jouer,* to play.

Infinitive. Jouer, *to play;* jouant, *playing;* joué, *played.*
Avoir joué, ayant joué.

Ind. Pres.	Je joue, Nous jouons,	tu joues, vous jouez,	il *ou* elle joue; ils *ou* elles jouent.
Imp.	Je jouais, Nous jouïons,	tu jouais, vous jouïez,	il *ou* elle jouait; ils *ou* elles jouaient.
Pret.	Je jouai, Nous jouâmes,	tu jouas, vous jouâtes,	il *ou* elle joua; ils *ou* elles jouèrent.
Fut.	Je jouerai, Nous jouerons,	tu joueras, vous jouerez,	il *ou* elle jouera; ils *ou* elles joueront.
Cond. Pres.	Je jouerais, Nous jouerions,	tu jouerais, vous joueriez,	il *ou* elle jouerait; ils *ou* elles joueraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*] Jouons,	joue, jouez,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle joue; qu'ils *ou* qu'elles jouent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je joue, Que nous jouïons,	que tu joues, que vous jouïez,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle joue; qu'ils *ou* qu'elles jouent.
Imp.	Que je jouasse, Que nous jouassions,	que tu jouasses, que vous jouassiez,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle jouât; qu'ils *ou* qu'elles jouassent.

Conjugate after the same manner all Verbs ending in *uer;* as—*Arguer,* to argue; *contribuer,* to contribute; *distribuer,* to distribute; *dénouer,* to untie; *déclouer,* to unnail; *échouer,* to run aground;

secouer, to shake off; *trouer*, to make a hole; *attribuer*, to attribute, &c. &c.

The Neuter Verb *puer*, to stink, is only used in the *Present* of the Infinitive, and in the *Present*, *Imperfect*, and *Future* of the Indicative, and at the *Conditional*; we say—*Je pue, tu pues, il* ou *elle pue*, &c.

A diæresis (¨) is required over the *e* in the Verb *arguer*, in the Tenses in which it is mute; as in—*J'arguë, tu arguës, il arguë*, &c. *j'arguërais, tu arguërais*, &c. &c.

Observe.—When, in Verbs of the First Conjugation, the termination *er* of the Infinitive is preceded by another Vowel, as in the Verbs *prier*, to pray; *jouer*, to play; *avouer*, to confess, &c. the *e* of the termination may be preserved or suppressed, in poetry, in the Future and Conditional, but, if it is suppressed, a circumflex accent (^) must be put over the Vowel preceding it: as—*Je jouerai* or *joûrai*; *j'avouerai* or *j'avoûrai*; *j'arguërai* or *j'argûrai*; *j'appuierais* or *j'appuîrais*; *je prierais* or *je prîrais*, &c.

ARTICLE XI.

IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS.

Irregular Verbs are those the terminations of some of whose Tenses differ from those of the Verbs which serve as models to the Four Regular Conjugations.

Defective Verbs are those in which some Tenses or Persons, not admitted by use, are wanting.

However great the irregularity of a Verb, its anomalies never occur but in the Simple Tenses, the Compound being always Regular.

The only Irregular Verbs of the First Conjugation are—*Aller*, to go, *s'en aller*, to go away; *envoyer*, to send; and *renvoyer*, to send back: and the *Defective Unipersonal*:—*Neiger*, to snow; *grêler*, to hail; *bruiner*, to drizzle; *tonner*, to thunder; *éclairer*, to lighten; *résulter*, to result; *geler*, to freeze; *dégeler*, to thaw.

---

§. 1.

FIRST CONJUGATION;—*Aller*, to go. NEUTER VERB.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.	COMPOUND TENSES.
PRESENT.	PRETERITE.
To go,	*To have or to be gone*,
Aller.	Etre allé.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

Going,
Allant.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE COMPOUND.

Having or *being gone,*
Etant allé.

PAST PARTICIPLE.

Gone,
Allé.

PARTICIPLE FUTURE.

Being to go,
Devant aller.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

I go or *am going,*
Je vais.

Thou goest or *art going,*
Tu vas.

He goes or *is going,*
Il va.

She goes or *is going,*
Elle va.

We go or *are going,*
Nous allons.

You go or *are going,*
Vous allez.

They go or *are going,*
Ils *or* Elles vont.

PRETERITE INDEFINITE.

I have or *am gone,*
Je suis allé, *or* allée.

Thou hast or *art gone,*
Tu es allé, *or* allée.

He has or *is gone,*
Il est allé.

She has or *is gone,*
Elle est allée.

We have or *are gone,*
Nous sommes allés, *or* allées.

You have or *are gone,*
Vous êtes allés, *or* allées.

They have or *are gone,*
Ils sont allés *or* Elles sont allées.

IMPERFECT.

I was going,
J'allais.

Thou wast going,
Tu allais.

He was going,
Il allait.

She was going,
Elle allait.

We were going,
Nous allions.

You were going,
Vous alliez.

They were going,
Ils *or* Elles allaient.

PLUPERFECT.

I had or *was gone,*
J'étais allé, *or* allée.

Thou had'st or *wast gone,*
Tu étais allé, *or* allée.

He had or *was gone,*
Il était allé.

She had or *was gone,*
Elle était allée.

We had or *were gone,*
Nous étions allés, *or* allées.

You had or *were gone,*
Vous étiez allés, *or* allées.

They had or *were gone,*
Ils étaient allés *or* Elles étaient allées.

PRETERITE.

I went,
J'allai.

PRETERITE ANTERIOR.

I had or *was gone,*
Je fus allé, *or* allée.

Thou wentest,
Tu allas.

He went,
Il alla.

She went,
Elle alla.

We went,
Nous allâmes.

You went,
Vous allâtes.

They went,
Ils *or* Elles allèrent.

Thou had'st or *was gone,*
Tu fus allé, *or* allée.

He had or *was gone,*
Il fut allé.

She had or *was gone,*
Elle fut allée.

We had or *were gone,*
Nous fûmes allés, *or* allées.

You had or *were gone,*
Vous fûtes allés, *or* allées.

They had or *were gone,*
Ils furent allés *or* Elles furent allées.

FUTURE SIMPLE.

I shall or *will go,*
J'irai.

Thou shalt or *wilt go,*
Tu iras.

He shall or *will go,*
Il ira.

She shall or *will go,*
Elle ira.

We shall or *will go,*
Nous irons.

You shall or *will go,*
Vous irez.

They shall or *will go,*
Ils *or* Elles iront.

FUTURE PAST.

I shall or *will have gone,*
Je serai allé, *or* allée.

Thou shalt or *wilt have gone,*
Tu seras allé, *or* allée.

He shall or *will have gone,*
Il sera allé.

She shall or *will have gone,*
Elle sera allée.

We shall or *will have gone,*
Nous serons allés, *or* allées.

You shall or *will have gone,*
Vous serez allés, *or* allées.

They shall or *will have gone,*
Ils seront allés *or* Elles seront allées.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

I would or *should go,*
J'irais.

Thou would'st or *should'st go,*
Tu irais.

He would or *should go,*
Il irait.

She would or *should go,*
Elle irait.

We would or *should go,*
Nous irions.

You would or *should go,*
Vous iriez.

PAST.

I would or *should have gone,*
Je serais *or* Je fusse allé, *or* allée.

Thou would'st or *should'st have gone,*
Tu serais *or* Tu fusses allé, *or* allée.

He would or *should have gone,*
Il serait *or* Il fût allé.

She would or *should have gone,*
Elle serait *or* Elle fût allée.

We would or *should have gone,*
Nous serions *or* Nous fussions allés, *or* allées.

You would or *should have gone,*
Vous seriez *or* Vous fussiez allés, *or* allées.

They would or should go,
Ils iraient *or* Elles iraient.

They would or should have gone,
Ils seraient *or* Ils fussent allés, *or* Elles seraient *or* Elles fussent allées.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT OR FUTURE.

Go, or go thou,	Va.
Let him go,	Qu'il aille.
Let her go,	Qu'elle aille.
Let us go,	Allons.
Go (ye or you,)	Allez.
Let them go,	Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles aillent.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

That I may go,
Que j'aille.
That thou may'st go,
Que tu ailles.
That he may go,
Qu'il aille.
That she may go,
Qu'elle aille.
That we may go,
Que nous allions.
That you may go,
Que vous alliez.
That they may go,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles aillent.

PRETERITE.

That I may have gone,
Que je sois allé, *or* allée.
That thou may'st have gone,
Que tu sois allé, *or* allée.
That he may have gone,
Qu'il soit allé.
That she may have gone,
Qu'elle soit allée.
That we may have gone,
Que nous soyons allés, *or* allées.
That you may have gone,
Que vous soyez allés, *or* allées.
That they may have gone,
Qu'ils soient allés *or* Qu'elles soient allées.

IMPERFECT.

That I might go,
Que j'allasse.
That thou mightest go,
Que tu allasses.
That he might go,
Qu'il allât.
That she might go,
Qu'elle allât.
That we might go,
Que nous allassions.
That you might go,
Que vous allassiez.
That they might go,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles allassent.

PLUPERFECT.

That I might have gone,
Que je fusse allé, *or* allée.
That thou mightest have gone,
Que tu fusses allé, *or* allée.
That he might have gone,
Qu'il fût allé.
That she might have gone,
Qu'elle fût allée.
That we might have gone,
Que nous fussions allés, *or* allées.
That you might have gone,
Que vous fussiez allés, *or* allées.
That they might have gone,
Qu'ils fussent allés *or* Qu'elles fussent allées.

Observe.—There is a very common error prevalent in France in the application of the Compound Tenses of the above Verb. *Etre allé, je suis allé, tu es allé, il est allé, elle est allée,* &c. being used instead of—*Avoir été, j'ai été, tu as été, il* or *elle a été,* &c. when it is intended to express that a person has been somewhere.

The general rule to follow on that subject is, that, whenever the return from the place mentioned has taken place—*Avoir été, j'ai été, tu as été, il* or *elle a été,* &c. must be used: and when the return has not been effected—*Etre allé, je suis allé, tu es allé, il est allé* or *elle est allée,* &c. are required: as for instance—*Céphise est allée à l'opéra,* Cephise is gone to the opera; to express that she is gone there and not yet returned; but—*Céphise a été à l'opéra,* Cephise has been to the opera, implying that she has been and is returned, or at least has left the opera.

English people frequently use this mode of expression: *I will come and see you,* instead of—*I will go and see you*; but the French always use the different Tenses of *aller* in the sense of going from the place where the person speaking is to any other place; as—*J'irai vous voir,* I will go and see you; whilst they make use of the Verb *venir* to denote coming to the place where the person speaking is; as—*Je ne crois pas que je puisse venir demain,* I do not think I shall be able to come to-morrow.

---

§. 2.

Conjugation of the Pronominal Verb—*S'en aller,* to go away.

S'en aller being the Verb *aller* itself reflectively used with the particle *en,* is conjugated after the same manner as *aller.* The particle *en* always comes immediately before the Verb in the simple tenses, and before the auxiliary in the compound, whether the sentence is affirmative, negative, or interrogative; as—*Je m'en vais,* I am going away; *je ne m'en vais pas,* I am not going away; *s'en va-t-il?* is he going away? *ne s'en va-t-il pas?* is he not going away? &c. &c.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Simple Tenses.

PRESENT.

To go away,
S'en aller.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

Going away,
S'en allant.

PAST PARTICIPLE.

Gone away,
Allé, allée; és, ées.

Compound Tenses.

PRETERITE.

To have gone away,
S'en être allé, *or* allée.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE COMPOUND.

Having gone away,
S'en étant allé, *or* allée.

PARTICIPLE FUTURE.

Being to go away,
Devant s'en aller.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

I go or am going away,
Je m'en vais.

Thou goest or art going away,
Tu t'en vas.

PRETERITE INDEFINITE.

I have gone away,
Je m'en suis allé, *or* allée.

Thou hast gone away,
Tu t'en es allé, *or* allée.

He goes or *is going away,*
Il s'en va.

She goes or *is going away,*
Elle s'en va.

We go or *are going away,*
Nous nous en allons.

You go or *are going away,*
Vous vous en allez.

They go or *are going away,*
Ils *or* Elles s'en vont.

He has gone away,
Il s'en est allé.

She has gone away,
Elle s'en est allée.

We have gone away,
Nous nous en sommes allés, *or* allées

You have gone away,
Vous vous en êtes allés, *or* allées.

They have gone away,
Ils s'en sont allés *or* Elles s'en sont allées.

IMPERFECT.

I was going away,
Je m'en allais.

Thou wast going away,
Tu t'en allais.

He was going away,
Il s'en allait.

She was going away,
Elle s'en allait.

We were going away,
Nous nous en allions.

You were going away,
Vous vous en alliez.

They were going away,
Ils *or* Elles s'en allaient.

PLUPERFECT.

I had gone away,
Je m'en étais allé, *or* allée.

Thou had'st gone away,
Tu t'en étais allé, *or* allée.

He had gone away,
Il s'en était allé.

She had gone away,
Elle s'en était allée.

We had gone away,
Nous nous en étions allés, *or* allées.

You had gone away,
Vous vous en étiez allés, *or* allées.

They had gone away,
Ils s'en étaient allés *or* Elles s'en étaient allées.

PRETERITE.

I went away,
Je m'en allai.

Thou did'st go away,
Tu t'en allas.

He went away,
Il s'en alla.

She went away,
Elle s'en alla.

We went away,
Nous nous en allâmes.

You went away,
Vous vous en allâtes.

They went away,
Ils *or* Elles s'en allèrent.

PRETERITE ANTERIOR.

I had gone away,
Je m'en fus allé, *or* allée.

Thou had'st gone away,
Tu t'en fus allé, *or* allée.

He had gone away,
Il s'en fut allé.

She had gone away,
Elle s'en fut allée.

We had gone away,
Nous nous en fûmes allés, *or* allées.

You had gone away,
Vous vous en fûtes allés, *or* allées.

They had gone away,
Ils s'en furent allés *or* Elles s'en furent allées.

FUTURE SIMPLE.

I shall or *will go away,*
Je m'en irai.

Thou shalt or *wilt go away,*
Tu t'en iras.

FUTURE PAST.

I shall or *will have gone away,*
Je m'en serai allé, *or* allée.

Thou shalt or *wilt have gone away,*
Tu t'en seras allé, *or* allée.

He shall or *will go away*, Il s'en ira.	*He shall* or *will have gone away*, Il s'en sera allé.
She shall or *will go away*, Elle s'en ira.	*She shall* or *will have gone away*, Elle s'en sera allée.
We shall or *will go away*, Nous nous en irons.	*We shall* or *will have gone away*, Nous nous en serons allés, *or* allées.
You shall or *will go away*, Vous vous en irez.	*You shall* or *will have gone away*, Vous vous en serez allés, *or* allées.
They shall or *will go away*, Ils *or* Elles s'en iront.	*They shall* or *will have gone away*, Ils s'en seront allés *or* Elles s'en seront allées.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.	PAST.
I would or *should go away*, Je m'en irais.	*I would* or *should have gone away*, Je m'en serais *or* Je m'en fusse allé, *or* allée.
Thou would'st or *should'st go away*, Tu t'en irais.	*Thou would'st* or *should'st have gone away*, Tu t'en serais *or* Tu t'en fusses allé, *or* allée.
He would or *should go away*, Il s'en irait.	*He would* or *should have gone away*, Il s'en serait *or* Il s'en fût allé.
She would or *should go away*, Elle s'en irait.	*She would* or *should have gone away*, Elle s'en serait *or* Elle s'en fût allée.
We would or *should go away*, Nous nous en irions.	*We would* or *should have gone away*, Nous nous en serions *or* Nous nous en fussions allés, *or* allées.
You would or *should go away*, Vous vous en iriez.	*You would* or *should have gone away*, Vous vous en seriez, *or* Vous vous en fussiez allés, *or* allées.
They would or *should go away*, Ils *or* Elles s'en iraient.	*They would* or *should have gone away*, Ils s'en seraient *or* Ils s'en fussent allés, *or* Elles s'en seraient *or* Elles s'en fussent allées.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT OR FUTURE.

1. Affirmatively.

Go thou away,	Va t'en.
Let him go away,	Qu'il s'en aille.
Let her go away,	Qu'elle s'en aille.
Let us go away,	Allons-nous-en.
Go away,	Allez-vous-en.
Let them go away,	Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles s'en aillent.

2. Negatively.

Do thou not go away,	Ne t'en va pas.
Let him not go away,	Qu'il ne s'en aille pas.
Let her not go away,	Qu'elle ne s'en aille pas.
Let us not go away,	Ne nous en allons pas.
Do not go away,	Ne vous en allez pas.
Let them not go away,	Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles ne s'en aillent pas.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

That I may go away,
Que je m'en aille.

That thou may'st go away,
Que tu t'en ailles.

That he may go away,
Qu'il s'en aille.

That she may go away,
Qu'elle s'en aille.

That we may go away,
Que nous nous en allions.

That you may go away,
Que vous vous en alliez.

That they may go away,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles s'en aillent.

PRETERITE.

That I may have gone away,
Que je m'en sois allé, *or* allée.

That thou may'st have gone away,
Que tu t'en sois allé, *or* allée.

That he may have gone away,
Qu'il s'en soit allé.

That she may have gone away,
Qu'elle s'en soit allée.

That we may have gone away,
Que nous nous en soyons allés, *or* allées.

That you may have gone away,
Que vous vous en soyez allés, *or* allées.

That they may have gone away,
Qu'ils s'en soient allés *or* Qu'elles s'en soient allées.

IMPERFECT.

That I might go away,
Que je m'en allasse.

That thou mightest go away,
Que tu t'en allasses.

That he might go away,
Qu'il s'en allât.

That she might go away,
Qu'elle s'en allât.

That we might go away,
Que nous nous en allassions.

That you might go away,
Que vous vous en allassiez.

That they might go away,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles s'en allassent.

PLUPERFECT.

That I might have gone away,
Que je m'en fusse allé, *or* allée.

That thou mightest have gone away,
Que tu t'en fusses allé, *or* allée.

That he might have gone away,
Qu'il s'en fût allé.

That she might have gone away,
Qu'elle s'en fût allée.

That we might have gone away,
Que nous nous en fussions allés, *or* allées.

That you might have gone away,
Que vous vous en fussiez allés, *or* allées.

That they might have gone away,
Qu'ils s'en fussent allés *or* Qu'elles s'en fussent allées.

ARTICLE XII.

Irregular Verbs of the Second Conjugation.

§. 1.

Venir, to come. Neuter Verb.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Simple Tenses.

PRESENT.

To come,
Venir.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

Coming,
Venant.

PAST PARTICIPLE.

Come,
Venu, ue; us, ues.

Compound Tenses.

PRETERITE.

To have or *to be come,*
Etre venu.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE COMPOUND.

Having or *being come,*
Etant venu.

PARTICIPLE FUTURE.

Being to come,
Devant venir.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

I come or *am coming,*
Je viens.

Thou comest or *art coming,*
Tu viens.

He comes or *is coming,*
Il vient.

She comes or *is coming,*
Elle vient.

We come or *are coming,*
Nous venons.

You come or *are coming,*
Vous venez.

They come or *are coming,*
Ils *or* Elles viennent.

PRETERITE INDEFINITE.

I have or *am come,*
Je suis venu, *or* venue.

Thou hast or *art come,*
Tu es venu, *or* venue.

He has or *is come,*
Il est venu.

She has or *is come,*
Elle est venue.

We have or *are come,*
Nous sommes venus, *or* venues.

You have or *are come,*
Vous êtes venus, *or* venues.

They have or *are come,*
Ils sont venus *or* Elles sont venues.

IMPERFECT.

I was coming,
Je venais.

Thou wast coming,
Tu venais.

He was coming,
Il venait.

PLUPERFECT.

I had or *was come,*
J'étais venu, *or* venue.

Thou had'st or *wast come,*
Tu étais venu, *or* venue.

He had or *was come,*
Il était venu.

She was coming,
Elle venait.

We were coming,
Nous venions.

You were coming,
Vous veniez.

They were coming,
Ils *or* Elles venaient.

She had or *was come,*
Elle était venue.

We had or *were come,*
Nous étions venus, *or* venues.

You had or *were come,*
Vous étiez venus, *or* venues.

They had or *were come,*
Ils étaient venus *or* Elles étaient venues.

PRETERITE.

I came,
Je vins.

Thou did'st come,
Tu vins.

He came,
Il vint.

She came,
Elle vint.

We came,
Nous vînmes.

You came,
Vous vîntes.

They came,
Ils *or* Elles vinrent.

PRETERITE ANTERIOR.

I had or *was come,*
Je fus venu, *or* venue.

Thou had'st or *wast come,*
Tu fus venu, *or* venue.

He had or *was come,*
Il fut venu.

She had or *was come,*
Elle fut venue.

We had or *were come,*
Nous fûmes venus, *or* venues.

You had or *were come,*
Vous fûtes venus, *or* venues.

They had or *were come,*
Ils furent venus *or* Elles furent venues.

FUTURE SIMPLE.

I shall or *will come,*
Je viendrai.

Thou shalt or *wilt come,*
Tu viendras.

He shall or *will come,*
Il viendra.

She shall or *will come,*
Elle viendra.

We shall or *will come,*
Nous viendrons.

You shall or *will come,*
Vous viendrez.

They shall or *will come,*
Ils *or* Elles viendront.

FUTURE PAST.

I shall or *will have come,*
Je serai venu, *or* venue.

Thou shalt or *wilt have come,*
Tu seras venu, *or* venue.

He shall or *will have come,*
Il sera venu.

She shall or *will have come,*
Elle sera venue.

We shall or *will have come,*
Nous serons venus, *or* venues.

You shall or *will have come,*
Vous serez venus, *or* venues.

They shall or *will have come,*
Ils seront venus *or* Elles seront venues.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

I would or *should come,*
Je viendrais.

Thou would'st or *should'st come,*
Tu viendrais.

PAST.

I would or *should have come,*
Je serais *or* Je fusse venu, *or* venue.

Thou would'st or *should'st have come,*
Tu serais *or* Tu fusses venu, *or* venue.

He would or *should come,*
Il viendrait.

She would or *should come,*
Elle viendrait.

We would or *should come,*
Nous viendrions.

You would or *should come,*
Vous viendriez.

They would or *should come,*
Ils *or* Elles viendraient.

He would or *should have come,*
Il serait *or* Il fût venu.

She would or *should have come,*
Elle serait *or* Elle fût venue.

We would or *should have come,*
Nous serions *or* Nous fussions venus, *or* venues.

You would or *should have come,*
Vous seriez *or* Vous fussiez venus, *or* venues.

They would or *should have come,*
Ils seraient *or* Ils fussent venus, *or* Elles seraient *or* Elles fussent venues.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT OR FUTURE.

Come (thou,)	Viens.
Let him come,	Qu'il vienne.
Let her come,	Qu'elle vienne.
Let us come,	Venons.
Come (ye or *you,)*	Venez.
Let them come,	Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles viennent.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

That I may come,
Que je vienne.

That thou may'st come,
Que tu viennes.

That he may come,
Qu'il vienne.

That she may come,
Qu'elle vienne.

That we may come,
Que nous venions.

That you may come,
Que vous veniez.

That they may come,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles viennent.

PRETERITE.

That I may have come,
Que je sois venu, *or* venue.

That thou may'st have come,
Que tu sois venu, *or* venue.

That he may have come,
Qu'il soit venu.

That she may have come,
Qu'elle soit venue.

That we may have come,
Que nous soyons venus, *or* venues.

That you may have come,
Que vous soyez venus, *or* venues

That they may have come,
Qu'ils soient venus *or* Qu'elles soient venues.

IMPERFECT.

That I might come,
Que je vinsse.

PLUPERFECT.

That I might have come,
Que je fusse venu, *or* venue.

That thou mightest come,
Que tu vinsses.

That he might come,
Qu'il vînt.

That she might come,
Qu'elle vînt.

That we might come,
Que nous vinssions.

That you might come,
Que vous vinssiez.

That they might come,
Qu'ils *or* Qu'elles vinssent.

That thou mightest have come,
Que tu fusses venu, *or* venue.

That he might have come,
Qu'il fût venu.

That she might have come,
Qu'elle fût venue.

That we might have come,
Que nous fussions venus, *or* venues.

That you might have come,
Que vous fussiez venus, *or* venues.

That they might have come,
Qu'ils fussent venus *or* Qu'elles fussent venues.

ADDITIONAL TENSES.

Observe.—The additional Tenses of the above Verb are expressed in French by—*Arriver:* as follows—

PAST, JUST ELAPSED.

I am or *have just come,*
Je viens d'arriver.

Thou art or *hast just come,*
Tu viens d'arriver.

He is or *has just come,*
Il vient d'arriver.

She is or *has just come,*
Elle vient d'arriver.

We are or *have just come,*
Nous venons d'arriver.

You are or *have just come,*
Vous venez d'arriver.

They are or *have just come,*
Ils *or* Elles viennent d'arriver.

PAST, ELAPSED BEFORE ANOTHER THING OR ACTION TOOK PLACE.

I had or *was just come,*
Je venais d'arriver.

Thou had'st or *wast just come,*
Tu venais d'arriver.

He had or *was just come,*
Il venait d'arriver.

She had or *was just come,*
Elle venait d'arriver.

We had or *were just come,*
Nous venions d'arriver.

You had or *were just come,*
Vous veniez d'arriver.

They had or *were just come,*
Ils *or* Elles venaient d'arriver.

Conjugate after the same manner all Verbs ending in *enir* in the Infinitive Mood: such as—

†Appartenir, *to belong.*
Avenir, *to happen.*
Convenir, *to agree, to suit, to become.*
†Circonvenir, *to circumvent.*
†Contrevenir, *to contravene.*
†Contenir, *to contain.*
†Déprévenir, *to unprepossess.*
Devenir, *to become.*
†Détenir, *to detain.*
Disconvenir, *to disagree.*
†Entretenir, *to entertain.*
Intervenir, *to intervene.*
†Maintenir, *to maintain.*
Mésavenir, *to succeed ill.*
†Obtenir, *to obtain.*
Parvenir, *to come to preferment, to attain.*
†Prévenir, *to prevent, to inform.*
Provenir, *to proceed from.*
†Retenir, *to retain.*
Ressouvenir, *to remember.*
Revenir, *to come back.*
Redevenir, *to become again.*
Se souvenir, *to remember.*
Se ressouvenir, *to remember.*
S'abstenir, *to abstain.*
Survenir, *to happen, to come unexpectedly.*
†Soutenir, *to support, to sustain, to assert.*
†Subvenir, *to relieve.*
†Tenir, *to hold.*

Observe.—The Verbs in the above list, which are marked with a (†), are conjugated with the different Tenses of *avoir*, in their Compound Tenses; and those which are not, with those of *être*.

The *n* in *venir*, and in any of the above Verbs, also in any other ending in *enir* in the Present of the Infinitive, is doubled in those Tenses in which it comes before *e, es, ent;* as—*Ils viennent; que je vienne, que tu viennes, qu'il vienne,* &c. as may be seen in the above model of *venir*.

Avenir, to happen, is only used in the Third Person Singular; as —*S'il avient,* if it happens; and *provenir,* to proceed from, in the Third Person Singular and in the Third Plural: as—*Cela provient de,* &c. that proceeds from, &c.; *tous ces malheurs proviennent de,* all those misfortunes proceed from, &c.

---

§. 2.

Acquérir, to acquire. ACTIVE VERB.

Infinitive. Acquérir, *to acquire;* acquérant, *acquiring;* acquis, acquise, *acquired.*

Avoir acquis, ayant acquis.

Ind. Pres.	J'acquiers,	tu acquiers,	il *ou* elle acquiert;
	Nous acquérons,	vous acquérez,	ils *ou* elles acquièrent.
Imp.	J'acquérais,	tu acquérais,	il *ou* elle acquérait;
	Nous acquérions,	vous acquériez,	ils *ou* elles acquéraient.
Pret.	J'acquis,	tu acquis,	il *ou* elle acquit;
	Nous acquîmes,	vous acquîtes,	ils *ou* elles acquirent.
Fut.	J'acquerrai,	tu acquerras,	il *ou* elle acquerra;
	Nous acquerrons,	vous acquerrez,	ils *ou* elles acquerront.
Cond. Pres.	J'acquerrais,	tu acquerrais,	il *ou* elle acquerrait;
	Nous acquerrions,	vous acquerriez,	ils *ou* elles acquerraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	acquiers,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle acquière;
	Acquérons,	acquérez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles acquièrent.

Sub. Pres.	Que j'acquière,	que tu acquières,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle acquière ;
	Que nous acquérions,	que vous acquériez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles acquièrent.
Imp.	Que j'acquisse,	que tu acquisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle acquît ;
	Que nous acquissions,	que vous acquissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles acquissent.

Conjugate after the same manner the Verbs *conquérir*, to conquer; *reconquérir*, to conquer again; *requérir*, to require; *s'enquérir*, to inquire; and *quérir*, to fetch.

Conquérir is only used in the Present of the Infinitive, in the Definite Preterite, in the Imperfect of the Subjunctive, and in the Compound Tenses.

Reconquérir is the oftenest used in the Past Participle.

S'enquérir is very little used except in the Infinitive and in the Compound Tenses.

Quérir, to fetch, is only used in the Present of the Infinitive with the Verbs *aller*, *venir*, *envoyer*; as—*Allez me quérir M. un tel*, go and fetch me Mr. such a one; *je l'ai envoyé quérir*, I have sent for him; *il m'est venu quérir*, he came to fetch me, &c. This Verb must not be used in an elevated style.

---

§. 3.

Assaillir, to assault. ACTIVE VERB.

Infinitive. Assaillir, *to assault;* assaillant, *assaulting;* assailli, assaillie, *assaulted.*

Avoir assailli, ayant assailli.

Ind. Pres.	J'assaille,	tu assailles,	il *ou* elle assaille ;
	Nous assaillons,	vous assaillez,	ils *ou* elles assaillent.
Imp.	J'assaillais,	tu assaillais,	il *ou* elle assaillait ;
	Nous assaillions,	vous assailliez,	ils *ou* elles assaillaient.
Pret.	J'assaillis,	tu assaillis,	il *ou* elle assaillit ;
	Nous assaillîmes,	vous assaillîtes,	ils *ou* elle assaillirent.
Fut.	†J'assaillirai,	tu assailliras,	il *ou* elle assaillira ;
	Nous assaillirons,	vous assaillirez,	ils *ou* elles assailliront.
Cond.Pres.	†J'assaillirais,	tu assaillirais,	il *ou* elle assaillirait ;
	Nous assaillirions,	vous assailliriez,	ils *ou* elles assailliraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	assaille,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle assaille ;
	Assaillons,	assaillez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles assaillent.
Sub. Pres.	Que j'assaille,	que tu assailles,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle assaille ;
	Que nous assaillions,	que vous assailliez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles assaillent.
Pret.	Que j'assaillisse,	que tu assaillisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle assaillît ;
	Que nous assaillissions,	que vous assaillissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles assaillissent.

Conjugate after the same manner *tressaillir*, to start: but in the Future you may say—*Je tressaillirai, tu tressailliras,* &c. or *je tressaillerai, tu tressailleras,* &c.; and in the Conditional—*Je tressaillirais, tu tressaillirais,* &c. or *je tressaillerais,* or *tu tressaillerais,* &c.

---

† *Wailly* is of opinion, that *j'assaillerai, tu assailleras,* &c. may also be used in the Future; and *j'assaillerais, tu assaillerais,* &c. in the Conditional.

§. 4.

Bouillir, to boil. NEUTER VERB.

Infinitive. Bouillir, *to boil;* bouillant, *boiling;* bouilli, bouillie, *boiled.*

Avoir bouilli, ayant bouilli.

Ind. Pres.	Je bous,	tu bous,	il *ou* elle bout;
	Nous bouillons,	vous bouillez,	ils *ou* elles bouillent.
Imp.	Je bouillais,	tu bouillais,	il *ou* elle bouillait;
	Nous bouillions,	vous bouilliez,	ils *ou* elles bouillaient.
Pret.	Je bouillis,	tu bouillis,	il *ou* elle bouillit;
	Nous bouillîmes,	vous bouillîtes,	ils *ou* elles bouillirent.
Fut.	Je bouillirai,	tu bouilliras,	il *ou* elle bouillira;
	Nous bouillirons,	vous bouillirez,	ils *ou* elles bouilliront.
Cond.Pres.	Je bouillirais,	tu bouillirais,	il *ou* elle bouillirait;
	Nous bouillirions,	vous bouilliriez,	ils *ou* elles bouilliraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	bous,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle bouille;
	Bouillons,	bouillez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles bouillent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je bouille,	que tu bouilles,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle bouille;
	Que nous bouillions,	que vous bouilliez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles bouillent.
Imp.	Que je bouillisse,	que tu bouillisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle bouillît;
	Que nous bouillissions,	que vous bouillissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles bouillissent.

Observe.—The above Verb can only be properly used in French in the Third Person Singular and in the Third Plural of its different Tenses; as—*L'eau bout*, the water boils; *ces choux ne bouillaient pas*, these cabbages did not boil, &c. But if it be required to use it in all its persons in an active way, as its corresponding to boil is in English, we should then make use of the different Tenses of the Verb *faire* before it, and put it in the Infinitive Mood; as—*Je fais bouillir, tu fais bouillir, il* ou *elle fait bouillir, nous faisons bouillir, vous faites bouillir, ils* or *elles font bouillir*, &c. in the sense of—*I boil, thou boilest, he* or *she boils, we boil, you boil, they boil*, in English; as—*Je fais bouillir de la viande*, I boil some meat; and not *je bous*.

Rebouillir, to boil again, is conjugated after the same manner, and follows the same rules.

§. 5.

Courir, to run. NEUTER VERB.

Infinitive. Courir, *to run;* courant, *running;* couru, courue, *run.*

Avoir couru, ayant couru.

Ind. Pres.	Je cours,	tu cours,	il *ou* elle court;
	Nous courons,	vous courez,	ils *ou* elles courent.

Imp.	Je courais,	tu courais,	il *ou* elle courait ;
	Nous courions,	vous couriez,	ils *ou* elles couraient.
Pret.	Je courus,	tu courus,	il *ou* elle courut ;
	Nous courûmes,	vous courûtes,	ils *ou* elles coururent.
Fut.	Je courrai,	tu courras,	il *ou* elle courra ;
	Nous courrons,	vous courrez,	ils *ou* elles courront.
Cond. Pres.	Je courrais,	tu courrais,	il *ou* elle courrait ;
	Nous courrions,	vous courriez,	ils *ou* elles courraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	cours,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle coure ;
	Courons,	courez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles courent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je coure,	que tu coures,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle coure ;
	Que nous courions,	que vous couriez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles courent.
Imp.	Que je courusse,	que tu courusses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle courût ;
	Que nous courussions,	que vous courussiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles courussent

Conjugate after the same manner the Verbs *accourir,* to run to ; *concourir,* to concur ; *discourir,* to discourse ; *encourir,* to incur ; *parcourir,* to run over ; *secourir,* to succour ; *recourir,* to have recourse to.

Accourir, to run to, according to the meaning in which it is used, takes *avoir* or *être* in its Compound Tenses ; thus—*J'ai accouru* and *je suis accouru.*

---

§. 6.

Cueillir, to gather. Active Verb.

Infinitive. Cueillir, *to gather ;* cueillant, *gathering ;* cueilli, cueillie, *gathered.*

Avoir cueilli, ayant cueilli.

Ind. Pres.	Je cueille,	tu cueilles,	il *ou* elle cueille ;
	Nous cueillons,	vous cueillez,	ils *ou* elles cueillent.
Imp.	Je cueillais,	tu cueillais,	il *ou* elle cueillait ;
	Nous cueillions,	vous cueilliez,	ils *ou* elles cueillaient.
Pret.	Je cueillis,	tu cueillis,	il *ou* elle cueillit ;
	Nous cueillîmes,	vous cueillîtes,	ils *ou* elles cueillirent.
Fut.	Je cueillerai,	tu cueilleras,	il *ou* elle cueillera ;
	Nous cueillerons,	vous cueillerez,	ils *ou* elles cueilleront.
Cond. Pres.	Je cueillerais,	tu cueillerais,	il *ou* elle cueillerait ;
	Nous cueillerions,	vous cueilleriez,	ils *ou* elles cueilleraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	cueille,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle cueille ;
	Cueillons,	cueillez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles cueillent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je cueille,	que tu cueilles,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle cueille ;
	Que nous cueillions,	que vous cueilliez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles cueillent.
Imp.	Que je cueillisse,	que tu cueillisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle cueillît ;
	Que nous cueillissions,	que vous cueillissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles cueillissent.

Conjugate after the same manner *Accueillir,* to make welcome, to receive kindly ; *recueillir,* to gather, to reap, to receive.

§. 7.

Faillir, to fail. NEUTER AND DEFECTIVE VERB.

Infinitive. Faillir, *to fail*; faillant, *failing*; failli, faillie, *failed*.
Avoir failli, ayant failli.

Ind. Pret. Je faillis,	tu faillis,	il *ou* elle faillit;
Nous faillîmes,	vous faillîtes,	ils *ou* elles faillirent.

Observe.—This Verb is only used in its *Definite Preterite* as above; as to its Compound Tenses, they are regular, being formed with the different Tenses of the auxiliary Verb *avoir*, and its Past Participle *failli*: as—*J'ai failli, tu as failli, il* or *elle a failli*, &c. &c.

Défaillir, to fall to decay, derived from *faillir*, is scarcely ever used but in the Plural of the Present of the Indicative: as—*Nous défaillons*, &c.; in the Imperfect, *je défaillais*, &c.; in the Definite Preterite, *je défaillis, tu défaillis*, &c.; in the Preterite Indefinite, *j'ai défailli*, &c.; and in the Present of the Infinitive Mood, *défaillir*.

§. 8.

Fleurir, to blossom, to flourish. NEUTER VERB.

Note.—This Verb is Regular, and conjugated like *Finir*, when taken in the sense of putting forth flowers, making in the Present Participle *fleurissant*; and in the Imperfect of the Indicative, *Je fleurissais, tu fleurissais, il* or *elle fleurissait*, &c. But when it is used in a figurative sense, meaning to be in credit, honour, as when speaking of a kingdom or a town, we say—*it is in a flourishing state*; it then makes in the Present Participle, *florissant*; and in the Imperfect—*Je florissais, tu florissais, il* or *elle florissait*, &c. As to the other Tenses, they are always regular.

Refleurir, to blossom or flourish again, is conjugated after the same manner as *fleurir*, making equally *refleurissant* in the Present Participle, and *refleurissais* in the Imperfect of the Indicative, when used in its natural sense; but *reflorissant* and *reflorissais*, when in a figurative.

§. 9.

Fuir, to fly. ACTIVE AND NEUTER VERB.

Infinitive. Fuir, *to fly*; fuyant, *flying*; fui, fuie, *fled*.
Avoir fui, ayant fui.

Ind. Pres. Je fuis,	tu fuis,	il *ou* elle fuit;
Nous fuyons,	vous fuyez,	ils *ou* elles fuient.
Imp. Je fuyais,	tu fuyais,	il *ou* elle fuyait;
Nous fuyions,	vous fuyiez,	ils *ou* elles fuyaient.

Pret.	Je fuis,	tu fuis,	il *ou* elle fuit ;
	Nous fuîmes,	vous fuîtes,	ils *ou* elles fuirent.
Fut.	Je fuirai,	tu fuiras,	il *ou* elle fuira ;
	Nous fuirons,	vous fuirez,	ils *ou* elles fuiront.
Cond. Pres.	Je fuirais,	tu fuirais,	il *ou* elle fuirait ;
	Nous fuirions,	vous fuiriez,	ils *ou* elles fuiraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	fuis,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle fuie ;
	Fuyons,	fuyez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles fuient.
Sub. Pres.	Que je fuie,	que tu fuies,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle fuie ;
	Que nous fuyions,	que vous fuyiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles fuient.
Imp.	Que je fuisse,	que tu fuisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle fuît ;
	Que nous fuissions,	que vous fuissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles fuissent.

Conjugate after the same manner, *s'enfuir*, to run away. In the Imperative we say—*enfuis-toi*, &c.

---

§. 10.

Gésir, to lie. Neuter and Defective Verb.

Infinitive. Gésir, *to lie;* gisant, *lying.*

This Verb, which signified to be lying down, is no longer in use. We, however, say sometimes—*Il gît, nous gisons, ils gisent, il gisait, gisant.*

Ci gît, here lies, is the common form by which we begin an epitaph; this expression is also fine in a figurative sense, and particularly in poetry.

Ci *gît* Ververt, ci *gisent* tous les cœurs.
Peuples, rois, vous mourrez, et vous villes aussi,
La *gît* Lacedemone, Athènes fut ici.

---

§. 11.

Haïr, to hate. Active Verb.

Infinitive. Haïr, *to hate;* haïssant, *hating;* haï, haïe, *hated.* Avoir haï, ayant haï.

Ind. Pres.	Je hais,	tu hais,	il *ou* elle hait ;
	Nous haïssons,	vous haïssez,	ils *ou* elles haïssent.
Imp.	Je haïssais,	tu haïssais,	il *ou* elle haïssait ;
	Nous haïssions,	vous haïssiez,	ils *ou* elles haïssaient.
Pret.	Je haïs,	tu haïs,	il *ou* elle haït ;
	Nous haïmes,	vous haïtes,	ils *ou* elles haïrent.
Fut.	Je haïrai,	tu haïras,	il *ou* elle haïra ;
	Nous haïrons,	vous haïrez,	ils *ou* elles haïront.

Cond. Pres.	Je haïrais,	tu haïrais,	il *ou* elle haïrait;
	Nous haïrions,	vous haïriez,	ils *ou* elles haïraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	hais,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle haïsse;
	Haïssons,	haïssez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles haïssent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je haïsse,	que tu haïsses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle haïsse;
	Que nous haïssions,	que vous haïssiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles haïssent.
Imp.	Que je haïsse,	que tu haïsses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle haït;
	Que nous haïssions,	que vous haïssiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles haïssent.

Observe.—Except the three first persons singular of the Present of the Indicative—*Je hais, tu hais, il* or *elle hait,* and the second singular of the Imperative *hais,* the above Verb is regular, and conjugated after the same manner as *finir.*

The *h* must be pronounced through all its different Tenses and Persons.

A diæresis (¨) is also required over the *i,* through all its Tenses, to show that it is to be pronounced separately from the preceding vowel *a;* as—*Ha-ïr,* the first three letters forming two syllables; except, however, the three first persons singular of the Present of the Indicative and the second singular of the Imperative, which forming only one syllable, are written without the diæresis, thus: *Je hais, tu hais, il* or *elle hait; hais;* and pronounced—*Je hé, tu hé, il* or *elle hé; hé.*

---

§. 12.

Issir, to issue. Neuter and Defective Verb.

This Verb, which was formerly used for *sortir,* is now only used in the Past Participle, *issu, issue,* with the different Tenses of the Verb *être,* signifying *venu, descendu, d'une personne, d'une race,* &c. as—*Il est issu de····,* he is born from····

---

§. 13.

Mourir, to die. Neuter Verb.

Infinitive. Mourir, *to die;* mourant, *dying;* mort, morte, *died.*
Etre mort, étant mort.

Ind. Pres.	Je meurs,	tu meurs,	il *ou* elle meurt;
	Nous mourons,	vous mourez,	ils *ou* elles meurent.
Imp.	Je mourais,	tu mourais,	il *ou* elle mourait;
	Nous mourions,	vous mouriez,	ils *ou* elles mouraient.

Pret.	Je mourus,	tu mourus,	il *ou* elle mourut;
	Nous mourûmes,	vous mourûtes,	ils *ou* elles moururent.
Fut.	Je mourrai,	tu mourras,	il *ou* elle mourra;
	Nous mourrons,	vous mourrez,	il *ou* elles mourront.
Cond. Pres.	Je mourrais,	tu mourrais,	il *ou* elle mourrait;
	Nous mourrions,	vous mourriez,	ils *ou* elles mourraient.
Imperative.	[*No* 1*st person.*]	meurs,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle meure;
	Mourons,	mourez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles meurent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je meure,	que tu meures,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle meure;
	Que nous mourions,	que vous mouriez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles meurent.
Pret.	Que je mourusse,	que tu mourusses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle mourût;
	Que nous mourussions,	que vous mourussiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles mourussent.

Observe.—This Verb requires two *r*'s in the Future and Conditional, and they must be both pronounced. Its Compound Tenses are formed with the Simple Tenses *être*.

---

§. 14.

Ouïr, to hear. Active and Defective Verb.

This Verb can only be used now in the Present of the Infinitive: as—*ouïr*, to hear; in the Preterite Definite, *j'ouïs*, I heard; *il ouït*, he heard; in the Imperfect of the Subjunctive, *que j'ouïsse*, that I might hear; *qu'il ouït*, that he might hear; and in its Compound Tenses, which are formed with the auxiliary *avoir*, and its Past Participle *ouï*, *ouïe*, putting in the Present of the Infinitive any Verb which may follow: as—*J'ai ouï dire*, I heard say; *tu as ouï dire*, &c.

---

§. 15.

Ouvrir, to open. Active Verb.

Infinitive. Ouvrir, *to open;* ouvrant, *opening;* ouvert, ouverte, *opened.*
Avoir ouvert, ayant ouvert.

Ind. Pres.	J'ouvre,	tu ouvres,	il *ou* elle ouvre;
	Nous ouvrons,	vous ouvrez,	ils *ou* elles ouvrent.
Imp.	J'ouvrais,	tu ouvrais,	il *ou* elle ouvrait;
	Nous ouvrions,	vous ouvriez,	ils *ou* elles ouvraient.
Pret.	J'ouvris,	tu ouvris,	il *ou* elle ouvrit;
	Nous ouvrîmes,	vous ouvrîtes,	ils *ou* elles ouvrirent.
Fut.	J'ouvrirai,	tu ouvriras,	il *ou* elle ouvrira;
	Nous ouvrirons,	vous ouvrirez,	ils *ou* elles ouvriront.

Cond. Pres.	J'ouvrirais,	tu ouvrirais,	il *ou* elle ouvrirait;
	Nous ouvririons,	vous ouvririez,	ils *ou* elles ouvriraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	ouvre,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle ouvre;
	Ouvrons,	ouvrez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles ouvrent.
Sub. Pres.	Que j'ouvre,	que tu ouvres,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle ouvre;
	Que nous ouvrions,	que vous ouvriez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles ouvrent.
Imp.	Que j'ouvrisse,	que tu ouvrisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle ouvrît;
	Que nous ouvrissions,	que vous ouvrissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles ouvrissent.

Conjugate after the same manner the Verbs—*couvrir*, to cover; *découvrir*, to discover, to uncover; *entr'ouvrir*, to open a little; *mésoffrir*, to underbid; *offrir*, to offer; *rouvrir*, to reopen; *recouvrir*, to cover again; *souffrir*, to suffer; and any other ending in *vrir* and *frir* in the Present of the Infinitive Mood.

Those Verbs, although having the same termination in the Present of the Indicative as the Verbs of the First Conjugation, take no *s* in the Second Person Singular of the Imperative, except when followed by *en* or *y*.

---

§. 16.

Partir, to set out, *or* go away. Neuter Verb.

Infinitive. Partir, *to set out;* partant, *setting out;* parti, partie, *set out.*
Etre parti, étant parti.

Ind. Pres.	Je pars,	tu pars,	il *ou* elle part;
	Nous partons,	vous partez,	ils *ou* elles partent.
Imp.	Je partais,	tu partais,	il *ou* elle partait;
	Nous partions,	vous partiez,	ils *ou* elles partaient.
Pret.	Je partis,	tu partis,	il *ou* elle partit;
	Nous partîmes,	vous partîtes,	ils *ou* elles partirent.
Fut.	Je partirai,	tu partiras,	il *ou* elle partira;
	Nous partirons,	vous partirez,	ils *ou* elles partiront.
Cond. Pres.	Je partirais,	tu partirais,	il *ou* elle partirait;
	Nous partirions,	vous partiriez,	ils *ou* elles partiraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	pars,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle parte;
	Partons,	partez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles partent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je parte,	que tu partes,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle parte;
	Que nous partions,	que vous partiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles partent.
Imp.	Que je partisse,	que tu partisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle partît;
	Que nous partissions,	que vous partissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles partissent.

Conjugate after the same manner *repartir*, to set out again; its Compound Tenses being equally formed with *être*.

Repartir, in the sense of *to reply*, takes *avoir* in its Compound Tenses: as—*Il ne lui a reparti que des impertinences*, he only replied to her by impertinent words; *il m'a reparti avec beaucoup d'esprit*, he replied to me with much ingenuity.

Répartir and *départir*, in the sense of to distribute, to divide, are Regular Verbs, and conjugated, in all their Simple and Compound Tenses, like *finir*.

§. 17.

Sentir, to smell. Active and Neuter Verb.

Infinitive. Sentir, *to smell;* sentant, *smelling;* senti, *smelt.* Avoir senti, ayant senti.

Ind. Pres.	Je sens,	tu sens,	il *ou* elle sent;
	Nous sentons,	vous sentez,	ils *ou* elles sentent.
Imp.	Je sentais,	tu sentais,	il *ou* elle sentait;
	Nous sentions,	vous sentiez,	ils *ou* elles sentaient.
Pret.	Je sentis,	tu sentis,	il *ou* elle sentit;
	Nous sentîmes,	vous sentîtes,	ils *ou* elles sentirent.
Fut.	Je sentirai,	tu sentiras,	il *ou* elle sentira;
	Nous sentirons,	vous sentirez,	ils *ou* elles sentiront.
Cond.Pres.	Je sentirais,	tu sentirais,	il *ou* elle sentirait;
	Nous sentirions,	vous sentiriez,	ils *ou* elles sentiraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	sens,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle sente;
	Sentons,	sentez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles sentent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je sente,	que tu sentes,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle sente;
	Que nous sentions,	que vous sentiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles sentent.
Imp.	Que je sentisse,	que tu sentisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle sentît;
	Que nous sentissions,	que vous sentissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles sentissent.

Conjugate after the same manner the Verbs, *consentir*, to consent; *démentir*, to give one the lie; *mentir*, to lie; *pressentir*, to foresee; *ressentir*, to resent; *se ressentir*, to feel still; *se repentir*, to repent; and, in general, all Verbs ending in *entir*, in the Present of the Infinitive.

§. 18.

Servir, to serve. Active Verb.

Infinitive. Servir, *to serve;* servant, *serving;* servi, servie, *served.* Avoir servi, ayant servi.

Ind. Pres.	Je sers,	tu sers,	il *ou* elle sert;
	Nous servons,	vous servez,	ils *ou* elles servent.
Imp.	Je servais,	tu servais,	il *ou* elle servait;
	Nous servions,	vous serviez,	ils *ou* elles servaient.
Pret.	Je servis,	tu servis,	il *ou* elle servit;
	Nous servîmes,	vous servîtes,	ils *ou* elles servirent.
Fut.	Je servirai,	tu serviras,	il *ou* elle servira;
	Nous servirons,	vous servirez,	ils *ou* elles serviront.

Cond.Pret.	Je servirais,	tu servirais,	il *ou* elle servirait;
	Nous servirions,	vous serviriez,	ils *ou* elles serviraient.
Imperative.	[*No* 1*st person.*]	sers,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle serve;
	Servons,	Servez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles servent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je serve,	que tu serves,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle serve;
	Que nous servions,	que vous serviez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles servent.
Imp.	Que je servisse,	que tu servisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle servît;
	Que nous servissions,	que vous servissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles servissent.

Conjugate after the same manner—*Desservir,* to clear the table. *Asservir,* to enslave, to subject, is regular and conjugated like *finir.*

---

§. 19.

Sortir, to go out. NEUTER VERB.

Infinitive. Sortir, *to go out;* sortant, *going out;* sorti, sortie, *gone out.*
Etre sorti, étant sorti.

Ind. Pres.	Je sors,	tu sors,	il *ou* elle sort;
	Nous sortons,	vous sortez,	ils *ou* elles sortent.
Imp.	Je sortais,	tu sortais,	il *ou* elle sortait;
	Nous sortions,	vous sortiez,	ils *ou* elles sortaient.
Pret.	Je sortis,	tu sortis,	il *ou* elle sortit;
	Nous sortîmes,	vous sortîtes,	ils *ou* elles sortirent.
Fut.	Je sortirai,	tu sortiras,	il *ou* elle sortira;
	Nous sortirons,	vous sortirez,	ils *ou* elles sortiront.
Cond. Pres.	Je sortirais,	tu sortirais,	il *ou* elle sortirait;
	Nous sortirions,	vous sortiriez,	ils *ou* elles sortiraient.
Imperative.	[*No* 1*st person.*]	sors,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle sorte;
	Sortons,	sortez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles sortent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je sorte,	que tu sortes,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle sorte;
	Que nous sortions,	que vous sortiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles sortent.
Imp.	Que je sortisse,	que tu sortisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle sortît;
	Que nous sortissions,	que vous sortissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles sortissent.

Conjugate after the same manner *Ressortir,* to go out again; *dormir,* to sleep; *s'endormir,* to fall asleep; *se rendormir,* to fall asleep again; *endormir,* to lull asleep; *redormir,* to sleep again, &c.

Dormir, endormir, and *redormir,* take *avoir* in their Compound Tenses.

---

§. 20.

Vêtir, to clothe. ACTIVE VERB.

Infinitive. Vêtir, *to clothe;* vêtant, *clothing;* vêtu, vêtue, *clothed.*
Avoir vêtu, ayant vêtu.

Ind. Pres.	Je vêts,	tu vêts,	il *ou* elle vêt;
	Nous vêtons,	vous vêtez,	ils *ou* elles vêtent.

Imp.	Je vêtais,	tu vêtais,	il *ou* elle vêtait;
	Nous vêtions,	vous vêtiez,	ils *ou* elles vêtaient.
Pret.	Je vêtis,	tu vêtis,	il *ou* elle vêtit;
	Nous vêtîmes,	vous vêtîtes,	ils *ou* elles vêtirent.
Fut.	Je vêtirai,	tu vêtiras,	il *ou* elle vêtira;
	Nous vêtirons,	vous vêtirez,	ils *ou* elles vêtiront.
Cond. Pres.	Je vêtirais,	tu vêtirais,	il *ou* elle vêtirait;
	Nous vêtirions,	vous vêtiriez,	ils *ou* elles vêtiraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	vêts,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle vête:
	Vêtons,	vêtez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles vêtent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je vête,	que tu vêtes,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle vête;
	Que nous vêtions,	que vous vêtiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles vêtent.
Imp.	Que je vêtisse,	que tu vêtisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle vêtît;
	Que nous vêtissions,	que vous vêtissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles vêtissent.

Conjugate after the same manner, *Se vêtir*, to dress, to clothe one's self; *revêtir*, to clothe; *dévêtir*, to strip, to undress; *se dévêtir*, to divest one's self.

Revêtir and *dévêtir* take *avoir* in their Compound Tenses.

ARTICLE XIII.

Irregular Verbs of the Third Conjugation.

§. 1.

Déchoir, to decay. Neuter and Defective Verb.

Infinitive. Déchoir, *to decay;* [*No Present Participle.*] déchu, *or* ue, *decayed.*

Ind. Pres.	Je déchois,	tu déchois,	il *ou* elle déchoit;
	Nous déchoyons,	vous déchoyez,	ils *ou* elles déchoient.
Imp.†	Je déchoyais,	tu déchoyais,	il *ou* elle déchoyait;
	Nous déchoyions,	vous déchoyiez,	ils *ou* elles déchoyaient.
Pret.	Je déchus,	tu déchus,	il *ou* elle déchut;
	Nous déchûmes,	vous déchûtes,	ils *ou* elles déchurent.
Fut.	Je décherrai,	tu décherras,	il *ou* elle décherra;
	Nous décherrons,	vous décherrez,	ils *ou* elles décherront.
Cond. Pres.	Je décherrais,	tu décherrais,	il *ou* elle décherrait:
	Nous décherrions,	vous décherriez,	ils *ou* elles décherraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	déchois,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle déchoie;
	Déchoyons,	déchoyez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles déchoient.
Sub. Pres.	Que je déchoie,	que tu déchoies,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle déchoie;
	Que nous déchoyions,	que vous déchoyiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles déchoient.
Imp.	Que je déchusse,	que tu déchusses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle déchût;
	Que nous déchussions,	que vous déchussiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles déchussent.

---

† Although some think that the above Verb has no Imperfect, we are of a contrary opinion.

The above Verb is seldom used but in the Present of the Infinitive: as—"*Souffrir n'est rien, c'est tout que de déchoir*," "Suffering is nothing, the worst is declining;" and in its Compound Tenses, in which it takes *être*, when it expresses the state of the subject: as—*Ils sont déchus de leurs privilèges*, they have lost their privileges; and *avoir*, when it denotes an action:—*Depuis ce moment il a déchu de jour en jour*, from that moment he declined every day.

§. 2.

Mouvoir, to move. ACTIVE VERB.

Infinitive. Mouvoir, *to move;* mouvant, *moving;* mu, mue, *moved.*

Avoir mu, ayant mu.

Ind. Pres.	Je meus,	tu meus,	il *ou* elle meut;
	Nous mouvons,	vous mouvez,	ils *ou* elles meuvent.
Imp.	Je mouvais,	tu mouvais,	il *ou* elle mouvait;
	Nous mouvions,	vous mouviez,	ils *ou* elles mouvaient.
Pret.	Je mus,	tu mus,	il *ou* elle mut;
	Nous mûmes,	vous mûtes,	ils *ou* elles murent.
Fut.	Je mouvrai,	tu mouvras,	il *ou* elle mouvra;
	Nous mouvrons,	vous mouvrez,	ils *ou* elles mouvront.
Cond. Pres.	Je mouvrais,	tu mouvrais,	il *ou* elle mouvrait;
	Nous mouvrions,	vous mouvriez,	ils *ou* elles mouvraient.
Imperative.	[*No* 1*st person.*]	meus,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle meuve;
	Mouvons,	mouvez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles meuvent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je meuve,	que tu meuves,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle meuve;
	Que nous mouvions,	que vous mouviez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles meuvent.
Imp.	Que je musse,	que tu musses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle mût;
	Que nous mussions,	que vous mussiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles mussent.

The above Verb is only used in the Present of the Infinitive: as—*Je ne sais pas comment il a pu mouvoir cette pierre*, I do not know how he could move that stone.

We have, however, given all its Tenses, on account of the Verbs, which are conjugated after the same manner, such as: *Emouvoir*, to move; *s'émouvoir*, to be concerned; but this being a Pronominal one requires *être* in its Compound Tenses.

Promouvoir, to promote, which is also conjugated after the same manner, is only used in the Present of the Infinitive and in its Compound Tenses, which are formed with *avoir:* as—*On l'a promu*, he has been promoted; *on veut le promouvoir*, they wish to promote him.

§. 3.

Pouvoir, to be able. ACTIVE AND DEFECTIVE VERB.

Infinitive. Pouvoir, *to be able;* pouvant, *being able;* pu, [*no feminine,*] *been able.*

Avoir pu, ayant pu.

Ind. Pres.	Je puis *ou* Je peux,	tu peux,	il *ou* elle peut;
	Nous pouvons,	vous pouvez,	ils *ou* elles peuvent.

Imp.	Je pouvais,	tu pouvais,	il *ou* elle pouvait;
	Nous pouvions,	vous pouviez,	ils *ou* elles pouvaient.
Pret.	Je pus,	tu pus,	il *ou* elle put;
	Nous pûmes,	vous pûtes,	ils *ou* elles purent.
Fut.	Je pourrai,	tu pourras,	il *ou* elle pourra;
	Nous pourrons,	vous pourrez,	ils *ou* elles pourront.
Cond. Pres.	Je pourrais,	tu pourrais,	il *ou* elle pourrait;
	Nous pourrions,	vous pourriez,	ils *ou* elles pourraient.
Sub. Pres.	Que je puisse,	que tu puisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle puisse;
	Que nous puissions,	que vous puissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles puissent.
Imp.	Que je pusse,	que tu pusses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle pût;
	Que nous pussions,	que vous pussiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles pussent.

Although the above Verb is written with two *r*'s in the Future and Conditional, only one is pronounced.

§. 4.

Pourvoir, to provide. Neuter Verb.

Infinitive. Pourvoir, *to provide;* pourvoyant, *providing;* pourvu, pourvue, *provided.*

Avoir pourvu, ayant pourvu.

Ind. Pres.	Je pourvois,	tu pourvois,	il *ou* elle pourvoit;
	Nous pourvoyons,	vous pourvoyez,	ils *ou* elles pourvoient.
Imp.	Je pourvoyais,	tu pourvoyais,	il *ou* elle pourvoyait;
	Nous pourvoyions,	vous pourvoyiez,	ils *ou* elles pourvoyaient.
Pret.	Je pourvus,	tu pourvus,	il *ou* elle pourvut;
	Nous pourvûmes,	vous pourvûtes,	ils *ou* elles pourvurent.
Fut.	Je pourvoirai,	tu pourvoiras,	il *ou* elle pourvoira;
	Nous pourvoirons,	vous pourvoirez,	ils *ou* elles pourvoiront.
Cond. Pres.	Je pourvoirais,	tu pourvoirais,	il *ou* elle pourvoirait;
	Nous pourvoirions,	vous pourvoiriez,	ils *ou* elles pourvoiraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	pourvois,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle pourvoie,
	Pourvoyons,	pourvoyez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elless pourvoient.
Sub. Pres.	Que je pourvoie,	que tu pourvoies,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle pourvoie;
	Que nous pourvoyions,	que vous pourvoyiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles pourvoient.
Imp.	Que je pourvusse,	que tu pourvusses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle pourvût;
	Que nous pourvussions,	que vous pourvussiez	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles pourvussent.

§. 5.

Ravoir, to have *or* get again. Active Verb.

This Verb is only used in the Present of the Infinitive; as—*Il plaide pour ravoir son bien,* he pleads to get his property again.

§. 6.

Savoir, to know. ACTIVE VERB.

Infinitive. Savoir, *to know ;* sachant, *knowing ;* su, sue, *known.*

Avoir su, ayant su.

Ind. Pres.	Je sais,	tu sais,	il *ou* elle sait ;
	Nous savons,	vous savez,	ils *ou* elles savent.
Imp.	Je savais,	tu savais,	il *ou* elle savait ;
	Nous savions,	vous saviez,	ils *ou* elles savaient.
Pret.	Je sus,	tu sus,	il *ou* elle sut ;
	Nous sûmes,	vous sûtes,	ils *ou* elles surent.
Fut.	Je saurai,	tu sauras,	il *ou* elle saura ;
	Nous saurons,	vous saurez,	ils *ou* elles sauront.
Cond. Pres.	Je saurais,	tu saurais,	il *ou* elle saurait ;
	Nous saurions,	vous sauriez,	ils *ou* elles sauraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	sache,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle sache ;
	Sachons,	sachez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles sachent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je sache,	que tu saches,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle sache ;
	Que nous sachions,	que vous sachiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles sachent.
Imp.	Que je susse,	que tu susses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle sût ;
	Que nous sussions,	que vous sussiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles sussent.

Observe.—Savoir must not be confounded with *connaître*, which is also Englished by *to know*. *Connaître* is mostly used in the sense of *to be acquainted with*, and *savoir* in other circumstances.

Savoir is the only Verb in the French language which can be put in the Subjunctive Mood, without being preceded by any other word requiring it, but it must be in a negative sense : as—*Je ne sache rien de plus digne d'éloge*, I know nothing more praiseworthy.

---

§. 7.

S'asseoir, to sit down. PRONOMINAL VERB.

Infinitive. S'asseoir, *to sit down ;* s'asseyant, *sitting ;* assis, assise, *sat.*

S'être assis, s'étant assis.

Ind. Pres.	Je m'assieds,	tu t'assieds,	il *ou* elle s'assied ;
	Nous nous asseyons,	vous vous asseyez,	ils *ou* elles s'asseient.
Imp.	Je m'asseyais,	tu t'asseyais,	il *ou* elle s'asseyait ;
	Nous nous asseyions,	vous vous asseyiez,	ils *ou* elles s'asseyaient.
Pret.	Je m'assis,	tu t'assis,	il *ou* elle s'assit ;
	Nous nous assîmes,	vous vous assîtes,	ils *ou* elles s'assirent.

Fut.†	Je m'assiérai,	tu t'assiéras,	il *ou* elle s'assiéra ;
	Nous nous assiérons,	vous vous assiérez,	ils *ou* elles s'assiéront.
Cond.Pres.	Je m'assiérais,	tu t'assiérais,	il *ou* elle s'assiérait ;
	Nous nous assiérions,	vous vous assiériez,	ils *ou* elles s'assiéraient.
Imperative.	[*No* 1*st person.*]	assieds-toi,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle s'asseie ;
	Asseyons-nous,	asseyez-vous,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles s'asseient.
Sub. Pres.	Que je m'asseie,	que tu t'asseies,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle s'asseie ;
	Que nous nous asseyions,	que vous vous asseyiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles s'asseient.
Imp.	Que je m'assisse,	que tu t'assisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle s'assît;
	Que nous nous assissions,	que vous vous assissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles s'assissent.

Conjugate after the same manner *se rasseoir*, to sit down again.

Asseoir, to set, follows also the same Conjugation; but, being an Active Verb, and not a Pronominal one, it only admits the Personal Pronouns—*Je, tu, il, elle, nous, vous, ils, elles;* and its Compound Tenses are formed with *avoir ;* as—*J'ai assis l'enfant sur la chaise,* I set the child upon the chair.

Rasseoir, to settle, in speaking of liquids which purify by remaining still, is only used in the Present of the Infinitive, and sometimes in its Compound Tenses, which are formed with *être;* as—*Laissez rasseoir le café,* let the coffee settle ; *il est bien rassis,* it is quite settled.

§. 8.

Surseoir, to reprieve, to supersede. ACTIVE VERB.

Infinitive. Surseoir, *to reprieve ;* sursoyant, *reprieving ;* sursis, sursise, *reprieved.*

Avoir sursis, ayant sursis.

Ind. Pres.	Je sursois,	tu sursois,	il *ou* elle sursoit ;
	Nous sursoyons,	vous sursoyez,	ils *ou* elles sursoient.
Imp.	Je sursoyais,	tu sursoyais,	il *ou* elle sursoyait ;
	Nous sursoyions,	vous sursoyiez,	ils *ou* elles sursoyaient.
Pret.	Je sursis,	tu sursis,	il *ou* elle sursit ;
	Nous sursîmes,	vous sursîtes,	ils *ou* elles sursirent.
Fut.	Je surseoirai,	tu surseoiras,	il *ou* elle surseoira ;
	Nous surseoirons,	vous surseoirez,	ils *ou* elles surseoiront.
Cond.Pres.	Je surseoirais,	tu surseoirais,	il *ou* elle surseoirait ;
	Nous surseoirions,	vous surseoiriez,	ils *ou* elles surseoiraient.
Imperative.	[*No* 1*st person.*]	surseois,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle surseoie ;
	Sursoyons,	sursoyez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles surseoient.
Sub. Pres.	Que je surseoie,	que tu surseoies,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle surseoie ;
	Que nous sursoyions,	que vous sursoyiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles surseoient.
Imp.	Que je sursisse,	que tu sursisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle sursît ;
	Que nous sursissions,	que vous sursissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles sursissent.

† *Je m'asseierai, tu t'asseieras,* &c. and *je m'asseierais, tu t'asseierais,* &c. may also be used in the Future and Conditional.

The above Verb, which is principally made use of in proceedings at law, is seldom used but in the Present of the Infinitive, and in its Compound Tenses: as—*On a sursis la délibération, l'exécution de cet arrêt,* they have put off the deliberation, the execution of that sentence.

We also say—*Surseoir à la délibération, à l'exécution d'un arrêt,* in which sense, *surseoir* is neuter.

When *sursis,* Past Participle of *surseoir,* is taken adjectively, it is frequently used with the different Tenses of *être:* as—*Le jugement est sursis,* the judgement is put off.

§. 9.

Voir, to see. Active Verb.

Infinitive. Voir, *to see;* voyant, *seeing;* vu, vue, *seen.*

Avoir vu, ayant vu.

Ind. Pres.	Je vois, Nous voyons,	tu vois, vous voyez,	il *ou* elle voit; ils *ou* elles voient.
Imp.	Je voyais, Nous voyions,	tu voyais, vous voyiez,	il *ou* elle voyait; ils *ou* elles voyaient.
Pret.	Je vis, Nous vîmes,	tu vis, vous vîtes,	il *ou* elle vit; ils *ou* elles virent.
Fut.	Je verrai, Nous verrons,	tu verras, vous verrez,	il *ou* elle verra; ils *ou* elles verront.
Cond. Pres.	Je verrais, Nous verrions,	tu verrais, vous verriez,	il *ou* elle verrait; ils *ou* elles verraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*] Voyons,	vois, voyez,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle voie; qu'ils *ou* qu'elles voient.
Sub. Pres.	Que je voie, Que nous voyions,	que tu voies, que vous voyiez,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle voie; qu'ils *ou* qu'elles voient.
Imp.	Que je visse, Que nous vissions,	que tu visses, que vous vissiez,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle vît; qu'ils *ou* qu'elles vissent.

Conjugate after the same manner the Verbs *revoir,* to see again; *entrevoir,* to have a glimpse of; *prévoir,* to foresee; observing that *prévoir* makes, in the Future,—*Je prévoirai, tu prévoiras,* &c. and in the Conditional,—*Je prévoirais, tu prévoirais,* &c.

§. 10.

Vouloir, to be willing. Active and Defective Verb.

Infinitive. Vouloir, *to be willing;* voulant, *being willing;* voulu, *been willing.*

Avoir voulu, ayant voulu.

Ind. Pres.	Je veux,	tu veux,	il *ou* elle veut;
	Nous voulons,	vous voulez,	ils *ou* elles veulent.
Imp.	Je voulais,	tu voulais,	il *ou* elle voulait;
	Nous voulions,	vous vouliez,	ils *ou* elles voulaient.
Pret.	Je voulus,	tu voulus,	il *ou* elle voulut;
	Nous voulûmes,	vous voulûtes,	ils *ou* elles voulurent.
Fut.	Je voudrai,	tu voudras,	il *ou* elle voudra;
	Nous voudrons,	vous voudrez,	ils *ou* elles voudront.
Cond. Pres.	Je voudrais,	tu voudrais,	il *ou* elle voudrait;
	Nous voudrions,	vous voudriez,	ils *ou* elles voudraient.

Imperative. Veuillez, [*Second Person Plural is the only one used.*]

Sub. Pres.	Que je veuille,	que tu veuilles,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle veuille;
	Que nous voulions,	que vous vouliez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles veuillent.
Imp.	Que je voulusse,	que tu voulusses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle voulût;
	Que nous voulussions,	que vous voulussiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles voulussent.

---

§. 11.

Valoir, to be worth. Neuter and Defective Verb.

Infinitive. Valoir, *to be worth;* valant, *being worth;* valu, *been worth.*
Avoir valu, ayant valu.

Ind. Pres.	Je vaux,	tu vaux,	il *ou* elle vaut;
	Nous valons,	vous valez,	ils *ou* elles valent.
Imp.	Je valais,	tu valais,	il *ou* elle valait;
	Nous valions,	vous valiez,	ils *ou* elles valaient.
Pret.	Je valus,	tu valus,	il *ou* elle valut;
	Nous valûmes,	vous valûtes,	ils *ou* elles valurent.
Fut.	Je vaudrai,	tu vaudras,	il *ou* elle vaudra;
	Nous vaudrons,	vous vaudrez,	ils *ou* elles vaudront.
Cond. Pres.	Je vaudrais,	tu vaudrais,	il *ou* elle vaudrait;
	Nous vaudrions,	vous vaudriez,	ils *ou* elles vaudraient.
Sub. Pres.	Que je vaille,	que tu vailles,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle vaille;
	Que nous valions,	que vous valiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles vaillent.
Imp.	Que je valusse,	que tu valusses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle valût;
	Que nous valussions,	que vous valussiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles valussent.

This Verb has no Imperative.

Conjugate after the same manner the Verbs *prévaloir*, to prevail; *équivaloir*, to be equivalent; and *revaloir*, to repay.

Prévaloir makes, in the Present of the Subjunctive, *que je prévale, que tu prévales, qu'il prévale, que nous prévalions, que vous prévaliez, qu'ils prévalent:* it generally governs the Preposition *sur;* as—*Il ne faut pas que la raison prévale sur l'usage*, reason must not prevail over custom. When it is taken in a pronominal way, it requires *de:* as—*L'homme ne doit pas se prévaloir beaucoup de sa raison qui le trompe*

si souvent, men must not boast much of their reason which so often deceives them.

Equivaloir, to be equivalent, is seldom used in the Infinitive, and in any of its other Tenses, except sometimes in the Third Person Singular: as—*Ceci équivaut à cela;* and even then it is better to use the Adjective *équivalent*, with the different Tenses of *être*, and say—*Ceci est équivalent à cela*, this is equivalent to that. It requires the Preposition *à*.

Revaloir, to return like for like, is always used with the Pronouns *le* or *cela:* as—*Je le lui ai revalu*, I returned him like for like; *je lui revaudrai cela*, I shall return him like for like.

ARTICLE XIV.

Irregular Verbs of the Fourth Conjugation.

§. 1.

Absoudre, to absolve. Active and Defective Verb.

Infinitive. Absoudre, *to absolve;* absolvant, *absolving;* absous, absoute, *absolved.*

Avoir absous, ayant absous.

Ind. Pres.	J'absous,	tu absous,	il *ou* elle absout;
	Nous absolvons,	vous absolvez,	ils *ou* elles absolvent.
Imp.	J'absolvais,	tu absolvais,	il *ou* elle absolvait;
	Nous absolvions,	vous absolviez,	ils *ou* elles absolvaient.
Pret.	[*This Verb has no Definite Preterite.*]		
Fut.	J'absoudrai,	tu absoudras,	il *ou* elle absoudra;
	Nous absoudrons,	vous absoudrez,	ils *ou* elles absoudront.
Cond. Pres.	J'absoudrais,	tu absoudrais,	il *ou* elle absoudrait;
	Nous absoudrions,	vous absoudriez,	ils *ou* elles absoudraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	absous,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle absolve;
	Absolvons,	absolvez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles absolvent.
Sub. Pres.	Que j'absolve,	que tu absolves,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle absolve;
	Que nous absolvions,	que vous absolviez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles absolvent.
Imp.	[*No Imperfect of the Subjunctive.*]		

Conjugate after the same manner *dissoudre*, to dissolve.

---

§. 2.

Accroire, to make believe, *or* to impose upon one.

This Verb is only used in the Present of the Infinitive with the Verb *faire*, which stands as auxiliary to it: as—*On ne peut pas lui en faire accroire*, he is not a man to be imposed upon; *elle lui fait accroire tout ce qu'elle veut*, she makes him believe any thing she likes.

§. 3.

Boire, to drink. Active Verb.

Infinitive. Boire, *to drink;* buvant, *drinking;* bu, bue, *drank.*
Avoir bu, ayant bu.

Ind. Pres.	Je bois,	tu bois,	il *ou* elle boit;
	Nous buvons,	vous buvez,	ils *ou* elles boivent.
Imp.	Je buvais,	tu buvais,	il *ou* elle buvait;
	Nous buvions,	vous buviez,	ils *ou* elles buvaient.
Pret.	Je bus,	tu bus,	il *ou* elle but;
	Nous bûmes,	vous bûtes,	ils *ou* elles burent.
Fut.	Je boirai,	tu boiras,	il *ou* elle boira;
	Nous boirons,	vous boirez,	ils *ou* elles boiront.
Cond. Pres.	Je boirais,	tu boirais,	il *ou* elle boirait;
	Nous boirions,	vous boiriez,	ils *ou* elles boiraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	bois,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle boive;
	Buvons,	buvez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles boivent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je boive,	que tu boives,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle boive;
	Que nous buvions,	que vous buviez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles boivent.
Imp.	Que je busse,	que tu busses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle bût;
	Que nous bussions,	que vous bussiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles bussent.

Conjugate after the same manner *reboire*, to drink again.

§. 4.

Battre, to beat. Active Verb.

Infinitive. Battre, *to beat;* battant, *beating;* battu, battue, *beaten.*
Avoir battu, ayant battu.

Ind. Pres.	Je bats,	tu bats,	il *ou* elle bat;
	Nous battons,	vous battez,	ils *ou* elles battent.
Imp.	Je battais,	tu battais,	il *ou* elle battait;
	Nous battions,	vous battiez,	ils *ou* elles battaient.
Pret.	Je battis,	tu battis,	il *ou* elle battit;
	Nous battîmes,	vous battîtes,	ils *ou* elles battirent.
Fut.	Je battrai,	tu battras,	il *ou* elle battra;
	Nous battrons,	vous battrez,	ils *ou* elles battront.
Cond. Pres.	Je battrais,	tu battrais,	il *ou* elle battrait;
	Nous battrions,	vous battriez,	ils *ou* elles battraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	bats,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle batte;
	Battons,	battez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles battent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je batte,	que tu battes,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle batte;
	Que nous battions,	que vous battiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles battent.

Imp.	Que je battisse,	que tu battisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle battît;
	Que nous battissions,	que vous battissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles battissent.

Conjugate after the same manner *abattre*, to pull down; *combattre*, to fight; *débattre*, to debate; *rebattre*, to beat again; *rabattre*, to pull down again, to abate; *s'ébattre*, to make *or* be merry; *se débattre*, to struggle, &c. &c.

---

§. 5.

Croire, to believe. ACTIVE VERB.

Infinitive. Croire, *to believe*; croyant, *believing*; cru, crue, *believed.* Avoir cru, ayant cru.

Ind. Pres.	Je crois,	tu crois,	il *ou* elle croit;
	Nous croyons,	vous croyez,	ils *ou* elles croient.
Imp.	Je croyais,	tu croyais,	il *ou* elle croyait;
	Nous croyions,	vous croyiez,	ils *ou* elles croyaient.
Pret.	Je crus,	tu crus,	il *ou* elle crut;
	Nous crûmes,	vous crûtes,	ils *ou* elles crurent.
Fut.	Je croirai,	tu croiras,	il *ou* elle croira;
	Nous croirons,	vous croirez,	ils *ou* elles croiront.
Cond. Pres.	Je croirais,	tu croirais,	il *ou* elle croirait;
	Nous croirions,	vous croiriez,	ils *ou* elles croiraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	crois,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle croie;
	Croyons,	croyez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles croient.
Sub. Pres.	Que je croie,	que tu croies,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle croie;
	Que nous croyions,	que vous croyiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles croient.
Imp.	Que je crusse,	que tu crusses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle crût;
	Que nous crussions,	que vous crussiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles crussent.

---

§. 6.

Croître, to grow. NEUTER VERB.

Infinitive. Croître, *to grow*; croissant, *growing*; crû, crûe, *grown.* Avoir crû, ayant crû.

Ind. Pres.	Je croîs,	tu croîs,	il *ou* elle croît;
	Nous croissons,	vous croissez,	ils *ou* elles croissent.
Imp.	Je croissais,	tu croissais,	il *ou* elle croissait;
	Nous croissions,	vous croissiez,	ils *ou* elles croissaient.
Pret.	Je crûs,	tu crûs,	il *ou* elle crût;
	Nous crûmes,	vous crûtes,	ils *ou* elles crûrent.
Fut.	Je croîtrai,	tu croîtras,	il *ou* elle croîtra;
	Nous croîtrons,	vous croîtrez,	ils *ou* elles croîtront.

Cond.Pres.	Je croîtrais,	tu croîtrais,	il *ou* elle croîtraît;
	Nous croîtrions,	vous croîtriez,	ils *ou* elles croîtraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	croîs,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle croisse;
	Croissons,	croissez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles croissent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je croisse,	que tu croisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle croisse;
	Que nous croissions,	que vous croissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles croissent.
Imp.	Que je crûsse,	que tu crûsses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle crût;
	Que nous crûssions,	que vous crûssiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles crûssent.

Conjugate after the same manner *accroître*,† to increase, and *décroître*, to decrease.

Croître takes *avoir* in its Compound Tenses, when it expresses the action of growing: as—*Il a bien crû cette année*, he has grown very much this year; but it takes *être*, when it denotes the state in which one is: as—*Il n'est point crû du tout*, he is not grown at all.

§. 7.

Connaître, to know. Active Verb.

Infinitive. Connaître, *to know;* connaissant, *knowing;* connu, connue, *known.*

Avoir connu, ayant connu.

Ind. Pres.	Je connais,	tu connais,	il *ou* elle connaît;
	Nous connaisons,	vous connaissez,	ils *ou* elles connaissent.
Imp.	Je connaissais,	tu connaissais,	il *ou* elle connaissait;
	Nous connaissions,	vous connaissiez,	ils *ou* elles connaissaient.
Pret.	Je connus,	tu connus,	il *ou* elle connut;
	Nous connûmes,	vous connûtes,	ils *ou* elles connurent.
Fut.	Je connaîtrai,	tu connaîtras,	il *ou* elle connaîtra;
	Nous connaîtrons,	vous connaîtrez,	ils *ou* elles connaîtront.
Cond.Pres.	Je connaîtrais,	tu connaîtrais,	il *ou* elle connaîtrait;
	Nous connaîtrions,	vous connaîtriez,	ils *ou* elles connaîtraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	connais,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle connaisse;
	Connaissons,	connaissez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles connaissent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je connaisse,	que tu connaisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle connaisse;
	Que nous connaissions,	que vous connaissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles connaissent.
Imp.	Que je connusse,	que tu connusses	qu'il *ou* qu'elle connût;
	Que nous connussions,	que vous connussiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles connussent.

Conjugate after the same manner *reconnaître*, to know again; *paraître*, to appear; *apparaître*, to appear; *comparaître*, to make one's appearance; *disparaître*, to disappear; *reparaître*, to appear again; *méconnaître*, not to know; *se méconnaître*, to forget one's self; and, in general, all those ending in *aître* or *oître* in the Present of the Infinitive, except *croître*, to grow; *naître*, to be born; *paître*, to feed, to graze, (and their derivatives,) which are exemplified at full length, on account of not being exactly similar either in the termination of all their Tenses or in the accentuation.

† *Accru*, Past Participle of *accroître*, is written without any accent.

§. 8.

Craindre, to fear. Active Verb.

Infinitive. Craindre, *to fear;* craignant, *fearing;* craint, crainte, *feared.*

Avoir craint, ayant craint.

Ind. Pres.	Je crains,	tu crains,	il *ou* elle craint;
	Nous craignons,	vous craignez,	ils *ou* elles craignent.
Imp.	Je craignais,	tu craignais,	il *ou* elle craignait;
	Nous craignions,	vous craigniez,	ils *ou* elles craignaient
Pret.	Je craignis,	tu craignis,	il *ou* elle craignit;
	Nous craignîmes,	vous craignîtes,	ils *ou* elles craignirent.
Fut.	Je craindrai,	tu craindras,	il *ou* elle craindra;
	Nous craindrons,	vous craindrez,	ils *ou* elles craindront.
Cond. Pres.	Je craindrais,	tu craindrais,	il *ou* elle craindrait;
	Nous craindrions,	vous craindriez,	ils *ou* elles craindraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	crains,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle craigne;
	Craignons,	craignez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles craignent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je craigne,	que tu craignes,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle craigne;
	Que nous craignions,	que vous craigniez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles craignent.
Imp.	Que je craignisse,	que tu craignisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle craignît;
	Que nous craignissions,	que vous craignissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles craignissent.

Conjugate after the same manner all Verbs ending, in the Present of the Infinitive, in *aindre, eindre,* and *oindre:* as—*Plaindre,* to pity; *peindre,* to paint; *joindre,* to join; *atteindre,* to reach; *astreindre,* to bind, to subject; *ceindre,* to gird; *poindre,* to peep, to dawn, to shoot forth, &c. &c.

Poindre is only used in the Present of the Infinitive and in the Future: as—*Lorsque les herbes commencent à poindre au printems,* when the grass begins to peep in the spring; *je partirai dès que le jour poindra,* I shall set out at break of day.

---

§. 9.

Conclure, to conclude. Active Verb.

Infinitive. Conclure, *to conclude;* concluant, *concluding;* conclu, conclue, *concluded.*

Avoir conclu, ayant conclu.

Ind. Pres.	Je conclus,	tu conclus,	il *ou* elle conclut;
	Nous concluons,	vous concluez,	ils *ou* elles concluent.
Imp.	Je concluais,	tu concluais,	il *ou* elle concluait;
	Nous concluïons,	vous concluïez,	ils *ou* elles concluaient.
Pret.	Je conclus,	tu conclus,	il *ou* elle conclut;
	Nous conclûmes,	vous conclûtes,	ils *ou* elles conclurent.

Fut.	Je conclurai,	tu concluras,	il *ou* elle conclura ;
	Nous conclurons,	vous conclurez,	ils *ou* elles concluront.
Cond.Pres.	Je conclurais,	tu conclurais,	il *ou* elle conclurait ;
	Nous conclurions,	vous concluriez,	ils *ou* elles concluraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	conclus,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle conclue ;
	Concluons,	concluez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles concluent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je conclue,	que tu conclues,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle conclue ;
	Que nous concluïons,	que vous concluïez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles concluent.
Imp.	Que je conclusse,	que tu conclusses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle conclût ;
	Que nous conclussions,	que vous conclussiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles conclussent.

Conjugate after the same manner *exclure*, to exclude.

A diæresis (¨) is always required in those Verbs over the *i* of the terminations *ions*, *iez*, at the two First Persons Plural of the Imperfect of the Indicative, and of the Present of the Subjunctive, to denote that the *i* is to be pronounced distinct from the *u* which precedes: thus—*Conclu-ïons, conclu-ïez ; exclu-ïons, exclu-ïez,* and not *conclui-ons, conclui-ez ; exclui-ons, exclui-ez.*

---

§. 10.

Coudre, to sew. Active Verb.

Infinitive. Coudre, *to sew ;* cousant, *sewing ;* cousu, cousue, *sewed.* Avoir cousu, ayant cousu.

Ind. Pres.	Je couds,	tu couds,	il *ou* elle coud ;
	Nous cousons,	vous cousez,	ils *ou* elles cousent.
Imp.	Je cousais,	tu cousais,	il *ou* elle cousait ;
	Nous cousions,	vous cousiez,	ils *ou* elles cousaient.
Pret.	Je cousis,	tu cousis,	il *ou* elle cousit ;
	Nous cousîmes,	vous cousîtes,	ils *ou* elles cousirent.
Fut.	Je coudrai,	tu coudras,	il *ou* elle coudra ;
	Nous coudrons,	vous coudrez,	ils *ou* elles coudront.
Cond.Pres.	Je coudrais,	tu coudrais,	il *ou* elle coudrait ;
	Nous coudrions,	vous coudriez,	ils *ou* elles coudraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	cous,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle couse ;
	Cousons,	cousez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles cousent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je couse,	que tu couses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle couse ;
	Que nous cousions,	que vous cousiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles cousent.
Imp.	Que je cousisse,	que tu cousisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle cousît ;
	Que nous cousissions,	que vous cousissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles cousissent.

Conjugate after the same manner *découdre*, to unsew ; *recoudre*, to sew again.

§. 11.

Confire, to pickle. ACTIVE VERB.

Infinitive. Confire, *to pickle;* confisant, *pickling;* confit, confite, *pickled.*

Avoir confit, ayant confit.

Ind. Pres.	Je confis, Nous confisons,	tu confis, vous confisez,	il *ou* elle confit; ils *ou* elles confisent.
Imp.	Je confisais, Nous confisions,	tu confisais, vous confisiez,	il *ou* elle confisait; ils *ou* elles confisaient.
Pret.	Je confis, Nous confîmes,	tu confis, vous confîtes,	il *ou* elle confit; ils *ou* elles confirent.
Fut.	Je confirai, Nous confirons,	tu confiras, vous confirez,	il *ou* elle confira; ils *ou* elles confiront.
Cond. Pres.	Je confirais, Nous confirions,	tu confirais, vous confiriez,	il *ou* elle confirait; ils *ou* elles confiraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*] Confisons,	confis, confisez,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle confise; qu'ils *ou* qu'elles confisent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je confise, Que nous confisions,	que tu confises, que vous confisiez,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle confise; qu'ils *ou* qu'elles confisent.
Imp.	Que je confisse, Que nous confissions,	que tu confisses, que vous confissiez,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle confît; qu'ils *ou* qu'elles confissent.

Conjugate after the same manner *circoncire,*† to circumcise; and *suffire,* to suffice; with this difference only, that *circoncire* makes *circoncis, circoncise,* in its Past Participle; and *suffire suffi,* without any feminine.

§. 12.

Conduire, to conduct. ACTIVE VERB.

Infinitive. Conduire, *to conduct;* conduisant, *conducting;* conduit, conduite, *conducted.*

Avoir conduit, ayant conduit.

Ind. Pres.	Je conduis, Nous conduisons,	tu conduis, vous conduisez,	il *ou* elle conduit; ils *ou* elles conduisent.
Imp.	Je conduisais, Nous conduisions,	tu conduisais, vous conduisiez,	il *ou* elle conduisait; ils *ou* elles conduisaient.
Pret.	Je conduisis, Nous conduisîmes,	tu conduisis, vous conduisîtes,	il *ou* elle conduisit; ils *ou* elles conduisirent.
Fut.	Je conduirai, Nous conduirons,	tu conduiras, vous conduirez,	il *ou* elle conduira; ils *ou* elles conduiront.

† The *French Academy, Restaut, Wailly, Férand,* and *Demandre* think that *circoncire* has no *Present Participle,* no *Imperfect* either in the Indicative or Subjunctive, whilst others are of a contrary opinion.

Cond. Pres.	Je conduirais,	tu conduirais,	il *ou* elle conduirait ;
	Nous conduirions,	vous conduiriez,	ils *ou* elles conduiraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	conduis,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle conduise ;
	Conduisons,	conduisez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles conduisent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je conduise,	que tu conduises,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle conduise ;
	Que nous conduisions,	que vous conduisiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles conduisent.
Imp.	Que je conduisisse,	que tu conduisisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle conduisît ;
	Que nous conduisisions,	que vous conduisisiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles conduisisent.

Conjugate after the same manner all Verbs ending in the Present of the Infinitive Mood in *uire :* as—*Déduire,* to deduct ; *instruire,* to instruct ; *réduire,* to reduce ; *introduire,* to introduce, &c. &c.

Nuire, to hurt, makes *nui*† in its Past Participle, being regular in all its other Tenses.

Luire, to shine ; *reluire,* to glitter, make, also, *lui*† and *relui*† in their Past Participle ; they have no Definite Preterite of the Indicative, no Imperative, and no Imperfect of the Subjunctive, but are regular in their other Tenses.

---

§. 13.

Clore, to close. Active and Defective Verb.

This Verb is only used in the three First Persons Singular of the Present of the Indicative : as—*Je clos, tu clos, il* or *elle clôt :* in the Future, *je clorai, &c.* : in the Conditional, *je clorais, &c.* : in the Imperative, *clos :* in the three First Persons Singular of the Present of the Subjunctive—*Que je close, que tu closes, qu'il* or *qu'elle close :* in the Present of the Infinitive, *clore :* in the Past Participle, *clos, close :* and in all its Compound Tenses, which are formed with *avoir.*

The Present of the Infinitive is frequently used with the different Tenses of the Verb *faire.*

Enclore, to enclose, is conjugated after the same manner.

---

§. 14.

Dire, to say, *or* to tell. Active Verb.

Infinitive. Dire, *to say ;* disant, *saying ;* dit, dite, *said.*
Avoir dit, ayant dit.

Ind. Pres.	Je dis,	tu dis,	il *ou* elle dit ;
	Nous disons,	vous dites,	ils *ou* elles disent.
Imp.	Je disais,	tu disais,	il *ou* elle disait ;
	Nous disions,	vous disiez,	ils *ou* elles disaient.

† The Past Participles, *nui, lui,* and *relui,* have no feminine.

Pret.	Je dis,	tu dis,	il *ou* elle dit ;
	Nous dîmes,	vous dîtes,	ils *ou* elles dirent.
Fut.	Je dirai,	tu diras,	il *ou* elle dira ;
	Nous dirons,	vous direz,	ils *ou* elles diront.
Cond. Pres.	Je dirais,	tu dirais,	il *ou* elle dirait ;
	Nous dirions,	vous diriez,	ils *ou* elles diraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	dis,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle dise ;
	Disons,	dites,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles disent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je dise,	que tu dises,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle dise ;
	Que nous disions,	que vous disiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles disent.
Imp.	Que je disse,	que tu disses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle dît ;
	Que nous dissions,	que vous dissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles dissent.

Conjugate after the same manner *redire*, to say again.

The following Verbs, *contredire*, to contradict; *dédire*, to unsay, to disown; *interdire*, to prohibit; *médire*, to slander; *maudire*, to curse; *prédire*, to foretell; *se dédire*, to recant, to go from one's word, are also conjugated after the same manner, except in the Second Person Plural of the Present of the Indicative, in which they make—*Vous contredisez ; vous dédisez ; vous interdisez ; vous médisez ; vous maudissez ; vous prédisez ; vous vous dédisez ;* and in the Second Person Plural of the Imperative—*Contredisez ; dédisez ; interdisez ; médisez ; maudissez ; prédisez ; dédisez-vous ;* and not—*Vous contredites, vous dédites, vous médites, &c. &c.*: as—*Dire*, does.

Maudire takes two *s*'s in the Present Participle: as—*Maudissant*, cursing; in the three First Persons Plural of the Present of the Indicative—*Nous maudissons*, we curse; *vous maudissez*, you curse; *ils* or *elles maudissent*, they curse: in all the Imperfect—*Je maudissais, tu maudissais, il* or *elle maudissait, nous maudissions, vous maudissiez, ils* or *elles maudissaient*: in the three Persons Plural of the Present of the Subjunctive—*Que nous maudissions, que vous maudissiez, qu'ils* or *qu'elles maudissent*: and in all the Imperative, except in the Second Person Singular: as—*Maudis, qu'il* or *qu'elle maudisse ; maudissons, maudissez ; qu'ils* or *qu'elles maudissent*: in the other Persons and Tenses, it is conjugated like *dire*.

§. 15.

Ecrire, to write. Active Verb.

Infinitive. Ecrire, *to write* ; écrivant, *writing* ; écrit, écrite, *written*.
Avoir écrit, ayant écrit.

Ind. Pres.	J'écris,	tu écris,	il *ou* elle écrit ;
	Nous écrivons,	vous écrivez,	ils *ou* elles écrivent.
Imp.	J'écrivais,	tu écrivais,	il *ou* elle écrivait ;
	Nous écrivions,	vous écriviez,	ils *ou* elles écrivaient.
Pret.	J'écrivis,	tu écrivis,	il *ou* elle écrivit ;
	Nous écrivîmes,	vous écrivîtes,	ils *ou* elles écrivirent.

Fut.	J'écrirai,	tu écriras,	il *ou* elle écrira ;
	Nous écrirons,	vous écrirez,	ils *ou* elles écriront.
Cond. Pres.	J'écrirais,	tu écrirais,	il *ou* elle écrirait ;
	Nous écririons,	vous écririez,	ils *ou* elles écriraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	écris,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle écrive ;
	Écrivons,	écrivez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles écrivent.
Sub. Pres.	Que j'écrive,	que tu écrives,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle écrive ;
	Que nous écrivions,	que vous écriviez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles écrivent.
Imp.	Que j'écrivisse,	que tu écrivisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle écrivît ;
	Que nous écrivissions,	que vous écrivissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles écrivissent.

Conjugate after the same manner the Verbs *circonscrire,* to circumscribe ; *décrire,* to describe ; *inscrire,* to inscribe ; *prescrire,* to prescribe ; *proscrire,* to proscribe ; *récrire,* to write again ; *souscrire,* to subscribe ; *transcrire,* to transcribe, &c.

---

§. 16.

Faire, to do, to make. Active Verb.

Infinitive. Faire, *to do ;* faisant, *doing ;* fait, faite, *done.*

Avoir fait, ayant fait.

Ind. Pres.	Je fais,	tu fais,	il *ou* elle fait ;
	Nous faisons,	vous faites,	ils *ou* elles font.
Imp.	Je faisais,	tu faisais,	il *ou* elle faisait ;
	Nous faisions,	vous faisiez,	ils *ou* elles faisaient.
Pret.	Je fis,	tu fis,	il *ou* elle fit ;
	Nous fîmes,	vous fîtes,	ils *ou* elles firent.
Fut.	Je ferai,	tu feras,	il *ou* elle fera ;
	Nous ferons,	vous ferez,	ils *ou* elles feront.
Cond. Pres.	Je ferais,	tu ferais,	il *ou* elle ferait ;
	Nous ferions,	vous feriez,	ils *ou* elles feraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	fais,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle fasse ;
	Faisons,	faites,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles fassent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je fasse,	que tu fasses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle fasse ;
	Que nous fassions,	que vous fassiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles fassent.
Imp.	Que je fisse,	que tu fisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle fît ;
	Que nous fissions,	que vous fissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles fissent.

Conjugate after the same manner *contrefaire,* to counterfeit, to mimic ; *défaire,* to undo ; *rédéfaire,* to undo again ; *réfaire,* to do again ; *satisfaire,* to satisfy ; *surfaire,* to ask too much.

Forfaire, to forfeit, to act contrary to one's duty, is a Neuter and Defective Verb, used only in the Present of the Infinitive, and in the Compound Tenses, which are formed with *avoir* and the Past Participle *forfait.* It is principally used at the bar, in speaking of the partiality of a judge : *Si un juge vient à forfaire,* if a judge acts contrary

to his duty. We also say, in a familiar style, in speaking of a woman who has suffered herself to be seduced :—*Elle a forfait à son honneur*, she has forfeited her honour.

---

§. 17.

Frire, to fry. ACTIVE AND DEFECTIVE VERB.

This Verb is only used in the three First Persons Singular of the Present of the Indicative—*Je fris, tu fris, il* or *elle frit*. In the Future—*Je frirai, tu friras, il* or *elle frira, nous frirons, vous frirez, ils* or *elles friront*. In the Conditional—*Je frirais, tu frirais, il* or *elle frirait, nous fririons, vous fririez, ils* or *elles friraient*. In the Second Person Singular of the Imperative, *fris*. In the Present of the Infinitive, *frire*; and in the Compound Tenses which are formed with *avoir*, and the Past Participle, *frit, frite*.

To supply the Persons and Tenses which are wanting in this Verb, we use the different Tenses of the Verb *faire* with the Infinitive *frire*: thus—*Nous faisons frire, vous faites frire, ils* or *elles font frire; je faisais frire, tu faisais frire, il* or *elle faisait frire*, &c. &c.

---

§. 18.

Lire, to read. ACTIVE VERB.

Infinitive. Lire, *to read;* lisant, *reading;* lu, lue, *read.*

Avoir lu, ayant lu.

Ind. Pres.	Je lis,	tu lis,	il *ou* elle lit;
	Nous lisons,	vous lisez,	ils *ou* elles lisent.
Imp.	Je lisais,	tu lisais,	il *ou* elle lisait;
	Nous lisions,	vous lisiez,	ils *ou* elles lisaient.
Pret.	Je lus,	tu lus,	il *ou* elle lut;
	Nous lûmes,	vous lûtes,	ils *ou* elles lurent.
Fut.	Je lirai,	tu liras,	il *ou* elle lira;
	Nous lirons,	vous lirez,	ils *ou* elles liront.
Cond.Pres.	Je lirais,	tu lirais,	il *ou* elle lirait;
	Nous lirions,	vous liriez,	ils *ou* elles liraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	lis,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle lise;
	Lisons,	lisez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles lisent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je lise,	que tu lises,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle lise;
	Que nous lisions,	que vous lisiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles lisent.
Imp.	Que je lusse,	que tu lusses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle lût;
	Que nous lussions,	que vous lussiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles lussent.

Conjugate after the same manner *élire*, to elect; *relire*, to read again.

§. 19.

Mettre, to put. Active Verb.

Infinitive. Mettre, *to put;* mettant, *putting;* mis, mise, *put.*
Avoir mis, ayant mis.

Ind. Pres.	Je mets,	tu mets,	il *ou* elle met;
	Nous mettons,	vous mettez,	ils *ou* elles mettent.
Imp.	Je mettais,	tu mettais,	il *ou* elle mettait;
	Nous mettions,	vous mettiez,	ils *ou* elles mettaient.
Pret.	Je mis,	tu mis,	il *ou* elle mit;
	Nous mîmes,	vous mîtes,	ils *ou* elles mirent.
Fut.	Je mettrai,	tu mettras,	il *ou* elle mettra;
	Nous mettrons,	vous mettrez,	ils *ou* elles mettront.
Cond. Pres.	Je mettrais,	tu mettrais,	il *ou* elle mettrait;
	Nous mettrions,	vous mettriez,	ils *ou* elles mettraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	mets,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle mette;
	mettons,	mettez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles mettent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je mette,	que tu mettes,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle mette;
	Que nous mettions,	que vous mettiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles mettent.
Imp.	Que je misse,	que tu misses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle mît;
	Que nous missions,	que vous missiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles missent.

Conjugate after the same manner all Verbs compounded of *mettre:* such as—*Admettre,* to admit; *commettre,* to commit; *compromettre,* to compromise; *démettre,* to disjoint, to put out; *omettre,* to omit; *permettre,* to permit; *promettre,* to promise; *remettre,* to put *or* set again, to replace; *soumettre,* to submit; *transmettre,* to transmit; *se démettre,* to resign; *s'entremettre,* to interpose, &c. &c.

---

§. 20.

Moudre, to grind. Active Verb.

Infinitive. Moudre, *to grind;* moulant, *grinding;* moulu, moulue, *ground.*

Avoir moulu, ayant moulu.

Ind. Pres.	Je mouds,	tu mouds,	il *ou* elle moud;
	Nous moulons,	vous moulez,	ils *ou* elles moulent.
Imp.	Je moulais,	tu moulais,	il *ou* elle moulait;
	Nous moulions,	vous mouliez,	ils *ou* elles moulaient.
Pret.	Je moulus,	tu moulus,	il *ou* elle moulut;
	Nous moulûmes,	vous moulûtes,	ils *ou* elles moulurent.
Fut.	Je moudrai,	tu moudras,	il *ou* elle moudra;
	Nous moudrons,	vous moudrez,	ils *ou* elles moudront.

Cond. Pres.	Je moudrais,	tu moudrais,	il *ou* elle moudrait ;
	Nous moudrions,	vous moudriez,	ils *ou* elles moudraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	mouds,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle moule ;
	Moulons,	moulez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles moulent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je moule,	que tu moules,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle moule ;
	Que nous moulions,	que vous mouliez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles moulent.
Imp.	Que je moulusse,	que tu moulusses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle moulût ;
	Que nous moulussions,	que vous moulussiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles moulussent.

Conjugate after the same manner *remoudre*, to grind again.

Emoudre, to grind, in speaking of knives or razors, is also conjugated after the same manner, as likewise *rémoudre*, to grind again, in the same sense.

---

§. 21.

Naître, to be born. NEUTER VERB.

Infinitive. Naître, *to be born ;* naissant, *being born ;* né, née, *born.*
Etre né, étant né.

Ind. Pres.	Je nais,	tu nais,	il *ou* elle naît ;
	Nous naissons,	vous naissez,	ils *ou* elles naissent.
Imp.	Je naissais,	tu naissais,	il *ou* elle naissait ;
	Nous naissions,	vous naissiez,	ils *ou* elles naissaient.
Pret.	Je naquis,	tu naquis,	il *ou* elle naquit ;
	Nous naquîmes,	vous naquîtes,	ils *ou* elles naquirent.
Fut.	Je naîtrai,	tu naîtras,	il *ou* elle naîtra ;
	Nous naîtrons,	vous naîtrez,	ils *ou* elles naîtront.
Cond. Pres.	Je naîtrais,	tu naîtrais,	il *ou* elle naîtraît ;
	Nous naîtrions,	vous naîtriez,	ils *ou* elles naîtraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	nais,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle naisse ;
	Naissons,	naissez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles naissent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je naisse,	que tu naisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle naisse ;
	Que nous naissions,	que vous naissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles naissent.
Imp.	Que je naquisse,	que tu naquisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle naquît ;
	Que nous naquissions,	que vous naquissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles naquissent.

Renaître, to be born again, to revive, is conjugated after the same manner.

---

§. 22.

Plaire, to please. NEUTER VERB.

Infinitive. Plaire, *to please ;* plaisant, *pleasing ;* plu, plue, *pleased.*
Avoir plu, ayant plu.

Ind. Pres.	Je plais,	tu plais,	il *ou* elle plaît ;
	Nous plaisons,	vous plaisez,	ils *ou* elles plaisent.

Imp.	Je plaisais,	tu plaisais,	il *ou* elle plaisait ;
	Nous plaisions,	vous plaisiez,	ils *ou* elles plaisaient.
Pret.	Je plus,	tu plus,	il *ou* elle plut ;
	Nous plûmes,	vous plûtes,	ils *ou* elles plurent.
Fut.	Je plairai,	tu plairas,	il *ou* elle plaira ;
	Nous plairons,	vous plairez,	ils *ou* elles plairont.
Cond. Pres.	Je plairais,	tu plairais,	il *ou* elle plairait ;
	Nous plairions,	vous plairiez,	ils *ou* elles plairaient.
Imperative.	[*No* 1*st person.*]	plais,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle plaise ;
	Plaisons,	plaisez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles plaisent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je plaise,	que tu plaises,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle plaise ;
	Que nous plaisions,	que vous plaisiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles plaisent.
Imp.	Que je plusse,	que tu plusses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle plût ;
	Que nous plussions,	que vous plussiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles plussent.

Conjugate after the same manner all the Verbs compounded of *plaire:* as—*Déplaire,* to displease; *complaire,* to humour, to please, &c. &c.

Taire, to conceal; and *se taire,* to forbear talking, to be silent, to hold one's tongue, are also conjugated after the same manner; but *se taire,* being a Pronominal Verb, takes *être* in its Compound Tenses.

---

§. 23.

Prendre, to take. ACTIVE VERB.

Infinitive. Prendre, *to take;* prenant, *taking;* pris, prise, *taken.*
Avoir pris, ayant pris.

Ind. Pres.	Je prends,	tu prends,	il *ou* elle prend ;
	Nous prenons,	vous prenez,	ils *ou* elles prennent.
Imp.	Je prenais,	tu prenais,	il *ou* elle prenait ;
	Nous prenions,	vous preniez,	ils *ou* elles prenaient.
Pret.	Je pris,	tu pris,	il *ou* elle prit ;
	Nous prîmes,	vous prîtes,	ils *ou* elles prirent.
Fut.	Je prendrai,	tu prendras,	il *ou* elle prendra ;
	Nous prendrons,	vous prendrez,	ils *ou* elles prendront.
Cond. Pres.	Je prendrais,	tu prendrais,	il *ou* elle prendrait ;
	Nous prendrions,	vous prendriez,	ils *ou* elles prendraient.
Imperative.	[*No* 1*st person.*]	prends,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle prenne ;
	Prenons,	prenez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles prennent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je prenne,	que tu prennes,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle prenne ;
	Que nous prenions,	que vous preniez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles prennent.
Imp.	Que je prisse,	que tu prisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle prît ;
	Que nous prissions,	que vous prissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles prissent.

Conjugate after the same manner all Verbs of which the Present of the Infinitive ends in *endre,* the Present Participle in *enant,* and the

Past Participle in *is:* as—*Apprendre,* to learn; *comprendre,* to comprehend; *désapprendre,* to unlearn, to forget; *entreprendre,* to undertake; *rapprendre,* to learn again; *reprendre,* to take again; *se méprendre,* to mistake; *surprendre,* to surprise; *se déprendre,* to disengage one's self, &c.

The *n,* in the above Verbs, is always doubled, as in *prendre,* in the Tenses in which it comes before *e, es, ent,* mute: as—*Que j'apprenne, que tu apprennes, qu'il* or *qu'elle apprenne, que nous apprenions, que vous appreniez, qu'ils* or *qu'elles apprennent,* &c.

---

§. 24.

Paître, to graze. ACTIVE AND DEFECTIVE VERB.

Infinitive. Paître, *to graze;* paissant, *grazing;* pu, [*no feminine,*] *grazed.*

Avoir pu, ayant pu.

Ind. Pres.	Je pais,	tu pais,	il *ou* elle paît;
	Nous paissons,	vous paissez,	ils *ou* elles paissent.
Imp.	Je paissais,	tu paissais,	il *ou* elle paissait;
	Nous paissions,	vous paissiez,	ils *ou* elles paissaient.

[*No Preterite; but we use instead the Preterite of* faire *with the Infinitive* paître: *thus*—Je fis paître, tu fis paître, il *or* elle fit paître, *&c.*]

Fut.	Je paîtrai,	tu paîtras,	il *ou* elle paîtra;
	Nous paîtrons,	vous paîtrez,	ils *ou* elles paîtront.
Cond. Pres.	Je paîtrais,	tu paîtrais,	il *ou* elle paîtrait;
	Nous paîtrions,	vous paîtriez,	ils *ou* elles paîtraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	pais,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle paisse;
	Paissons,	paissez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles paissent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je paisse,	que tu paisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle paisse;
	Que nous paissions,	que vous paissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles paissent.

[This verb has no Imperfect of the Subjunctive; the Imperfect of *faire,* with the Infinitive *paître,* being used instead: as—*Que je fisse paître, que tu fisses paître,* &c. &c.]

Repaître, to feed, and *se repaître,* to feed one's self, are conjugated after the same manner; having, besides, a Definite Preterite in the Indicative, and an Imperfect of the Subjunctive: as—*Je repus, tu repus, &c. je me repus, tu te repus, &c.; que je repusse, que tu repusses, &c. que je me repusse, que tu te repusses, qu'il* or *qu'elle se repût, que nous nous repussions, que vous vous repussiez, qu'ils* or *qu'elles se repussent.*

Repaître, when used in the sense of *eating,* speaking of men or horses on a journey, is neuter: as—*Il a fait dix milles sans repaître,* he has travelled ten miles without baiting; but when it is employed in a figurative sense, it is active: as—*Elle repaît son esprit de vaines espérances,* she entertains her mind with vain hopes. In this sense it is also used in a pronominal way, as—

Je ne *me repais* point de pareilles chimères.—RAC.

The Past Participle of *paître* is very little used, except with *repu*, Past Participle of *repaître*: as—*Il a pu et repu.* A circumflex accent must be placed over the *i* before *t*, in the above Verbs, in the Present of the Infinitive, in the Third Person Singular of the Present of the Indicative, in all the Future and Conditional.

§. 25.

Rire, to laugh. Neuter Verb.

Infinitive. Rire, *to laugh;* riant, *laughing;* ri, [*no feminine,*] *laughed.*
Avoir ri, ayant ri.

Ind. Pres.	Je ris,	tu ris,	il *ou* elle rit;
	Nous rions,	vous riez,	ils *ou* elles rient.
Imp.	Je riais,	tu riais,	il *ou* elle riait;
	Nous riions,	vous riiez,	ils *ou* elles riaient.
Pret.	Je ris,	tu ris,	il *ou* elle rit;
	Nous rîmes,	vous rîtes,	ils *ou* elles rirent.
Fut.	Je rirai,	tu riras,	il *ou* elle rira;
	Nous rirons,	vous rirez,	ils *ou* elles riront.
Cond. Pres.	Je rirais,	tu rirais,	il *ou* elle rirait;
	Nous ririons,	vous ririez,	ils *ou* elles riraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	ris,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle rie;
	Rions,	riez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles rient.
Sub. Pres.	Que je rie,	que tu ries,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle rie;
	Que nous riions,	que vous riiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles rient.
Imp.	Que je risse,	que tu risses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle rît;
	Que nous rissions,	que vous rissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles rissent.

Conjugate after the same manner *se rire de*, to laugh at, except in the Compound Tenses, which are formed with *être*, like other reflected Verbs.

A votre nez, mon frère, elle *se rit* de vous.
Molière *Tart.*

Mais si je vais parler, vous *vous rirez* de moi.
Dest. Le Glorieux, *act.* 2, *sc.* 2.

Sourire, to smile, is also conjugated after the same manner, taking *avoir* in its Compound Tenses.

This Verb can be used in a figurative sense: as—

Le seul printemps *sourit* au monde en son aurore.
Delille.

§. 26.

Résoudre, to resolve *and* dissolve. Active Verb.

Infinitive. Résoudre, *to resolve;* résolvant, *resolving;* résolu, résolue; *or* résous, [*without feminine,*] *resolved.*
Avoir résolu, ayant résolu.

Ind. Pres.	Je résous,	tu résous,	il *ou* elle résout;
	Nous résolvons,	vous résolvez,	ils *ou* elles résolvent.
Imp.	Je résolvais,	tu résolvais,	il *ou* elle résolvait;
	Nous résolvions,	vous résolviez,	ils *ou* elles résolvaient.
Pret.	Je résolus,	tu résolus,	il *ou* elle résolut;
	Nous résolûmes,	vous résolûtes,	ils *ou* elles résolurent.
Fut.	Je résoudrai,	tu résoudras,	il *ou* elle résoudra;
	Nous résoudrons,	vous résoudrez,	ils *ou* elles résoudront.
Cond. Pres.	Je résoudrais,	tu résoudrais,	il *ou* elle résoudrait;
	Nous résoudrions,	vous résoudriez,	ils *ou* elles résoudraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	résous,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle résolve;
	Résolvons,	résolvez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles résolvent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je résolve,	que tu résolves,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle résolve;
	Que nous résolvions,	que vous résolviez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles résolvent.
Imp.	Que je résolusse,	que tu résolusses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle résolût;
	Que nous résolussions,	que vous résolussiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles résolussent.

The above Verb has two Past Participles, *résolu, résolue,* in the sense of resolving, determining, deciding: as—*Ce jeune homme a résolu de changer de conduite,* this young man has determined to change his conduct; and *résous,* without feminine, meaning dissolving: *le soleil a résous le brouillard en pluie,* the sun has dissolved the fog into rain.

Conjugate after the same manner *se résoudre,* to be resolved, to form a resolution, and *se résoudre,* to be dissolved, to melt.

---

§. 27.

Suivre, to follow. Active Verb.

Infinitive. Suivre, *to follow;* suivant, *following;* suivi, suivie, *followed.*
Avoir suivi, ayant suivi.

Ind. Pres.	Je suis,	tu suis,	il *ou* elle suit;
	Nous suivons,	vous suivez,	ils *ou* elles suivent.
Imp.	Je suivais,	tu suivais,	il *ou* elle suivait;
	Nous suivions,	vous suiviez,	ils *ou* elles suivaient.

Pret.	Je suivis,	tu suivis,	il *ou* elle suivit;
	Nous suivîmes,	vous suivîtes,	ils *ou* elles suivirent.
Fut.	Je suivrai,	tu suivras,	il *ou* elle suivra;
	Nous suivrons,	vous suivrez,	ils *ou* elles suivront.
Cond. Pres.	Je suivrais,	tu suivrais,	il *ou* elle suivrait;
	Nous suivrions,	vous suivriez,	ils *ou* elles suivraient.
Imperative.	[*No* 1st *person.*]	suis,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle suive;
	Suivons,	suivez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles suivent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je suive,	que tu suives,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle suive;
	Que nous suivions,	que vous suiviez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles suivent.
Imp.	Que je suivisse,	que tu suivisses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle suivît;
	Que nous suivissions,	que vous suivissiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles suivissent.

Conjugate after the same manner *Poursuivre*, to pursue, to prosecute.

S'ensuivre, to follow, to result, is also conjugated after the same manner, but it is only used in the Third Persons Singular and Plural of its different Tenses, either simple or compound, and in the Present of the Infinitive: as—*Un grand bien s'ensuivit*, much good resulted from it; *tous les maux qui s'ensuivent*, all the evils which result from it.

This Verb is also frequently used in an unipersonal way, at the Third Person Singular only of its different Tenses with the Pronoun *il*, in the sense of resulting: as—*Il s'ensuit de là que*··, hence it follows that··; *de cette proposition il s'ensuit que*··, from that proposition it follows that ··. Its Compound Tenses are always formed with *être*.

---

§. 28.

Sourdre, to spring. NEUTER AND DEFECTIVE VERB.

This Verb is only used in speaking of fountains, springs, rivers which spring out from the earth. Its only Tenses in use are the Present of the Infinitive, and the Third Persons Singular and Plural of the Present of the Indicative: as—*Ce marais sera difficile à dessécher, on y voit sourdre des eaux de tous côtés*, this marsh will be drained with difficulty, from the springs rising in every part; *on dit que le Rhin, le Rhône, et le Pô sourdent au pied de la même montagne*, it is said that the Rhine, the Rhone, and the Po, take their rise at the foot of the same mountain.

---

§. 29.

Traire, to milk. ACTIVE AND DEFECTIVE VERB.

Infinitive. Traire, *to milk*; trayant, *milking*; trait, traite, *milked*.
Avoir trait, ayant trait.

Ind. Pres.	Je trais,	tu trais,	il *ou* elle trait;
	Nous trayons,	Vous trayez,	ils *ou* elles traient.

Imp.	Je trayais,	tu trayais,	il *ou* elle trayait;
	Nous trayions,	vous trayiez,	ils *ou* elles trayaient.
	[*No Preterite.*]		
Fut.	Je trairai,	tu trairas,	il *ou* elle traira;
	Nous trairons,	vous trairez,	ils *ou* elles trairont.
Cond.Pres.	Je trairais,	tu trairais,	il *ou* elle trairait;
	Nous trairions,	vous trairiez,	ils *ou* elles trairaient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	trais,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle traie;
	Trayons,	trayez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles traient.
Sub. Pres.	Que je traie,	que tu traies,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle traie;
	Que nous trayions,	que vous trayiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles traient.
	[*No Imperfect.*]		

Conjugate after the same manner the Verbs compounded of *traire*, such as—*Attraire*, to entice; *abstraire*, to abstract; *extraire*, to extract; *distraire*, to distract, to divert; *rentraire*, to fine-draw; *retraire*, to redeem an estate; *soustraire*, to substract, to hide, to conceal, to get *or* take away; *se soustraire à*, to avoid, to escape, to withdraw one's self from.

Attraire is not much used, but in the Present of the Infinitive: as—*Le sel est bon pour attraire les pigeons*, salt attracts pigeons; and even then, *attirer* is to be preferred.

Abstraire is very little used, *faire abstraction* being better.

---

§. 30.

Tistre, to weave. Neuter and Defective Verb.

This Verb is only used in its Compound Tenses which are formed with the different Tenses of either *avoir* or *être*, according as we wish to express an action, or the state of the thing mentioned, and its Past Participle *tissu*, woven.

Tisser is its substitute in the other Tenses: thus we say—*Tisser du lin, de la laine, du coton*, to weave flax, wool, cotton.

Tissu is used both in a natural and figurative sense as a Substantive and a Participle: thus we say—*Un drap bien tissu*, cloth well woven; *un tissu d'or, d'argent, de cheveux*, gold, silver, hair lace; *un long tissu de belles actions*, a long series of noble actions.

---

§. 31.

Vivre, to live. Neuter Verb.

Infinitive. Vivre, *to live*; vivant, *living*; vecu, *lived.* [*no feminine*]
Avoir vecu, ayant vecu.

Ind. Pres.	Je v[illegible]	tu vis,	il *ou* elle vit;
	No[illegible]ons,	vous vivez,	ils *ou* elles vivent.

Imp.	Je vivais,	tu vivais,	il *ou* elle vivait ;
	Nous vivions,	vous viviez,	ils *ou* elles vivaient.
Pret.	Je vécus,	tu vécus,	il *ou* elle vécut ;
	Nous vécûmes,	vous vécûtes,	ils *ou* elles vécurent.
Fut.	Je vivrai,	tu vivras,	il *ou* elle vivra ;
	Nous vivrons,	vous vivrez,	ils *ou* elles vivront.
Cond.Pres.	Je vivrais,	tu vivrais,	il *ou* elle vivrait ;
	Nous vivrions,	vous vivriez,	ils *ou* elles vivraient.
Imperative.	[*No 1st person.*]	vis,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle vive ;
	Vivons,	vivez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles vivent.
Sub. Pres.	Que je vive,	que tu vives,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle vive ;
	Que nous vivions,	que vous viviez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles vivent.
Imp.	Que je vécusse,	que tu vécusses,	qu'il *ou* qu'elle vécût;
	Que nous vécussions,	que vous vécussiez,	qu'ils *ou* qu'elles vécussent.

Conjugate after the same manner the Verbs compounded of *vivre*, such as—*Survivre*, to outlive.

Vivre governs the Preposition *de:* as—*Il vit de pain,* he lives upon bread.

The Third Person Singular of the Present of the Subjunctive *vive*, and the Third Person Plural *vivent*, are frequently used without any antecedent, by way of acclamation or shout of joy, before the name of persons, to whom we wish a long and happy life; or before the name of any thing that we highly esteem and praise: as—*Vive le roi!* Long live the king! *Vive la vie! Vivent les gens d'esprit! Vivent la Champagne et la Bourgogne pour les bons vins!*

---

§. 32.

Vaincre, to vanquish, to conquer. ACTIVE AND DEFECTIVE VERB.

Infinitive. Vaincre, *to conquer;* vainquant, *conquering;* vaincu, vaincue, *conquered.*

Avoir vaincu, ayant vaincu.

Ind. Pres.	Je vaincs,	tu vaincs,	il *ou* elle vainc ;
	Nous vainquons,	vous vainquez,	ils *ou* elles vainquent.
Imp.	Je vainquais,	tu vainquais,	il *ou* elle vainquait ;
	Nous vainquions,	vous vainquiez,	ils *ou* elles vainquaient.
Pret.	Je vainquis,	tu vainquis,	il *ou* elle vainquit ;
	Nous vainquîmes,	vous vainquîtes,	ils *ou* elles vainquirent.
Fut.	Je vaincrai,	tu vaincras,	il *ou* elle vaincra ;
	Nous vaincrons,	vous vaincrez,	ils *ou* elles vaincront.
Cond.Pres.	Je vaincrais,	tu vaincrais,	il *ou* elle vaincrait ;
	Nous vaincrions,	vous vaincriez,	ils *ou* elles vaincraient.

Imperative. [*The Second Person Singular is not used, but we* [illegible]

			qu'i[illegible]lle vainque ;
	Vainquons,	vainquez,	[illegible] elles vainquent.

Sub. Pres. Que je vainque, que tu vainques, qu'il *ou* qu'elle vainque;
Que nous vainquions, que vous vainquiez, qu'ils *ou* qu'elles vainquent.

Imp. Que je vainquisse, que tu vainquisses, qu'il *ou* qu'elle vainquît;
Que nous vainquissions, que vous vainquissiez, qu'ils *ou* qu'elles vainquissent.

Conjugate after the same manner *convaincre*, to convince.

In Verbs ending in *aincre*, the *c* is always changed into *qu* in the Tenses in which it comes before the Vowels *a, e, i, o*, as may be seen in the above Conjugation.

The Three Persons Singular of the Present of the Indicative, and of the Imperfect are but very seldom used. Voltaire expunges them. Corneille has, however, used them in Sertorius, Act. iv. Sc. 4.—

"De l'amour aisément ou ne *vainc* pas les charmes."

ARTICLE XV.

Unipersonal Verbs.

Unipersonal Verbs are Verbs which, as we have already observed, under the article of Pronominal Unipersonal Verbs, are only used in the Third Person Singular of their Simple and Compound Tenses, taking the same terminations as the Verbs, either regular or irregular, of the conjugation to which they belong.

When those Verbs are used either affirmatively, negatively, interrogatively, or interrogatively and negatively, the same rules must be observed as for the other Verbs, with respect to the place of Pronouns and Negations, as may be seen by the following examples.

As their Compound Tenses are formed regularly by the addition of their Past Participle to the Simple Tenses of *avoir* or *être*, according as either is required, no example of them has been deemed necessary.

It must, however, be observed, that the Pronouns and Negations always affect the auxiliary in the Compound Tenses, the Participle coming the last: as—*Il a tonné*, it has thundered; *il n'a pas tonné*, it has not thundered; *a-t-il tonné?* has it thundered? *n'a-t-il pas tonné?* has it not thundered? and so on for all the other Tenses and Persons.

It is also deemed necessary to remark, that some of the following Verbs are not given as examples of *Unipersonal Verbs*; but, being only used in their Third Persons, it was thought better to class them with the *Unipersonals*.

Unipersonal Verbs of the First Conjugation.

§. 1.

Neiger, to snow. Unipersonal Verb.

Infinitive. Neiger, *to snow*; neigeant, *snowing*; neigé, *snowed*.
Avoir neigé, ayant neigé.

Ind. Pret. Il neige, il ne neige pas; neige-t-il? ne neige-t-il pas?
Imp. Il neigeait, il ne neigeait pas; neigeait-il? ne neigeait-il pas?

Pret.	Il neigea,	il ne neigea pas;	neigea-t-il?	ne neigea-t-il pas?
Fut.	Il neigera,	il ne neigera pas;	neigera-t-il?	ne neigera-t-il pas?
Cond. Pres.	Il neigerait,	il ne neigerait pas;	neigerait-il?	ne neigerait-il pas?
	[*No Imperative.*]			
Sub. Pres.	Qu'il neige,	qu'il ne neige pas.		
Imp.	Qu'il neigeât,	qu'il ne neigeât pas.		

The Compound Tenses of the above Verb are formed by adding its Past Participle *neigé* to the Third Person Singular of the Simple Tenses of *avoir:* as—*Il a neigé,* it has snowed; *il n'a pas neigé,* it has not snowed; *a-t-il neigé?* has it snowed? *n'a-t-il pas neigé?* has it not snowed?

Conjugate after the same manner *bruiner,* to drizzle; *grêler,* to hail; *geler,* to freeze; *dégeler,* to thaw; *tonner,* to thunder; *éclairer,* to lighten; *importer,* to concern; *résulter,* to result.

Arriver, to happen; *sembler,* to seem; or any other Verb of the First Conjugation, when used in an *Unipersonal way,* are also conjugated after the same manner.

Arriver takes *être* in its Compound Tenses.

SECOND CONJUGATION.

§. 1.

Saillir, to project. NEUTER AND DEFECTIVE VERB.

Infinitive. Saillir, *to project;* saillant, *projecting;* sailli, *projected.* Avoir sailli, ayant sailli.

Ind. Pres.	Il saille,	il ne saille pas;	saille-t-il?	ne saille-t-il pas?
Imp.	Il saillait,	il ne saillait pas;	saillait-il?	ne saillait-il pas?
	[*No Preterite.*]			
Fut.	Il saillera,	il ne saillera pas;	saillera-t-il?	ne saillera-t-il pas?
Cond. Pres.	Il saillerait,	il ne saillerait pas;	saillerait-il?	ne saillerait-il pas?
	[*No Imperative.*]			
Sub. Pres.	Qu'il saille,	qu'il ne saille pas.		
Imp.	Qu'il saillît,	qu'il ne saillît pas.		

The above Verb, not being a Unipersonal one, may also be preceded by the Pronoun *elle* for subject, when referring to a Substantive feminine, either expressed or understood. It may also be used in the Third Person Plural of its different Tenses: thus we can say—*Il* or *elle saille, ils* or *elles saillent; il* or *elle saillait, ils* or *elles saillaient; il* or *elle saillera, ils* or *elles sailleront; il* or *elle saillerait, ils* or *elles sailleraient; qu'il* or *qu'elle saille, qu'ils* or *qu'elles saillent.*

Such is the conjugation of *saillir* when used in the sense of projecting, with reference to architecture; a balcony for instance, a cornice, or any other ornament of architecture projecting from the main part of the building: as—*Ce balcon saille trop,* this balcony projects too much; *cette corniche ne saille pas assez,* this cornice does not project enough, &c. &c.

But if it is used in the sense of *gushing* or *spouting out,* in speaking of liquid bodies, it is then likewise only used in its Third Persons, but they are conjugated like the

Third Persons Singular and Plural of the different Tenses of *finir:* as—*Il saillit, ils saillissent; il saillissait, ils saillissaient,* &c. &c. Ex. *Son sang saillissait avec impétuosité; on fait saillir l'eau à une très-grande hauteur par la compression qu'on en fait dans les pompes.*

Unipersonal Verbs of the Third Conjugation.

§. 1.

Y avoir, to be there. Unipersonal Verb.

Infinitive. Y avoir, *to be there;* y ayant, *being there;*
eu, [*no feminine,*] *been there.*

Y avoir eu, y ayant eu.

Ind. Pres.	Il y a,	il n'y a pas;	y a-t-il?	n'y a-t-il pas?
Imp.	Il y avait,	il n'y avait pas;	y avait-il?	n'y avait-il pas?
Pret.	Il y eut,	il n'y eut pas;	y eut-il?	n'y eut-il pas?
Fut.	Il y aura,	il n'y aura pas;	y aura-t-il?	n'y aura-t-il pas?
Cond. Pres.	Il y aurait,	il n'y aurait pas;	y aurait-il?	n'y aurait-il pas?
	[*No Imperative.*]			
Sub. Pres.	Qu'il y ait,	qu'il n'y ait pas.		
Imp.	Qu'il y eût,	qu'il n'y eût pas.		

The Compound Tenses of the above Verb are formed by the addition of its Past Participle *eu* to the end of its Simple Tenses: as—*Il y a eu,* there has been; *il n'y a pas eu,* there has not been; *y a-t-il eu?* has there been? *n'y a-t-il pas eu?* has there not been?

---

§. 2.

Falloir, to be necessary. Unipersonal Verb.

Infinitive. Falloir, *to be necessary;* [*no Pres. Part.*] fallu, [*no fem.*] *been necessary.*

Avoir fallu, ayant fallu.

Ind. Pres.	Il faut,	il ne faut pas;	faut-il?	ne faut-il pas?
Imp.	Il fallait,	il ne fallait pas;	fallait-il?	ne fallait-il pas?
Pret.	Il fallut,	il ne fallut pas;	fallut-il?	ne fallut-il pas?
Fut.	Il faudra,	il ne faudra pas;	faudra-t-il?	ne faudra-t-il pas?
Cond. Pres.	Il faudrait,	il ne faudrait pas;	faudrait-il?	ne faudrait-il pas?
	[*No Imperative.*]			

Sub. Pres.	Qu'il faille,	qu'il ne faille pas.
Imp.	Qu'il fallût,	qu'il ne fallût pas.

The Compound Tenses of the above Verb are formed with its Past Participle *fallu,* added to the Third Person Singular of the Simple Tenses of *avoir:* as—*Il a fallu,* it has been necessary; *il n'a pas fallu,* it has not been necessary; *a-t-il fallu?* has it been necessary? *n'a-t-il pas fallu?* has it not been necessary? and so on for the other Tenses.

---

§. 3.

Pleuvoir, to rain. UNIPERSONAL VERB.

Infinitive. Pleuvoir, *to rain;* pleuvant, *raining;* plu, [*no fem.*] *rained.*

Avoir plu, ayant plu.

Ind. Pres.	Il pleut,	il ne pleut pas;	pleut-il?	ne pleut-il pas?
Imp.	Il pleuvait,	il ne pleuvait pas;	pleuvait-il?	ne pleuvait-il pas?
Pret.	Il plut,	il ne plut pas;	plut-il?	ne plut-il pas?
Fut.	Il pleuvra,	il ne pleuvra pas;	pleuvra-t-il?	ne pleuvra-t-il pas?
Cond. Pres.	Il pleuvrait,	il ne pleuvrait pas;	pleuvrait-il?	ne pleuvrait-il pas?

[*No Imperative.*]

Sub. Pres.	Qu'il pleuve,	qu'il ne pleuve pas.
Imp.	Qu'il plût,	qu'il ne plût pas.

The Compound Tenses of *pleuvoir* are formed with its Past Participle *plu,* added to the Third Person Singular of the Simple Tenses of *avoir:* as—*Il a plu,* it has rained; *il n'a pas plu,* it has not rained; *a-t-il plu?* has it rained? *n'a-t-il pas plu?* has it not rained?

---

§. 4.

Echoir, to be due, to fall to, to expire. NEUTER AND DEFECTIVE VERB.

Infinitive. Echoir, *to be due;* échéant, *being due;* échu, échue, *been due.*

Etre échu, étant échu.

Ind. Pres.	Il échoit *or* échet,	il n'échoit pas;	échoit-il?	n'échoit-il pas?

[*No Imperfect.*]

Pret.	Il échut,	il n'échut pas ;	échut-il ?	n'échut-il pas ?
Fut.	Il écherra,	il n'écherra pas ;	écherra-t-il ?	n'écherra-t-il pas ?
Cond. Pres.	Il écherrait,	il n'écherrait pas ;	écherrait-il ?	n'écherrait-il pas ?
	[*No Imperative.*]			
	[*No Present of the Subjunctive.*]			
Imp.	Qu'il échût,	qu'il n'échût pas.		

The Compound Tenses of the above Verb are always formed by the addition of its Past Participle *échu* to the Third Person Singular or Plural of the different Tenses of *être* : as—*Cet effet est échu*, this bill is due ; *il n'est pas encore échu*, it is not yet due ; *est-il échu?* is it due? *n'est-il pas échu?* is it not due? &c. &c.

The Present of the Infinitive *échoir* is frequently used with the different Tenses of *devoir* : as—*Cet effet a dû échoir*, this bill must have been due.

Echoir can also be used in the Third Person Plural of its different Tenses: thus—*Ils échoient* or *échéent, ils échurent, ils écherront, ils écherraient, qu'ils échussent.*

§. 5.

Seoir, to befit, to become. Neuter and Defective Verb.

Infinitive. Seoir, *to become ;* séyant, *becoming ;* and séant, *sitting ;* sis, sise,† *situated.*

Ind. Pres.	Il sied,	il ne sied pas;	sied-il ?	ne sied-il pas ?
Imp.	Il seyait,	il ne seyait pas ;	seyait-il ?	ne seyait-il pas ?
	[*No Preterite.*]			
Fut.	Il siéra,	il ne siéra pas ;	siéra-t-il ?	ne siéra-t-il pas ?
Cond. Pres.	Il siérait,	il ne siérait pas ;	siérait-il ?	ne siérait-il pas ?
	[*No Imperative.*]			
Sub. Pres.	Qu'il siée,	qu'il ne siée pas.		
	[*No Imperfect.*]			

This Verb can also be used in the Third Person Plural of its Tenses: as—*Ils siéent, qu'ils siéent.* It has no Compound Tenses; but its second Present Participle *séant* is sometimes used as a Participle and sometimes as an Adjective, in which latter case it agrees in Gender and Number with the preceding Substantive to which it refers, whilst in the former it remains indeclinable: as—*La cour royale de Paris séant à Versailles*, the royal court of Paris sitting at Versailles; *la cour est séante à présent*, the court is now sitting.

† The Past Participle *sis, sise*, is no more used but as an Adjective in the sense of *situé* : as—*Une maison sise à* . . . . ., a house situated at . . .

Fourth Conjugation.

§. 1.

Eclore, to hatch, to blow, to open. Neuter and Defective Verb.

Infinitive. Eclore, *to hatch;* [*no Present Participle.*] éclos, éclose, *hatched.*

Etre éclos, étant éclos.

Ind. Pres.	Il éclôt,	il n'éclôt pas;	éclôt-il ?	n'éclôt-il pas?
	[*No Imperfect nor Preterite.*]			
Fut.	Il éclôra,	il n'éclôra pas;	éclôra-t-il ?	n'éclôra-t-il pas ?
Cond. Pres.	Il éclôrait,	il n'éclôrait pas;	éclôrait-il ?	n'éclôrait-il pas?
	[*No Imperative.*]			
Sub. Pres.	Qu'il éclose,	qu'il n'éclose pas.		
	[*No Imperfect.*]			

The above Verb, not being a Unipersonal one, may, likewise, be preceded by the Pronoun *elle*, for subject, when referring to an antecedent feminine; it may also be used in the Third Person Plural of its Tenses: thus we can say—*Il* or *elle éclôt, ils* or *elles éclosent; il* or *elle éclôra, ils* or *elles éclôront; il* or *elle éclôrait, ils* or *elles éclôraient; qu'il* or *qu'elle éclose, qu'ils* or *qu'elles éclosent.*

Its Compound Tenses are formed by adding its Past Participle *éclos* to the Third Persons Singular or Plural of the Simple Tenses of *être:* as—*Il est éclos,* it is hatched; *ils ne sont pas éclos,* they are not hatched, &c. &c.

This Verb is only used in speaking of oviparous animals, such as *birds, insects;* it is also sometimes used by extension, in speaking of flowers blowing; and sometimes in mentioning moral and spiritual things.

---

§. 2.

Braire, to bray. Neuter and Defective Verb.

This Verb is only used in the Present of the Infinitive *braire:* in the Third Persons Singular and Plural of the Present of the Indicative—*Il* or *elle brait, ils* or *elles braient:* in the Third Persons of the Future—*Il* or *elle braira, ils* or *elles brairont;* and in the Third Persons of the Conditional—*Il* or *elle brairait, ils* or *elles brairaient.* It expresses the cry of the ass.

§. 3.

Bruire, to rustle. Neuter and Defective Verb.

This Verb is only used in the Present of the Infinitive *bruire*, and in the Third Persons Singular and Plural of the Imperfect of the Indicative: as—*Il bruyait, ils bruyaient*. In the other Tenses, we say—*Faire du bruit; rendre un son confus*: as—*on entend bruire les vagues*, you can hear the roaring of the waves; *les flots bruyaient horriblement*, the waves were roaring dreadfully.

Bruyant is an Adjective in the following lines:—

"........ Quand Flore dans les plaines,
Faisait taire des vents les *bruyantes* haleines."

CHAPTER VI.

OF NEGATIONS AND INTERROGATIONS.

ARTICLE I.

OF NEGATIONS.

§. 1.

Different Ways of expressing *Not, no, not that, no more, neither, nor, never, by no means.*

General Rule.—1. *Not.* When *not* is used with a Verb, it is expressed in French by—*Ne pas* or *ne point*, placing *ne* or *n'* before the Verb in a Simple Tense, with *pas*† or *point*† after; and *ne* or *n'* be-

---

† DISTINCTION BETWEEN *PAS* AND *POINT*.

Pas and *point* are often indifferently used for each other in a negative sentence, with this difference, however, that *point* denies more absolutely than *pas*, meaning not at all: as for instance—*Je ne vais point à la comédie*, I do not go to the play, means that I never go; whilst *je ne vais pas à la comédie*, signifies that I do not go now, or this evening, &c. although I may sometimes go.

In interrogative sentences, *point* is generally used, when we doubt the thing mentioned, and *pas* when we think we know it: as for instance—*N'avez-vous point vu ma sœur?* have you not seen my sister? meaning, that I am totally ignorant whether you have or not; whilst, *n'avez-vous pas vu ma sœur*, signifies that I think you have seen her, and that I wish to tell you of it either by way of reproach, or merely to let you know that I am aware of it.

Point cannot be followed as *pas* is, by *un, une*, a or an; but like *pas*, it admits *de* before a Substantive: as—I have not a penny, *je n'ai pas un sou*, and not *je n'ai point un sou*; but, he has no money, no friends, *il n'a point d'amis, point d'argent*, or *il n'a pas d'amis, pas d'argent*.

Pas de, or *point de*, must be repeated in French before every Substantive, affected by *no* in English: as—He has no clothes, no money, no friends, *il n'a point d'habits, point d'argent, point d'amis*.

fore the Auxiliary in a Compound one, with *pas* or *point* after, between the Auxiliary and the Participle; and if any Objective Pronoun is to precede the Verb, placing it between *ne* and the Verb in a Simple Tense, and between *ne* and the Auxiliary in a Compound one: as—I do not speak, *je ne parle pas;* he has not written, *il n'a pas écrit;* has it not rained? *n'a-t-il pas plu?* I have it not, *je ne l'ai pas;* she has not seen him, *elle ne l'a pas vu,* &c. always leaving unexpressed the Auxiliaries *does, do, did,* which the English generally use in negative and interrogative sentences, in the Present, Imperfect, and Preterite of the Indicative.

If the Verb be in the Present of the Infinitive Mood, both *ne pas* or *ne point* are more elegantly placed before it, putting the Pronouns *le, la, les,* and *lui, leur,* if used as object, between *ne* and *pas* or *point:* as—It is disagreeable not to speak French, *il est désagréable de ne pas parler Français;* it is prudent not to say it, *il est prudent de ne le pas dire.*

But these four Verbs, *cesser,* to cease; *oser,* to dare; *pouvoir,* to be able; *savoir,* to know; when used with a negative in English, are more commonly used in French with *ne* only before the Verb in a Simple Tense, or before the auxiliary in a Compound one, without *pas* or *point* after, though if we wish to express a complete negation, *pas* or *point* must be used after: as—I cannot, *je ne le puis,* or *je ne le puis pas;* I dare not say it, *je n'ose le dire.*

Observe.—Not, used in reply to a question before an Adverb, or any other word: as—Do you improve in the French language? *Not* much. How do you do, Madam? *Not* very well, Sir; is then expressed by *pas* only. Ex.—Do you improve in the French language? not much; *faites-vous des progrès dans le Français? pas beaucoup;* how do you do, Madam? not very well, Sir; *comment vous portez-vous, Madame? pas très-bien, Monsieur.*

2. *No.*—When *no* is used in reply to a question, or in the second part of an interrogative sentence, it is expressed in French by *non,* as also *not,* coming in the second part of a sentence after *or:* as—Have you seen him? no, Sir, *l'avez-vous vu? non, Monsieur;* will you do it or not? *le voulez-vous faire ou non?* no, I will not, *non, je ne le veux pas;* whether he come or not, I do not care, *qu'il vienne ou non, je ne m'en soucie pas.*

No is likewise sometimes expressed, in reply to a question, by *point, non pas,* or *nenni,* if in a familiar style: as—Will you have any? no, *en voulez-vous? point;* will you give me this? no, Sir, *voulez-vous me donner ceci? non pas, Monsieur;* will you come with me, my dear? no, Sir; *voulez-vous venir avec moi, ma chère? nenni, Monsieur.*

Non pas, but never *non point,* is also used in the middle of a sentence before an Adjective, a Participle, or an Adverb, forming a comparison with any other Adjective, Participle, or Adverb following: as—He does not write in a superior, but in an agreeable manner, *il écrit non pas supérieurement, mais agréablement.*

3. *Not that.—Not that* is expressed in French by *non que, non pas que, ce n'est pas que,* according as it sounds best, governing the following Verb in the Subjunctive Mood: as—I will go, not that I am obliged, but through politeness, *j'irai, non que,* or *non pas que j'y sois obligé, mais par politesse.*

4. *No more.* —— *No more* or *not any more*, after a Verb, or *not* after the auxiliaries *do, did, shall, will, would, should, &c.* with *any more* after the Verb; or *not* after the auxiliary, with *any more* after the Participle, as in these sentences:—*I saw him no more, I have not seen him any more*, are expressed in French by *plus* after the Verb in a Simple Tense, with *ne* before, and *plus* after the auxiliary in a Compound one, with also *ne* before, following the same rules for the place of the Objective Pronouns, as with *not*. Ex. I saw him no more, *je ne le vis plus;* I have not seen him any more, *je ne l'ai plus vu.*

If *no more* were followed by *than*, it is then expressed by *pas plus* after the Verb in a Simple Tense, and after the auxiliary in a Compound one, with *ne* before, as above. Ex. My sister is no more than twenty, *ma sœur n'a pas plus de vingt ans;* your father is no more than sixty, *votre père n'a pas plus de soixante ans.*

5. *Neither* and *nor.* —— *Neither* and *nor* used before two Nouns, or two Verbs in the Present of the Infinitive Mood; *neither* coming before the first and *nor* before the second; or also *any* before a Substantive coming after a Verb used negatively, with *nor* before the next Substantive: as—*I have neither friends nor money; she can neither sing nor dance; do not put any sugar nor milk in my tea;* are expressed in French by *ni* before the first Noun or Verb, with *ni* before the second, putting *ne* before the Verb preceding them, but without *pas* or *point* after: as—I have neither friends nor money, *je n'ai ni amis ni argent;* she can neither sing nor dance, *elle ne sait ni chanter ni danser;* do not put any sugar nor milk in my tea, *ne mettez ni sucre ni lait dans mon thé.*

If *neither* and *nor* be used before two Verbs in the Indicative Mood, *neither* coming before the first and *nor* before the second; *neither* is then expressed by *ne* before the first Verb, and *nor* by *ni ne* before the second: as—I neither love nor hate him, *je ne l'aime ni ne le hais;* she neither talks nor laughs, *elle ne parle ni ne rit.*

Neither, at the end of a sentence, is expressed in French by *non plus*, which stands in the same place in which *neither* is in English: as—He will not have it, nor I neither, *il ne le veut pas, ni moi non plus.*

6. *Never* and *by no means*, used with a Verb, are expressed in French by *ne* before the Verb in a Simple Tense, with *jamais* or *nullement* after, and *ne* before the auxiliary in a Compound one, with, also, *jamais* or *nullement* after, that is to say, between the auxiliary and the Participle without ever using *pas* or *point*, but placing the Objective Pronouns, which may come as object, between *ne* and the Verb in a Simple Tense, and between *ne* and the auxiliary in a Compound one; as—She will never come, *elle ne viendra jamais;* she is by no means obliging, *elle n'est nullement obligeante;* I never saw him before, *je ne l'ai jamais vu auparavant.*

If the Verb were in the Present of the Infinitive, both *ne* and *jamais* are sometimes placed before it: as—It is praiseworthy never to speak an untruth, *il est louable de ne jamais mentir.*

7. *Never* and *by no means*, used by themselves in answer to a question, are expressed by *jamais* and *nullement*, without *ne;* but if *never* were preceded by *no*, it must then be expressed by *non jamais:* as—Have you seen the king? No, never. *Avez-vous vu le roi? Non, jamais.*

Jamais can be placed at the beginning of a sentence, putting *ne* before the next Verb: as—I never saw so amiable a lady, *jamais je n'ai vu une dame si aimable.*

Jamais, followed by a Substantive taken in a partitive sense, requires *de* before it, in the sense of *some* or *any:* as—He never drinks any water, *il ne boit jamais d'eau.*

EXERCISE.

Note.—For the future the Verbs which must be put in the Subjunctive Mood will be marked *Sub. Pr.* before the French word, when they are required to be in the Present; *Sub. Im.* when in the Imperfect; *Sub. Prete.* when in the Preterite; and *Sub. Plu.* when in the Pluperfect. This assistance will be continued until the pupil be considered sufficiently acquainted with the necessary rules on that subject.

It does not rain.——Has it not (been raining) to-day?——
pleut *plu*
These young ladies do not excel in music, but they dance
demoiselle *exceller* *danser*
with much elegance and taste.——As I never (saw)
de 3 2 1 *Comme* *ai vu*
you before, and as I have not the pleasure of knowing
que *connaître*
you, (you must not wonder) if I refuse you.——She
il ne faut pas vous étonner
confessed that she would not have spoken to me, (had she not
avouer *si elle n'avait pas*
been in want) of money.——It is very unpleasant not to obtain
eu besoin *mortifiant de* *obtenir*
some reward after (having) spent (so much) time (in the study of)
de récompense *avoir passer* *tant de* *à étudier*
so difficult a science.——How vexed and disappointed I was at
3 4 1 2 *Que* 4*vexé* 3 2*contrarié* 1 *de*
not (being able) to go with them, after (I had been waiting)
pouvoir *avoir attendu*
so long.——How does your brother do now?——Not very
long-tems *se porter* *à présent*
well, madam; he had a relapse again yesterday.——Do the
2 3*rechute* 1*encore*
Misses S*** (make) progress in the (Italian language?)—
Demoiselle *font-elles* *Italien*
Not much, I assure you.——(Will you call at Lady D's)
*Passerez-vous chez Madame D****
to-day? No, sir; I think she is gone into the country.—Whether
croire qu' *à* *Qu'*
she write to me or not, I shall not go.——Will you give me
sub. pr. *écrire*
an apple, my dear? No, sir; they are not mine.—The proverb
proverbe

"No virtue no happiness" is not so true as this one: "No
point *celui-ci*
money no paternoster."—Have they any (acquaintance) in town?—He is
Suisse *connaissances* pl.
not very particular in his dress, although he always dresses
recherché *habits* pl. 2 sub. pr. 1 *se mettre*
very genteelly.——Your sisters say that they will not come without
proprement *dire* *sans*
him, and unfortunately he cannot go and* fetch them.—Have
malheureusement *pouvoir* *chercher*
you not sent my linen to the washerwoman? No, sir; I have
envoyer *linge* *blanchisseuse*
not had any opportunity; besides you locked your door in
d' *occasion* *d'ailleurs* *avez fermé* *en*
going out this morning, and I (could not get it.)—Were you not
sortir *n'ai pas pu l'avoir*
talking with his niece? No, madam; the poor girl has no time to
à *nièce* *de*
talk with (any body;) she is always (in such a hurry) that it is almost
à *personne* *si pressée* *qu'* *presque*
impossible to say a word to her.—His parents are in a very miserable
de
condition, they have no money, no means of (getting) any, and no
état *moyen* *gagner*
friends on whom they can depend. Well! I will lend them
sur sub. pr. *pouvoir compter* *hé bien;*
some furniture; not that I think they deserve it, but for the sake
meubles pl. sub. pr. *qu'* *mériter le* *amour*
of their children.—Will you give me some of the same paper you
que
(sold) to Miss W***? We have not any more (of it.)—You
avez vendu *n'* 2 3 1 *en*
will see him no more after this week.—My little boy is no more
voir *semaine* *garçon* *a*
than six or seven years old.*—They are no forwarder than they
de *plus avancé*
were when they came to town.—The waves of the ocean are not more
vague *océan*
agitated by the East and West winds than my heart was when
agiter 2 *d'Est* 3 4 *d'Ouest* 1 *vent* *ne le*
I heard that sad news.——She can neither read nor write.—You
apprendre *nouvelle* *savoir* *lire*
have not put any sugar nor milk in my coffee.—(There would be)
mettre *sucre* *Il n'y aurait*

neither navigation nor agriculture without the industry of men.—I
industrie
neither love nor hate her.— She neither pleases nor displeases me.—I
plaire *déplaire*
am sure she will neither laugh nor talk.—They do not care
qu' *rire* *se* [2]*soucier*
(for it,) nor I neither.—Why do you say so, since you know
[1]*en* *cela puisque* *savez*
I (cannot) speak French?—She is so passionate that I dare not
que *ne saurais* *colère*
tell her (of it.)——(Some people) do not cease (complaining)
[3] [2]*lui* [1]*le* *Il y a des personnes qui* *de se plaindre*
of fortune, although they are loaded with its favours.—I could not
sub. pr. *comblé de*
answer his questions.—Time past never returns, and a word once
répondre à *passé* *revenir*
uttered cannot be recalled.—Never speak ill of any body.—I by no
prononcer *rappeler*
means approve of* his conduct.—Love your children; never blame
approuver *blamer*
them without cause, and never reprove them with passion.—It
raison *réprimander*
is noble never to deceive any body.—Will you go to France with me?
de tromper
No, never.—Never did I (see any thing) like it.*—Never a* man
n'ai vu rien *de semblable*
had more success with so little merit.—I never drink any water.
de *peu de* *boire d'*

---

§. 2.

Cases in which ne *is used before a Verb in French without* pas *or* point *after, though there is no Negative in English.*

General Rule.—1. *Ne* is used in French after the Comparatives *plus, moins, mieux,* and the words *autre, autrement,* before the Verb following *que,* if the Verb preceding *plus, mieux, moins,* &c. is affirmative: as—I love you more tenderly than I ever did any other lady, *je vous aime plus tendrement que je n'ai jamais aimé aucune autre dame;* she is better to day than she was yesterday, *elle est mieux aujourd'hui qu'elle n'était hier;* he writes better than he speaks, *il écrit mieux qu'il ne parle.*

But if the Verb preceding *plus, moins, mieux, autre, autrement,* be Negative or Interrogative, *ne* must not be used before the Verb following *que:* as—She does not write better than she speaks, *elle n'écrit*

pas mieux qu'elle parle, and not *qu'elle ne parle;* she is not better to day than she was yesterday, *elle n'est pas mieux aujourd'hui qu'elle était hier*, and not *qu'elle n'était hier*; have you ever seen a lady more amiable than Miss B*** was, *avez-vous jamais vu une demoiselle plus aimable qu'était Mlle B*** and not *que n'était Mlle B****

Note.—If the Verbs were in the Present of the Infinitive Mood, or if, without being in the Infinitive Mood, there were a Conjunction between *que* and the second Verb, then *ne* must not be used before it, whether the first Verb be Affirmative, Negative, or Interrogative: as—It is more noble to forgive than to revenge, *Il est plus noble de pardonner que de se venger*, and not *que de ne se venger;* you do not dance better than when you were in England, *vous ne dansez pas mieux que quand vous étiez en Angleterre*, and not *que quand vous n'étiez en Angleterre.*

2. *Ne* is likewise used in French after the Conjunctions, *à moins que*, unless; *de crainte que*, for fear; *de peur que*, lest; and after *que*, used in their stead, before the Verb depending on them, which must be put in the Subjunctive Mood: as—I shall not go unless you come and fetch me, *Je n'irai pas à moins que vous ne veniez me chercher;* stay here for fear he should come in, *restez ici de crainte qu'il n'entre;* I shall not go and see him unless he invite me, *je n'irai pas le voir qu'il ne m'en prie;* go out quickly for fear she should see you, *sortez promptement de crainte qu'elle ne vous voie.*

But when *unless* is construed by *à moins de*, or *à moins que de;* and *lest* or *for fear* by *de crainte de*, *de peur de*, with the next Verb in the Present of the Infinitive Mood, *ne* is never required before it: as—For fear of displeasing you, *de crainte de vous déplaire;* and not, *de ne vous déplaire;* no one could speak thus, unless he be a fool, *à moins d'être fou, on ne peut parler ainsi*, and not, *à moins de n'être fou.*

Observe.—*Avant que* before, and also *que* used in the same sense, or for *until*, require *ne* before the next Verb, if any thing uncertain be expressed by it, whilst *ne* is omitted, if any thing positive is expressed, placing it in any case in the Subjunctive Mood: as—He will not come before you go and fetch him, *il ne viendra pas que vous n'alliez le chercher;* because it is uncertain whether you will go or not. Wait till the rain is over, *attendez qu'il ne pleuve plus;* being equally uncertain when the rain will cease; but we say—*Elle vint ici deux jours avant qu'elle mourût*, she came here two days before she died; and not *avant qu'elle ne mourût*, because reference is made to a positive thing, about which there can be no uncertainty.

Should *before* be construed by *avant de* with the next Verb in the Present of the Infinitive, then *ne* is never required before it: as—He came to see me before he went away, *il vint me voir avant de partir;* and not, *avant de ne partir.*

3. *Ne* is used in French after the Verbs *craindre*, to fear, to be afraid; *appréhender*, to apprehend; *avoir peur*, to be afraid; *trembler*, to tremble; before the next Verb depending on *que*, if the thing expressed by it is not wished for, but on the contrary, objected to, the Verb being put in the Subjunctive Mood: as—I fear, *or* am afraid he will come, *Je crains qu'il ne vienne;* because I wish him not to come.

But if the thing it expresses is wished for, (in which case *not* is always used in English) *pas* must then be put after the Verb with *ne* before, using the Subjunctive Mood as above: as—I am afraid my sister will not arrive to night, *J'ai peur que ma sœur n'arrive pas ce soir;* because I am anxious for her arrival.

If, on the contrary, we were indifferent whether the thing it expresses take place or not, then *ne* and *pas* are both omitted, though the Verb is as before put in the Subjunctive Mood: as—I do not fear

his coming, *je ne crains pas qu'il vienne;* because whether he come or not, is a matter of indifference to me.

Observe.—If the sentence were construed by *de* with the next Verb in the Present of the Infinitive, instead of *que* with the Subjunctive, *ne* must then never be used before it: as—He fears, apprehends, trembles to be discovered, *il craint, il appréhende, il tremble d'être découvert;* and not *de n'être découvert.*

4. *Empêcher,* to prevent, to hinder, and *prendre garde,* in the sense of taking means that a thing may not happen, followed by *que,* always require *ne* before the next Verb, which must be put in the Subjunctive Mood: as—Prevent him from coming, *empêchez qu'il ne vienne;* take care that the child does not fall, *prenez garde que l'enfant ne tombe.*

If the sentence were construed by *de* with the next Verb in the Present of the Infinitive, instead of *que* with the Subjunctive, as with the Verbs *craindre, appréhender, avoir peur,* &c. then *ne* must never be used before it: as—I prevented him from coming, *je l'empêchai de venir,* and not *de ne venir;* take care you do not fall, *prenez garde de tomber,* and not *de ne tomber.*

5. *Nier, douter, désespérer, disconvenir,* followed by *que,* always require *ne* before the next Verb, if they are used negatively or interrogatively, but not when affirmatively. In any case, the next Verb is required to be in the Subjunctive Mood: as—I do not deny, doubt, despair, disagree, that it will be fine weather, *je ne nie pas, je ne doute pas, je ne désespère pas, qu'il ne fasse beau temps;* but—I deny, doubt, despair, that it is so, *je nie, je doute, je désespère que cela soit,* and not *que cela ne soit.*

6. When the Impersonal *il s'en faut* is followed by *que,* and used either negatively or interrogatively, or preceded by a Verb of doubt, or accompanied by one of the words *peu, guère, presque, rien,* or any other of a negative import, *ne* is always required before the next Verb, but not if *il s'en faut* is used alone affirmatively; in all cases putting the following Verb in the Subjunctive Mood: as—*Il ne s'en faut pas de beaucoup que la somme entière n'y soit,* there is not much wanting of the whole sum; *combien s'en faut-il que la somme entière n'y soit?* how much is it wanting of the whole sum? *il ne s'en fallait rien que je ne fusse tué,* I was very near being killed; *je doute qu'il s'en faille beaucoup qu'il n'ait autant de mérite que l'autre,* I doubt that he is very far from having as much merit as the other. But we say without *ne*—*Il s'en faut beaucoup qu'il soit aussi savant que son frère,* he is very far from being as learned as his brother; *il s'en fallait de beaucoup que la somme entière y fût,* there was a great deal wanting of the whole sum; because, *il s'en faut* is used affirmatively.

Peu s'en faut que Mathan *ne* m'ait nommé son père.
Rac. Ath. Act. iii. Sc. 6.

Observe.—*De beaucoup* must always be used with the above Impersonal, in speaking of a quantity, of which the deficiency is great; and *beaucoup* without *de,* in speaking of a great difference between two persons or things.

EXERCISE.

(There are) some authors who write better than they speak, and others
Il y a *auteur* *écrire* *d'autre*
who speak better than they write.—He flatters himself more than
se flatter

he should, and he praises others less than they deserve.—Although
devoir louer autre mériter Quoique

she is (quite another person to what) she was when she left us,
sub. pr. *tout autre qu' quand quitter*

she still speaks otherwise than she thinks.—Mrs. L*** is not better
[2]encore [1] autrement

than she was yesterday, and I (am very much afraid) her health
crains bien que santé

will never improve, unless she goes into the country.
sub. pr. *se rétablir* sub. pr. *à*

—Have you ever heard any body sing better than Miss W*** sang the
entendre

other evening?—It is greater to overcome one's passions than to conquer
de vaincre ses de conquérir

whole nations.—We are (a great deal) better than when we were
des entier se porter beaucoup

in town.—Unless you punish him severely, he will not study.—
sub. pr. *punir sévèrement étudier*

Stop a moment, for fear my father should come and see you.—
Attendre sub. pr. sub. pr. *voir*

I will never forgive you, unless you go and* ask his pardon.—
pardonner sub. pr. *demander lui*

They will not set out before he arrives, for fear of displeasing
Elles partir sub. prete. *arriver déplaire à*

their mother.—(No one could behave in that manner,) unless (he be)
on ne saurait se conduire ainsi d'être

intoxicated.—Wait till the rain is over.—He wrote to me two months
ivre Attendre sub. pr.

before he went to the Indies.—She (was so afraid)
sub. im. *partir pour avait si grand' peur que*

I should tell you of* it, that she made me promise never to
sub. im. [3]*dire* [1] [2]*le faire promettre de*

mention her name (to you.)——My brother is so late this evening,
prononcer en votre présence

that I (am very much afraid) some misfortune has happened
crains fort qu'il [4]*quelque* [5]*malheur* [2]*soit* [3]*arriver*

(to him.)—Miss S*** is gone to see her cousin, but the weather is so bad
[1]*lui*

that we are apprehensive she will not return to-day.—They
craindre qu' sub. pr. *revenir Elles*

(are not at all afraid) he will scold them, though they
ne craignent point du tout qu' sub. pr. *gronder quoiqu'*

tremble lest he should meet them.—I (never was
sub. pr. sub. pr. *rencontrer n'ai jamais eu*

afraid) to speak to him, but I tremble to (address) his wife.
peur de d' adresser la parole à

—I (am going out) for* a moment; take care that the child does
vais sortir

not fall.—You prevented me from (answering) his letter, and
sub. pr. *empêcher répondre à*

now you wish (me to go) and* ask him a favour.—I do not
maintenant que j'aille

deny I told it him, but I doubt (very much) (his
que [3]sub. prete. [1]*le* [2] *fort*

having mentioned it to you.)—They do not despair that he will
qu'il vous en ait parlé [2] [3]

come yet, though they begin to suspect
sub. pr. [4] [1]*encore* sub. pr. *commencer soupçonner qu'*

he has not succeeded.—I believe there was not so much wanting
réussir qu' s'en falloir

of the whole sum, as he said.——How much do
[5]*que* [6] [8] [7] *n'y fût* [1]*qu'* [2] [3]*le* [4]*dire*

you suppose there was deficient? Ten pounds.——That
croire qu' sub. im. *s'en falloir* [11]

young lady was very near being run over by
[1] [2]*demoiselle* [1]*il* [2]*ne* [3]*s'en fallut* [4]*rien* [5]*que* [6]*notre* [7]*voiture* [8]*ne*

our carriage, the other day; she (would not stop
[9]*passât* [10]*sur* *ne voulut point s'arrêter*

because it was but a few steps) to
parce qu'il ne s'en fallait que deux ou trois pas pour qu'elle arrivât

the other side of the street.—We question whether this house
douter qu' sub. pr.

is very far from being as healthy as the other.—Do you not
sub. pr. *sain*

think that she is very far from being as accomplished as her
sub. pr. sub. pr.

sister?—You may (rest assured) that they are very far from
pouvez être certain sub. pr.

reading well.—I know there is a great deal wanting of the whole
sais

amount, yet I (cannot imagine) there is so great a
somme cependant ne saurais m'imaginer sub. pr. *s'en falloir*

deficiency as you say.
autant que le

ARTICLE II.

OF INTERROGATIONS.

§. 1.

Of the different Modes of Interrogation in which the Pronoun Subject is generally placed after the Verb.

First General Rule.—When a Verb is interrogatively used, having for its subject one of the Personal Pronouns—*je, tu, il, elle ; nous, vous, ils, elles ;* the Demonstrative *ce,* this, that; or the Indefinite Pronoun *on,* one, they, &c. they must be placed after the Verb in a Simple Tense, and after the auxiliary in a Compound one, with a hyphen (-) between the Verb or the auxiliary and the Pronoun, without expressing the auxiliaries, *does, do,* or *did,* used in English, except, however, when *did* stands for *has* or *have,* in which case it is construed by the corresponding Person, either Singular or Plural of the Present of the Indicative of the Verb *avoir,* placing the Verb following in the Past Participle: as—Do you call? *appelez-vous?* shall I go with you? *irai-je avec vous?* how much did that coat cost you? *combien vous a coûté cet habit?* &c.

Should the Verb end with a vowel in the Third Person Singular of any of its Tenses, a *t* is then required between the Verb and the Pronouns *il, elle,* or *on,* with a hyphen on each side of it, to avoid the harsh sound which would otherwise result from the meeting of the two vowels: as—*Parle-t-il?* does he speak? *danse-t-elle bien?* does she dance well? *viendra-t-on?* will they come? &c., and not, *parle il? danse elle bien? viendra on?* &c.

Observe.—1. When the First Person Singular of the Present of the Indicative of a Verb ends in *e* mute, and is interrogatively used, an acute accent is required to be placed over the *e:* as—Do I speak? *parlé-je?* do I offer? *offré-je?* do I suffer? *souffré-je?* &c. and not, *parle-je? offre-je? souffre-je?* &c.

The same is to be observed in the First Person Singular of the Present and Imperfect of the Subjunctive of a few Verbs, of which the First Person of either Tense ending in *e* mute, has its subject placed after it, to express a kind of wish, desire, &c.: as—May I! *puissé-je!* were I! *dussé-je!*

2. If the First Person Singular of the Present of the Indicative of a Verb has but one syllable, and is used interrogatively, the expression *est-ce que,* is sometimes employed before the Verb instead of placing the Pronoun after, to avoid the harsh sound which would result in some instances: as—Do I sleep? *est-ce que je dors?* do I lose? *est-ce que je perds?* &c. and not *dors-je? perds-je?* &c. always beginning the sentence by *est-ce que,* placing next the Pronoun which is subject of the Verb, and then the Verb.

Second General Rule.—When a Verb, or any of these auxiliaries, *does, do, did, shall, will, can, could, would, should, may, might,* being interrogatively used, has for subject a Substantive instead of a Personal Pronoun, or any of these Pronouns, *this, that; any body, any one ; mine, thine ; his, hers, ours, yours, theirs ;* the sentence is then construed by beginning with the Substantive or Pronoun, and next the Verb, without ever expressing the auxiliaries *does, do, did,* but using immediately after the Verb in a Simple Tense, or after the auxiliary in a Compound one, one of the Personal Pronouns, *il, elle,* or *ils, elles,* according to the gender and number of the Substantive pre-

ceding: as—Is breakfast ready? *le déjeûner est-il prêt?* will your sister be at home? *votre sœur sera-t-elle chez elle?* is mine here? *le mien est-il ici?* does the gentleman play? *monsieur joue-t-il?* did the lady kiss him? *la dame l'embrassa-t-elle?*—as if it were in English: *the breakfast is it ready? your sister will she be at home? Mine is it here?* &c.

If the sentence, however, begin by one of these Interrogative expressions, *qui,* who? *que* or *quoi,* what? *combien,* how much, how many? *comment,* how? *pourquoi,* why, what for? *d'où,* from whence? *par où,* through what place? or any other of the same kind, the Pronouns *il, elle; ils, elles,* are then usually omitted, if the Verb has no object, placing the Substantive, its subject, after it, in a Simple Tense, and after the Participle in a Compound one, as above; but, if the Verb has an object, using the Pronouns *il, elle; ils, elles,* as in the preceding rule: Ex.—Who is the young lady that has just gone out? *qui est la demoiselle qui vient de sortir?* where is your son gone? *où est allé votre fils?* from whence does the gentleman come? *d'où vient monsieur?* in which sentences the Pronouns *il, elle,* &c. are not used, because the Verbs have no object; but we say with *il, elle; ils, elles*:—How did the young lady find her way home? *comment mademoiselle trouva-t-elle son chemin?* why has the governess scolded her? *pourquoi la gourvernante l'a-t-elle grondée?* because these Verbs have an object.

Observe.—The subject of the Verb, whether it is a Noun or a Pronoun, is likewise placed after the Verb, though the sentence is not interrogative, when quoting the words of any person: as—I shall have soon finished, said he, *j'aurai bientôt fini, dit-il;* all men are fools, said Boileau, and the only difference is in the degree, *tous les hommes sont fous, a dit Boileau, et ne diffèrent que du plus ou du moins.*

Third General Rule.—These interrogative expressions,—*Is this* or *that? is not this* or *that? are these* or *those? are not these* or *those? was this* or *that? was not this* or *that? were these* or *those? were not these* or *those?* &c. followed by one of the Possessive Pronouns,—*My, thy, his, her, our, your, their,* and a Substantive; or, again, by one of the Disjunctive Possessive—*Mine, thine, his, hers, ours, yours, theirs;* are expressed in French—*Is this* or *that?* by *est-ce là?*—*is not this* or *that?* by *n'est-ce pas là?*—*are these* or *those?* by *sont-ce là?*—*are not these* or *those?* by *ne sont-ce pas là?*—*was this* or *that?* by *était-ce là?*—*was not this* or *that?* by *n'était-ce pas là?*—*were these* or *those?* by *étaient-ce là?*—*were not these* or *those?* by *n'étaient-ce pas là?* &c. &c. according to the Tense in which the Verb *to be* is in English, and as it is in the Singular or Plural, expressing the answer to them by—*Ce l'est* or *ce les sont; ce ne l'est pas* or *ce ne les sont pas,* &c. according likewise to the Tense in which the Verb is in English, and as it is Singular or Plural, affirmative or negative; using, 1st, *ce;* 2, one of the Pronouns *le, la, les,* according to the Gender and Number of the Substantive mentioned in the question; 3, the Verb in the Third Person Singular or Plural, if it is affirmative: and if negative, 1st, *ce;* 2, *ne;* 3, one of the Pronouns *le, la, l' les;* 4, *the Verb;* 5, *pas;* as—Is this your carriage? yes, it is; *est-ce là votre voiture? oui, ce l'est;* is not that your hat? no, it is not; *n'est-ce pas là votre chapeau? non, ce ne l'est pas;* are these your children? yes, they are; *sont-ce là vos enfans? oui, ce les sont;* was this your horse? yes, it was; *était-ce là votre cheval? oui, ce l'était,* &c.

FOURTH GENERAL RULE.—The following kind of Interrogations, in which the second part of the sentence is negative and the first affirmative, but always implying a wish that the thing in question may take place, or a certainty that it has taken place: as—*You will come, will you not? you have written to him, have you not?* &c. are expressed in French by translating the first part literally, and using *n'est-ce pas* for the second part, whatever may be the expression or Tense of the Verb used in English: as—You will come, will you not? *vous viendrez n'est-ce pas?* you have written to him, have you not? *vous lui avez écrit, n'est-ce pas?* as if it were in English, *you will come is it not? you have written to him, is it not?*

But these interrogations, and any similar ones, in which we feel a kind of surprise at the thing mentioned taking or having taken place, the first part being usually negative, and the second interrogative without negation: as—*It does not rain, does it? your father is not dead, is he?* are expressed in French by *est-ce que* in the beginning of the sentence, putting next the subject of the Verb, then the Verb, without expressing the negation, and leaving the second part of the sentence, composed of the expressions *does it? did it? will it?* &c. completely unexpressed: as—It does not rain, does it? *est-ce qu'il pleut?* your father is not dead, is he? *est-ce que votre père est mort?* &c. &c. as if it were in English—*Is it that it rains? is it that your father is dead?* &c.

Observe.—When we feel surprised at any thing not taking place, we also use *Est-ce que* to ask the question, whatever may be the mode of expression used in English: as—Don't you go there? *est-ce que vous n'y allez pas?*

EXERCISE.

Do you intend to go out to-day?—Did you call me
avoir intention de sortir Avez appeler

(as you came in) this morning?—Will she not see me?—How
en entrant voir

(can any one) expect a reward for (such a trifle?)—Do I
peut-on attendre récompense si peu de chose

love her more tenderly than I should?—Oh! may I live
aimer tendrement ne devrais vivre

long* enough* to see those happy days when she (is restored)
pour sera rendue

to us! For (were it even at the expense of) my life, I swear
dussé-je y perdre la jurer que

I will deliver her from the slavery to which she is now
délivrer esclavage maintenant

reduced!—Do I sleep at church?—Do I sell impious
réduire dormir église

books, (to be thus pointed at by you) as a man who
pour que vous me montriez ainsi au doigt

corrupts the morals of youth?—Does Mr. T*** play to-
corrompre jeunesse jouer

day? Yes; he performs the part of Henry the Fourth.—Did any
prendre rôle

body tell you so?—Will not Miss S*** think it is a mere
cela que c' sub.pr. *pur*

supposition?—Is the company arrived?—At what o'clock will
compagnie

dinner be ready?—Did not the servant tell you that he is not
prêt servante

awake?—Why has not Mr. D*** accepted the two bills
éveillé accepter effet

which I (brought) this morning?—Is he (in the counting-house)
ai apportés au bureau

now? Yes; he is (waiting for) Mrs. L***.—Will not your
à attendre

mother and sisters come (to tea) with us this evening? No;
prendre le thé chez

they are going to Mrs. W's.—Was the girl going to market
chez fille marché

when I met her yesterday?—Is Mr. P*** (at home?) Yes,
rencontrer chez lui

madam, he is (dressing.)—Did not Orpheus, by the recital of his
à s'habiller Orphée récit

misfortunes, move the heart of Pluto?—Is the (music-master)
malheur toucher maître de musique

here? No, he (is just gone out.)—Who was that lady who spoke
vient de sortir

to you in the Park last Sunday?—How much did that coat
²*dernier* ¹

cost you?—Why did not your sisters take some (refreshment?)—
prendre rafraîchissemens pl.

(Which way) did the lady go?—What were the conquests of
par où ¹*est* ³ ⁴ ²*allée conquête*

Julius Cæsar in Great Britain?—(What account have we) of
Jules César Bretagne Que rapporte-t-on

Cæsar after the civil wars?—When, and by whom, was he slain?
César tuer

—In what year was Napoleon crowned?—(How long) did he
couronner Combien de tems

reign?—(How long,) Catalina, wilt thou abuse our patience?—
régner Jusques à quand abuser de

How long shall thy frantic rage baffle the efforts of justice?
frénétique se jouer des

—In how many days did God create the world?—Who were the
En créer

first man and woman?—Who were their sons?—What
la première

was their occupation?—How did your sister find her way home*
trouver

(last night?)—There will always be wars among men, said that
hier au soir *des*

holy man, because they are ambitious.—You will also find people,
saint *des gens*

added he, who will try to deceive you.—All men are fools,
ajouter *tâcher de tromper*

said Boileau, the only difference is in the degree.—Is this your

house? Yes it is; will you walk in?—Is that your footman?
entrer *valet*

No, he is not.—Was not that your carriage? Yes, it was.—Are
ce

these your horses?—No, they are not.—Is this your hat?—Yes, it

is; give it to me.—You speak French, don't you?—They live
demeurer

in the country, do they not?—He was (a coal-merchant,) was
à *marchand de charbon*

he not?—They are in town, are they not?—They will come, is it

not so?—You have seen my father, have you not?—It does not

rain, does it?—She is not dead, is she?—You have not lost your

way, have you?—He was not robbed, was he?—Don't you go
voler

sometimes to the opera?—No, never.

CHAPTER VII.

OF ADVERBS.

An Adverb is a part of speech joined to a Verb, an Adjective, and sometimes to another Adverb, to express some quality or circumstance respecting it: as—He reads well, *il lit bien;* a truly good man, *un très-bon homme;* she writes very correctly, *elle écrit très-correctement.*

ARTICLE I.

Division of Adverbs.

Adverbs may be divided into Simple and Compound.

The Simple are those which consist of a single word: as—*Toujours, souvent;* the Compound, on the contrary, being formed of several: as—*A la hâte, à la Française.*

---

§. 1.

Place of Adverbs.

First General Rule.—The Simple Adverbs (that is to say, Adverbs compounded of a single word) are generally placed, in French, after the Verb in a Simple Tense, and after the Auxiliary in a Compound one, but never between the Subject and the Verb, as is frequently the case in English: as—I always think of you, *je pense toujours à vous,* and not *je toujours pense;* I have never spoken to him, *je ne lui ai jamais parlé.*

However, the Adverbs—*bien,* well; *mal,* bad; *mieux,* better; *pis,* worse; when used with a Verb in the Present of the Infinitive, can either be placed before or after it in French, whichever is most harmonious; but if the Verb is in any other Mood, they go after it in a Simple Tense, and after the Auxiliary in a Compound one, whether they are used by themselves or are preceded by one of these words—*fort, très, assez, moins, aussi, si,* or some other of the same kind: as—To perform one's duty well, *faire bien* or *bien faire son devoir;* to think badly of somebody, *penser mal* or *mal penser de quelqu'un;* you did right, *vous fîtes bien;* he did wrong, *il fit mal;* do better, *faites mieux;* he will do much worse, *il fera bien pis;* you have done very wrong, *vous avez très-mal fait;* I have been so well received, *j'ai été si bien reçu;* he has received him very badly, *il l'a fort mal reçu,* &c. &c.

Second General Rule.—The Compound Adverbs, (that is to say, Adverbs compounded of several words,) such as—*A la hâte,* hastily; *à la mode,* fashionably, &c. as well as the Simple, which either have or can have an object depending upon them, such as—*consequemment,* consistently; *convenablement,* conveniently; which require the Preposition *à* before the next word, are generally placed after the Verb in a Simple Tense, and after the Participle in a Compound one, but never between the Auxiliary and the Participle, as other Adverbs, and if the Verb has a direct regimen, they come after it: as—He who judges hastily, commonly judges wrong, *celui qui juge à la hâte, juge assez ordinairement mal;* he has reasoned consistently with his principles, *il a raisonné conséquemment à ses principes;* to speak agreeably to the subject, *parler convenablement au sujet.*

Observe.—1. We always say *assez souvent,* and not *souvent assez,* as in English, *often enough; assez* always preceding in French.

We also say: *beaucoup trop*, too much; and not *trop beaucoup*, because *beaucoup* cannot be preceded by any augmentative as *much* can in English. Therefore, we cannot use: *très-beaucoup*, very much; *si beaucoup*, so much, nor any other expression of the same kind.

2. When *bien* comes in French before another Adverb, it means *very, much, quite*, &c. in English: as—*Bien assez*, quite enough; *bien moins*, much less; *bien tard*, very late; but when it follows it, it signifies *well*: as—*Assez bien*, pretty well; *moins bien*, not so well; *fort bien*, very well; *aussi bien*, as well.

Note.—There are some Adjectives, which being used with a Verb to express some circumstance, without referring to any Substantive, become true Adverbs: as—She sings right, *elle chante juste*; she sang wrong, *elle chanta faux*; he smells badly, *il sent mauvais*.

Remark.—What has just been said respecting the place of Adverbs in the sentence, is not intended to include all cases; for the place of the majority of them is so little determined by use, that on this account their order in the sentence often depends on the justness and delicacy of the speaker's ear.

EXERCISE.

Courtiers often pass all their life in the hope of attaining† honours
Courtisan *espoir* *parvenir à des*

which they never obtain.—We seldom repent of talking little, but
obtenir *On* *se repentir* *peu*

frequently of talking too much.—Never do to others what you
souvent *trop* *faire aux* *ce que*

(would not like should be done unto you.)—I have always advised
ne voudriez pas qu'on vous fît *conseiller*

my children to behave well, and never to wrong (any body.)—
à *de se conduire* *de* *faire tort à* *personne*

Your letter is very badly written, I am afraid you have written
craindre que sub. prete.

it hastily.—If you will promise me to study your next lesson better,
à la hâte *de* *prochain*

I will not punish you this time.—He does very wrong (in allowing)
fois-ci *faire* *mal* *de permettre à*

his daughter to frequent the theatres so often, because she will
de fréquenter *parce qu'* 1

insensibly get a taste (for them.)—I recommend you to perform
4 3*acquérir* 5 *le* 6 2*en* *de remplir*

your duty well, if you wish to* merit his esteem.—I do not think he

did right in sending his son to Paris, to learn mathematics;
sub.prete. *faire bien de* *pour*

---

† For the future, the Verbs which the pupil will find in the *Present Participle* in English, must be placed in the Present of the Infinitive in French, when depending on the Prepositions *de* or *à*.

because that branch of education is much better taught in England, at
enseigner en
the University of Cambridge.—Religion teaches us not to misinterpret
à interpréter mal
the actions of others, nor to think ill of our neighbour.—If she had acted
et à prochain agir
conformably to the rules of honour and justice, nobody would have
conformément
spoken ill of her.—We breakfasted yesterday (in the French style,)
à la Française
and to-day we shall dine (in the English manner.)—(What is done)
à l'Anglaise Ce qui se fait
with cheerfulness is generally well done.—Do not judge hastily, or
plaisir ordinairement
you will commonly judge wrong.—I hope you will not encourage

him to swear, he already swears often enough.——They have
à
(a great deal too much) confidence in him, they will certainly repent
beaucoup trop de
it.—(That is) quite enough, I thank you.—It is much less than I
en En voilà bien C'
expected.—She is as well (at your house) as here.—These flowers
chez vous qu'
do not smell so bad as those.—How incorrectly she sang all the
sentir mauvais Qu' faux
evening!—You take a great deal too much physic; it will ruin
soirée médecine cela détruire
your constitution.—If he wishes to get better, (he must) drink
se rétablir il faut qu'il sub. pr. *boire*
much less wine.

CHAPTER VIII.

OF PREPOSITIONS.

Prepositions serve to connect words with one another, and to show the relation between them; as—*Il passa de France en Angleterre*, he went from France over to England.

They are divided into simple and compound, the simple consisting of a single word: as—*A, de, en, pour, contre, sans, avec*, &c. and the compound of several: as—*Vis-à-vis de, à côté de*, &c.

ARTICLE I.

Different Modes of expressing in French the Prepositions *From, to, about, over, on, upon, in, against,* &c.

§. 1.

From *and* to.

First General Rule.—1. When the Prepositions *from* and *to* are used in the same sentence to express the distance, or the going from one place to another, *from* is always expressed by *de*, but *to* is expressed by *à*, if the Substantive before which it is placed is the name of a town, village, or place; whilst, if it is the name of a country, province, or department, it must be expressed by *en*, and sometimes by *dans*, as may be seen in the following examples :—I can go in two hours from Paris to Versailles, *je puis aller en deux heures de Paris à Versailles ;* they go now from London to Brighton in six hours, *on va à présent de Londres à Brighton en six heures ;* he went from England to France, and from France to Italy, *il alla d'Angleterre en France, et de France en Italie ;* how long does it take you to go from Paris to the department of the lower Loire? *combien est-on à aller de Paris dans le département de la Loire inférieure?*

But if the same Noun which follows *from* be repeated after *to*, then *to* must always be expressed by *en*, the same as when it comes before the name of a country, province, &c. : as—She is always going from shop to shop, *elle va toujours de boutique en boutique.*

2. When *from* and *to* are used to express a duration of time, as in the following sentence—*from morning to night*, *from* is expressed by *depuis* and *to* by *jusqu'à :* as—From morning to night, *depuis le matin jusqu'au soir.*

3. *From*, used after any Verb expressing that we either come, return, were returning, or will return, from the house of some body, is construed in French by *de chez*, or *de la maison de*, with the name of the person immediately after : as—I come or return from Mr. B's, *je viens* or *reviens de chez Mr. B** ;* as we were returning from Mr. L.'s house, *en revenant de chez* or *de la maison de Mr. L** ;* when I return from my friend's, *quand je reviendrai de chez mon ami.*

4. *To* or *at*, on the contrary, used after a Verb expressing that we either go, have been, or will go to the house of somebody, is expressed by *chez*, and sometimes by *à la maison de*, putting, as above, the name of the person immediately after : as—I was going to your house, *j'allais chez vous ;* were you not going to Mrs. S's ? *n'alliez-vous pas chez Madame S** ?*

Observe.—Chez can only be used before names of persons, but never before those of places ; therefore, we cannot say—*En revenant de chez Pall-Mall, je suis allé chez la Maison de Somerset*, in returning from Pall-Mall I went to Somerset-House ; but—*En revenant de Pall-Mall, je suis allé à la Maison de Somerset*, because *Pall-Mall*

and *Somerset-House* are two names of places, which require the Prepositions *de* and *à*.

5. *To,* used also in the sense of *so far as* or *to the,* is construed by *jusqu'à:* as—I will prosecute him to the end, *je le poursuivrai jusqu'au bout.*

---

§. 2.

About.

GENERAL RULE.—1. When this Preposition denotes proximity, it is expressed by *autour de;* but when it denotes vicinity, it is expressed by *aux environs de,* or *dans les environs de,* if it precedes the place mentioned, and simply by *aux environs, dans les environs* or *ses environs,* if it follows it: as—I had twenty ladies about me, *j'avais vingt dames autour de moi;* I have seen all the towns in the neighbourhood of London, *j'ai vu toutes les villes aux* or *dans les environs de Londres;* Paris and its neighbouring places, *Paris et ses environs.*

2. *About,* used in mentioning the different parts of the day, year, or the date of the month, or any time in general, is expressed by *vers,* with the Definite Article *le, la,* or *les,* before the next word; it is also sometimes expressed by *sur,* using, likewise, the Definite Article before the next word, when mentioning the different hours of the day: as—It was about the evening, *c'était vers le soir;* it will be about six o'clock, *ce sera vers* or *sur les six heures;* he will come about July, *il viendra vers le mois de Juillet;* about the tenth, *vers le dix;* I went there about two o'clock, *j'y allai sur les deux heures.*

3. *About,* denoting an approximate number or quantity of any thing, or when coming before a Noun which expresses the depth, height, dimension, weight, or measure of any thing, is expressed by *environ, à peu près* or *près de,* according to the import of the sentence: as—There were about two hundred people, *il y avait environ deux cents personnes;* this tree is about twenty-four feet high, *cet arbre a environ vingt-quatre pieds de hauteur;* there were about ten bushels, *il y avait environ* or *à peu près dix boisseaux.*

4. *About,* placed between a Tense of the Verb *to be* and another Verb, to denote that some body is or was going to do any thing, as in this sentence—*She was about to go and give him a good scolding,* is expressed in French by *sur le point de,* with the following Verb in the Present of the Infinitive: as—She was about to go and give him a good scolding, *elle était sur le point d'aller lui faire une réprimande sevère.*

5. *About,* coming before a Substantive, either alone or preceded by an Adjective, after any Tense of the Verb *to be,* expressing that somebody is or was doing something, is expressed by *à* before that Substantive or Adjective: as—They are about their drawing, *ils sont à leur dessin;* she was about a beautiful piece of work, *elle était à un ouvrage magnifique.*

6. *About,* at the end of an interrogative sentence, made by *what* and a Tense of the Verb *to be:* as—*What are you about?* is not ex-

pressed in French, but the sentence is construed by a Tense of the Verb *faire,* in the following ways: as—What are you about? *que faites-vous?* or *qu'est-ce que vous faites?*

7. *About,* coming after a Tense of the Verb *to have* before a Personal Pronoun: as—*I have no money about me,* is expressed by *sur:* ex.—I have no money about me, *je n'ai pas d'argent sur moi.* It is likewise expressed by *sur* after a few other Verbs: as—He was quizzed about his affected manner of speaking, *on le railla sur sa manière affectée de parler.*

8. *About,* coming after any other Verb than *to be* or *to have* before a Substantive or a Pronoun is expressed by *de, sur, pour, touchant, concernant,* &c, according to the Preposition which the preceding Verb requires after it in French: as—I shall speak to him about you, *je lui parlerai de vous;* he consulted me about that affair, *il me consulta sur cette affaire;* I shall go to Mr. C's about that money, *j'irai chez Mr. C*** pour* or *touchant cet argent.*

9. *Some where about* is expressed by *Quelque part dans les environs.*

---

§. 3.

Over.

General Rule.—1. *Over* is generally expressed by *sur:* as—The ills which hang over our heads, *les maux qui penchent sur nos têtes.*

2. *Over,* used in the sense of *through,* is expressed by *par:* as—My sister has travelled all over Italy, *ma sœur a voyagé par toute l'Italie.*

3. It is expressed by *par dessus,* in the sense of *across:* as—He leaped over the brook, *il sauta par dessus le ruisseau;* it is also sometimes expressed by *de l'autre côté de:* as—Over the way, *de l'autre côté du chemin.*

4. When *over* is used to denote any thing that is done or past, it is expressed by *passé, fini, fait,* and in several other ways, which can only be learnt by practice: as—Now the danger is over, *maintenant le danger est passé;* my work will soon be over, *mon ouvrage sera bientôt fini,* &c.

5. It is also sometimes expressed by *de, pour, sur, d'un bout à l'autre:* as in the following sentences—He mourns over the loss of his sweetheart, *il s'afflige de la perte de son amante;* joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, *on se réjouira au ciel pour un seul pécheur qui se repent;* I have read the book over, *j'ai lu le livre d'un bout à l'autre.*

6. *Over* frequently comes after a Verb in English, forming a part of its signification, in which case it is not expressed literally in French: as—to read over, *parcourir;* to give over, *abandonner,* &c. but this can only be learnt by practice, as there are no rules to specify when *over* forms a part of the Verb or not.

---

§. 4.

On, upon.

GENERAL RULE.—1. These Prepositions are generally expressed by *sur:* as—Your hat is upon the table, *votre chapeau est sur la table;* I rely on you, *je compte sur vous;* I will draw upon you, *je tirerai sur vous.*

2. *On* or *upon,* used before the name of any body on whom we either have called or intend to call, are expressed by *chez* before the name of the person, and the Verbs *to call, to wait,* by *passer,* as—I shall call upon you, *je passerai chez vous;* he called upon me yesterday, *il passa chez moi hier;* they will call upon her, *ils passeront chez elle.*

3. *On* or *upon* used after any Tense of the Verb, *to play,* before the name of an instrument on which some body plays, are expressed by *de:* as—She plays beautifully upon the harp, *elle pince admirablement bien de la harpe.* They are also expressed by *de* after several other Verbs with which they are used, when the Verb requires it in French, as likewise in some sentences, similar to this :— on my part, *de mon côté.*

4. They are expressed by *en* and *dans* in these sentences, and all similar ones :—On high, *en haut;* he has been all the morning upon duty, *il a été toute la matinée en faction;* I shall go upon an ambassy to the emperor, *j'irai en ambassade auprès de l'empereur;* on so solemn an occasion, *dans une occasion si solennelle.*

5. *On* or *upon* coming before a word denoting opportunity, occasion, or any time in general; also before the words *right, left, horseback, foot,* &c. are expressed by *à, au, à la, à l',* or *aux,* according to the import of the sentence: as—Upon the first opportunity, *à la première occasion;* I met him on his arrival, *je le rencontrai à son arrivée;* you will turn on the right, *vous tournerez à droite;* it is on your left from here, *c'est à gauche d'ici;* I shall go there on horseback and you on foot, *j'irai à cheval et vous à pied;* on the news of his arrival, *à la nouvelle de son arrivée.*

6. *On* is also often used in English after a Verb, to form a part of its signification: as—Now I have my shoes on, *maintenant je suis chaussé;* put your hat on, *couvrez-vous;* go on, *avancez,* &c. in which case *on* is not expressed literally in French; but this can only be learnt by practice, as there are no rules to specify when *on* forms a part of the Verb or not.

---

§. 5.

In, *en* or *dans.*

The Prepositions *en* and *dans* are used in French in so many various significations, that it is almost impossible to give rules for the cases in which *en* or *dans* are to be used.

1. *En* is, however, used when we wish to express the length

of time spent in doing any thing, and *dans* to denote that after such a time is elapsed we shall do such or such a thing: as—I go in two hours from Paris to Versailles, *je vais en deux heures de Paris à Versailles,* which expresses that I am two hours going from Paris to Versailles. But if I wish to say that after two hours are elapsed I shall set out for Versailles, I must then say—*Dans deux heures je partirai pour Versailles,* and not, *en deux heures,* &c.

Observe.—*En* cannot be followed by the definite article *le, la, les,* as *dans* can, except in a few sentences, in which it admits the *l* with an apostrophe (') as—*En l'absence d'un tel,* in the absence of such an one; *en l'état où je suis réduit,* in the state to which I am reduced; *en l'honneur de,* &c. in the honour of, &c. But we say—*Dans l'hiver,* in winter; *dans le printems,* in the spring; *dans l'automne,* in autumn, &c. &c. and not: *en l'hiver, en l'automne,* &c.

§. 6.

Against, after, with, by, on.

General Rule.—1. These Prepositions coming before words denoting some specified time or place; the mode of being or doing of people, their actions, &c. are frequently expressed by *à,* as in these sentences:—Against to-morrow, *à demain;* against our return, *à notre retour;* the picture hangs against the wall, *le tableau est attaché* or *pend à la muraille;* I shall sing after my own way, *je chanterai à ma manière;* she dresses after the English way, *elle s'habille à l'Anglaise;* he kneeled down, *il se mit à genoux.*

2. When *by* or *with* precedes a Noun expressing the quality, price, weight, or measure of any thing, and also the materials of which any thing is made or built, the tools used in making or constructing it, they are also expressed by *à*: as—Cloth with three threads, *de l'étoffe à trois fils;* do you sell these grapes by the pound, *vendez-vous ce raisin à la livre;* this castle is built with lime and cement, *ce château est bâti à chaux et à ciment.*

Observe.—*According to, for, as, with,* and several others, are again sometimes expressed by *à*: as—That hat is not according to her taste, *ce chapeau n'est pas à son goût;* I take you for a, *or* as a witness, *je vous prends à temoin;* to fight with swords, *se battre à l'épée.*

EXERCISE.

They now go in two days from London to Paris, and in two hours
On
from Paris to St. Cloud.—We went from Switzerland to Italy, and
—— *Suisse*
from Italy to Turkey.—The diligence (is only) forty-eight hours
Turquie *n'est que*
in travelling from Paris to the Department of Ille and Vilaine.—
à faire le voyage *Département* — ——

You really pass all your time in going from shop to shop, from
réellement à

street to street, and from place to place.—Can you tell me if (it is far)
il y a loin

from here to the (Regent's Park?)—He made me wait from eight
parc du Régent faire attendre

o'clock (in the) morning, till four in the afternoon; and after all, I
du de après-midi

could not speak to him.—In returning from Mrs. W's house, I called
pouvoir revenir passer

at Mrs. D's, where I found my most intimate friend, whom I had not
trouver intime

seen for ten years.—(When I was going) yesterday to the king's
depuis an en allant

palace, I met Lord S*** who was coming back from the Tower
rencontrer revenir

with his lady and children.—It is in vain for you to* intercede for
dame intercéder

him; I am determined to prosecute him to the utmost, (in order to)
de poursuivre bout afin de

get him transported.—We go out every day from seven in the
faire transporter sortir du

morning till nine; and we study from ten till one, and sometimes till

two.—The inhabitants of that town and the neighbouring villages found
habitant voisin trouver

my equipage so grand, that when I walked out, I had constantly a
équipage sortir toujours

great number of little boys and little girls round me, (crying out:)
petit de fille qui criaient

(" Long live) the king!"—That unfortunate accident happened to me
vive malheureux arriver

about the evening, and it was impossible for* me to get any body
de trouver personne

to help me.—If (it is agreeable to you,) I shall call about one
pour aider vous le trouvez bon

o'clock to arrange that little business.—We expect our ships
pour arranger bâtiment

from the West Indies, about the middle of August, and I shall be
Occidental Indes milieu

very happy to (take you to see them.)—Well, I shall write to you
bien aise de vous les faire voir

about the twelfth, to inform you whether I shall be able to*
pour faire savoir si pouvoir

accept your kind offer.———At what o'clock did you go
charmant proposition

to Mrs. D's yesterday?—I was there about ten or eleven o'clock, but
2 1y
I saw nobody.——There were about two hundred people at the
voir personne *personne*
meeting this morning, in a room of about fifty feet long, and
assemblée *salle* *longueur*
twenty wide.——I think (there will be) about twenty bushels of
largeur *il y aura* *boisseau*
wheat and thirty of corn.—My uncle was about to set out for Paris,
froment *blé* *partir*
when he received a letter from the country which apprised him of
annoncer lui
the death of one of his best friends.——You cannot see the

young ladies now, because some are about their toilet, and the
demoiselle *quelques-unes* *toilette*
others about their work.—What is he about? I really do not know.
autre *ouvrage*
—I was very (sorry I had no) money about me, when I saw
fâché de n'avoir point d'
you the other day; but I had left my purse at home.——
bourse *maison*
(He was questioned) about his means of subsistence, but he could
On le questionna *moyen*
not give any satisfactory answer.—I shall consult Mr. S*** in two
de satisfaisant *consulter*
or three days about this affair, and I mean to speak to him
avoir intention de
about your nephew; therefore, when you come again about that
revenir chercher
money, I shall communicate to you the result of our conversation.—
communiquer *résultat*
Where does he live? Some where about Windsor.—You know
demeurer *Quelque part* *savoir*
that he has travelled all over Africa and America, and that in one of
voyager
his journeys he went over a magnificent (marble bridge,) which
voyage *passer* *pont de marbre*
(crosses) one of the finest rivers in the world, and on which (is)
est bâti sur *il y a*
a noble (golden statue.)—That gentleman is so light and active that he
superbe *statue d'or* *léger et si agile*
can leap over three persons standing, without (hurting himself:) I am
sauter *debout* *se faire de mal*

almost sure he could leap from here over the way.— Have patience,

the operation will soon be over.—Why do you mourn so much over
finir *s'affliger*

the loss of a person who, during her life, never gave you (any thing but)
pendant *causer* *que*

uneasiness.—If you had read the Bible over, you would have seen that
du déplaisir

joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth.—Although the
Quoique

physicians have given her over, I hope she will recover.—We
médecin sub. prete. *abandonner* *se rétablir*

have drawn upon you at three months sight, and we flatter ourselves
tirer *de vue* *se flatter*

that you will honour our demand.—I should have myself called
faire honneur à *passer*

upon you, had I not been obliged to leave Bath so suddenly.——
si [2] [1] *de quitter* *soudainement*

On my part, I shall do all (that is in my power) to induce her to
mon possible *pour engager*

come, being fully persuaded that you will be delighted to hear her
bien persuadé *enchanté de*

play on the harp, for she unites taste and elegance to nobleness of
pincer *car* *réunir* *noblesse*

expression.——After (having) been two days on duty, I was sent upon
avoir

an embassy to the king of Spain; and (on such a solemn occasion,)
roi *Espagne* *dans une occasion si solennelle*

I forgot all my past labours.—You (will hear from me) the first
oublier *passé* *mal* *recevrez de mes nouvelles*

opportunity.—Which is the way to the opera? Take the first
pour aller

street on the right, then the second on the left, and you will see the
puis

(opera-house) before you.—On the news of her arrival, we set out
opéra *partir*

(on horseback) for London, and met her going on foot to the fair.
à cheval *nous* *qui allait* *foire*

—Put your boots on and (we will take a ride out.)—Go on quickly,
allons faire un tour à cheval *vite*

(for fear I should trample upon your feet.)—The Prince will set off
de crainte que je ne vous marche sur les pieds *partir*

in two hours for Richmond.——How long will he be going there?
Combien de tems *à* [2]*aller* [1]*y*

One hour and a* half, (at the most.)—I went there yesterday in one
demi *tout au plus* *y*
hour and* twenty-five minutes.—In autumn and winter I sleep in
coucher en
town in the absence of my friend, but in the spring and summer

I reside in the country.—They drank a glass of wine in honour of the
résider à *On* *boire*
(Queen's birth-day,) but in the state (to which) I was reduced,
jour de naissance de la reine *où*
what could I say?—I (shall be very happy) to render you that
que pouvoir *me ferai un plaisir* *de*
service upon my return from the Continent.—Every one acts after his
retour *chacun* *agir*
own way, and according to his wishes.——My daughter likes to
manière *suivant* *aimer à*
dress (after the French fashion,) and I (after the English style.)—
s'habiller *à la Française* *à l'Anglaise*
Have you any stockings with three threads?—Don't you sell these

grapes by the pound?—The walls of this ancient castle are built with
mur *château* *bâtir*
lime and cement.—I take you as a witness that we shall fight with
se battre
swords; that is not quite after my taste, but (I must submit
épée *tout à fait* *à* *il faut que je m'y*
to it.)
soumette

ARTICLE II.

Of the Place and Repetition of Prepositions.

§. 1.

Of the Place of Prepositions.

General Rule.—Prepositions are always placed in French before the words which they govern, and never after, as is frequently the case in English: as—Whom do you complain of? *de qui vous plaignez-vous,* and not *qui vous plaignez-vous de?* What are you speaking about? *de quoi parlez-vous?* and not *quoi parlez-vous de,* &c. as if it were in English: *of whom do you complain? about what do you speak?*

§. 2.

Of the Repetition of Prepositions.

General Rule.—The Prepositions *à, de, en,* are generally re-

peated in French before every Noun, Pronoun, or Verb in the Infinitive Mood, which they govern, whether they are repeated in English or not: as—You will receive a letter either from him or from me, *vous recevrez une lettre de lui ou de moi;* he was indebted for his life to the clemency and generosity of the conqueror, *il dut la vie à la clémence et à la magnanimité du vainqueur;* the same prejudices are found in Europe, Asia, Africa, and even in America, *on trouve les mêmes préjugés en Europe, en Asie, en Afrique, et jusqu'en Amérique.*

All other Prepositions, and particularly those which have two or several syllables, are repeated when the Substantives which they govern have different meanings, or when they stand in opposition to each other, but never, or at least very seldom, when they are nearly synonymous: as—Your book is in this room or in the other, *votre livre est dans cette chambre ou dans l'autre;* in this example *dans* is repeated, because there is a marked opposition between the two rooms; but in this—*Passer sa vie dans la mollesse et l'oisiveté,* to pass one's life in effeminacy and idleness; *dans* is not repeated, because the Substantives *mollesse* and *oisiveté* are nearly synonymous.

EXERCISE.

Whom did you apply to, when you went to town to* look for a
s'adresser *chercher*

situation? To the person I spoke to you about,* two or three
place *dont* *il y a*

years ago.*—Their house is situated in a delightful spot, which presents
lieu

at once, an idea of the sea, the town, and the country.——That
à la fois

young lady is uncommonly clever; she teaches drawing, singing,
demoiselle *extraordinairement* *habile* *à dessiner*

and dancing.—You will see the same thing in (every country;) in
tous les pays *en*

France, England, and Italy.—I left my gloves, yesterday morning,
laisser *gant*

on my bed or on yours.—They pass all their time in softness and
sur *lit* *mollesse*

idleness in the country, whilst in town they are engaged with their
oisiveté *a* *tandis qu'* *en* *occupé* *à*

French, Italian, and music.—I travelled (a great deal) last year;
voyager *beaucoup* *année*

I went to Poland, Germany, Sweden, and Russia.—I think this
Pologne *Allemagne* *Suède* *Russie* 3

year, I shall visit England, Scotland, and Ireland.—In our tour
4 1 2*aller en* *Ecosse* *Irlande*

through Italy we went to Florence, Venice, and Rome, and returned
en *à*

to London by Geneva and Dover.—Are you not indebted for your
Gênes , *redevable de la*
life to the great attention, and cares of every kind, which she took
espèce
of you during your illness in America?—Young men sacrificed
pendant maladie en Jeunes gens pl. *se sacri-*
themselves formerly for their country or their mistresses; at present
fier autrefois maîtresse
nothing (is done but) for fortune or pleasure.——Our laws never
se fait que loi
condemn any body, without (having) heard him, and examined
condamner personne sans avoir entendre examiner
his conduct. ——How could you, without fear and shame (hold
conduite Comment pouvoir pudeur tenir
such language.)
de tels propos

CHAPTER IX.

OF CONJUNCTIONS AND INTERJECTIONS.

ARTICLE I.

Of Conjunctions.

Conjunctions are used to unite and modify the different parts of speech.

They may be divided into Simple and Compound.

The Simple are those which are composed of a single word: as—*Et, ou, mais, si, car, ni, aussi, or, donc,* &c.

The Compound, on the contrary, consist of several words: as—*A moins que, soit que,* &c.

Observations on the Conjunctions *et, ni, que.*

§. 1.

Et, and.

General Rule.—1. The Conjunction *et* is used to unite two or more words or propositions together, being either all in the affirmative, or one in the affirmative and the other in the negative: as—Virtue and science are estimable, *la vertu et la science sont estimables.*—It bends and does not break, *il plie et ne romp pas.*

2. When several words follow each other in a sentence, the Conjunction *et* is generally placed before the last in French, whether *and* is or is not used in English: as—Wisdom, learning, and virtue are man's true wealth, *l'esprit, la science, et la vertu sont les vrais biens de l'homme.*

3. But if we wish to express any thing with considerable energy and strength, *et* must then be used before every word, even before the first, for the sake of greater emphasis: as—

On égorge à la fois, les enfans, les vieillards,
Et la sœur *et* le frère,
Et la fille *et* la mère,
Le fils dans les bras de son père.

Whilst, on the contrary, if it be required to mark a rapid succession, *et* must be quite left out: as—*Je la vis; je rougis, je pâlis tour-à-tour,* I saw her, and blushed, and turned pale by turns.

4. To speak and write with elegance and taste, *et* must only be used to unite words of the same kind, namely, Substantives with Substantives, Adjectives with Adjectives, Verbs with Verbs, Adverbs with Adverbs, as in these sentences:—Good and bad are often united, *le bien et le mal sont souvent unis;* a prudent and wise king, *un roi sage et prudent;* she likes singing and dancing, *elle aime à chanter et à danser;* for which reason *et* is incorrect in the following sentences uniting Adjectives and Substantives, Verbs and Adjectives together: as—Lewis the IXth was pious, and the father of his people, *Louis neuf était pieux et le père de son peuple;* that young lady is handsome, and does not get married, *cette demoiselle est belle et ne se marie pas.*

§. 2.

Ni, nor, neither.

General Rule.—This Conjunction is used to unite propositions in the negative, and differs from *et* in this respect, that it must always be repeated before every word which it modifies, whether *nor* and *neither* are repeated in English or not: as—Religion is neither terrible, austere, nor cruel, *la religion n'est ni affreuse, ni farouche, ni cruelle.*

§. 3.

Que, that, &c.

General Rule.—The Conjunction *que* is used in French between two Verbs for the Conjunction *that*, either expressed or understood, in English: as—I know she will come, *je sais qu'elle viendra.*

It is likewise used for a great many other Conjunctions, and particularly for the following: *si*, if; *quoique*, though, although; *à fin que, pourque*, in order that; *quand, lorsque*, when; *comme*, as; *puisque*, since; *à moins que*, unless; *avant que*, before; *cependant*, yet; *de peur que*,

lest; *de crainte que*, for fear; *de puis que*, since; *jusqu'à ce que*, till, until, &c.

1. In the middle of a sentence, putting the next Verb in the Indicative or Subjunctive, according as the Conjunction represented by *que* requires: as—If I have not saluted you, it is because I did not know you, *si je ne vous ai pas salué, c'est que je ne vous connaissais pas;* instead of—*c'est parce que je ne vous connaissais pas;* I shall never be satisfied unless I know it, *je ne serai jamais content que je ne le sache;* instead of—*à moins que je ne le sache;* I shall not go thither before he comes, *je n'irai pas qu'il ne vienne;* instead of—*avant qu'il ne vienne;* stay till *or* until he arrives, *attendez qu'il soit arrivé;* instead of—*jusqu'à ce qu'il soit arrivé;* make haste, lest *or* for fear somebody should see you, *dépêchez-vous, que quelqu'un ne vous voie;* instead of—*de crainte que quelqu'un ne vous voie;* come, that I may speak to you, *approchez, que je vous parle;* instead of—*à fin que je vous parle;* covetous men might have all the gold in the world and yet they would not be satisfied, *les avares auraient tout l'or du monde qu'ils en désireraient encore;* instead of—*et cependant ils en désireraient encore,* &c. &c.

2. *Que* is also used in the second part of a sentence instead of repeating the above Conjunctions already employed in the first, placing still the Verb following in the Subjunctive or Indicative, according as the preceding Conjunction requires. In this case the second part of the sentence generally begins by *and* in English, and the Conjunction is understood: as—If you love her and you want to persuade her of it, *si vous l'aimez et que vous vouliez le lui persuader;* instead of—*et si vous voulez le lui persuader;* since he was your friend and you were so much indebted to him, *puisqu'il était votre ami et que vous lui étiez si redevable;* instead of—*et puisque vous lui étiez si redevable;* when we have a disposition and a wish to study we make progress, *quand on a des dispositions et qu'on veut étudier, on fait des progrès;* instead of—*et quand on veut étudier.*

3. The Conjunction *que* is also used in French for *when, but,* or *than,* in the second part of a sentence, when the words *hardly, scarcely, sooner* or *no sooner,* are used in the first: as—Cyrus had scarcely arrived in Crete when he hastened to go to Gnossus,—*or* Cyrus had no sooner arrived in Crete but *or* than he hastened to go to Gnossus, *Cyrus fut à peine arrivé en Crète qu'il se hâta d'aller à Gnossus.*

4. *Que* is likewise used for *how*, coming before an Adjective or a Verb, to express admiration, wonder, or surprise, putting the Adjective following *how* after the Verb in French: as—How unfortunate I am! *que je suis malheureux!* how he likes apples! *qu'il aime les pommes!*

5. *How much, how many,* coming before a Substantive, in the beginning of a sentence, are also expressed by *que,* with *de* before the Substantive: as—How many friends he has! *qu'il a d'amis!*

But if *how much, how many,* are preceded by a Preposition: as—*to how many misfortunes have I not been exposed,* they are then expressed by *combien de* after the Preposition, and not by *que:* as—To how many misfortunes have I not been exposed! *à combien de malheurs n'ai-je pas été exposé!*

6. This sentence—*May I die if I said so!* and all others of the same kind beginning with *may* or any similar expression denoting either a

wish, command, imprecation, or indignation, are expressed in French by *que* in the beginning of the sentence, with the Verb following in the Subjunctive Mood: as—May I die if I said so! *que je meure si je l'ai dit!*

EXERCISE.

Virtue and vice have contrary effects.—Interest, glory, and am-
contraire
bition, are the great motives of our actions.—He has lost
mobile m. [2]*perdre*
(every thing,) wife, children, friends, and fortune.—I saw her; and*
[1]*tout* *voir*
blushed, and* turned pale by turns.——A plain, simple, and natural
rougir *pâlir* *tour-à-tou* *uni*
style is the (only one to be recommended.)—She (is not very fond)
seul recommandable *n'aime pas beaucoup*
of singing and dancing; but she (is very partial) to talking and
à chanter *à danser* *aime beaucoup*
playing.—Good and bad are often blended together in nature.
à jouer *mêler ensemble*
—They neither spared children, women, nor old men.—She has
1 4 [2]*épargner* *vieillard*
neither honour nor decency.—Come here, that I may speak to you
décence
on that subject.—The moment we die, our fate is determined
sur *Au* *que* *sort*
for ever.——You shall not set out before it is light.——Wait
toujours. *partir* *jour* *Attendre*
till (the rain is over.)——(How long is it) since your father
il ne pleuve plus *Combien y a-t-il*
(died?)—A miser (might have) all the gold in the world, yet he
est mort *avare* *aurait*
would not be satisfied.—I shall not take you with me before you
content
have asked her pardon; therefore, you will do better to
sub. prete. *demander* *c'est pourquoi* *d'*
wait till she returns.—As you have had (so many) misfortunes,
sub. prete. *revenir* *tant de* *malheur*
and you cannot pay your debts, you ought to* inform
que *payer* *dette* *devoir* [2]*instruire*
your creditors (of it.)——Since she has so many perfections, and
3 [3]*créancier* [1]*en* *Puisque*
you love her so tenderly, why don't you marry her?——
tendrement. *épouser*

Unless your father pays me half of what he owes me,
A moins que sub., pr. *la moitié ce que devoir*

and gives me security for the remainder, I shall go to law with
sub. pr. *caution reste poursuivre*

him.—Although you possess great riches, and enjoy all the
Quoique sub. pr. *posséder biens* pl. sub. pr. *jouir de*

pleasures of life, you are not happy.—I know he trembles, for fear
vie savoir trembler

his master should come and (send him away.)—Cæsar had hardly
sub. pr. *ne le renvoie était*

entered the senate, when the conspirators fell upon him and
entrer au se jeter sur

murdered him.—The king had no sooner arrived, but he ordered
assassiner faire

(the gardens to be illuminated, and several ballets to be performed.)
illuminer les jardins et exécuter plusieurs ballets

—The orator had hardly ascended the tribune, when all the
était monter à

assembly dispersed.——The ladies had scarcely alighted
assemblée se disperser étaient descendre

from their carriages, when it began to rain (as fast as it
commencer pleuvoir à verse

could pour.)—How unfortunate that man is! he never succeeds in
réussir

any thing.——How much she resembles her mother; and how
aucun ressembler à

many graces she displays already! but of how much adulation
charmes déployer déjà

is she not the victim!——To how many dangers am I not

daily exposed, for the sake of a person who is the
journellement amour fait

curse of my life!—May I die if I (ever mentioned it to him!)
malheur lui en ai jamais parlé

ARTICLE II.

OF INTERJECTIONS.

Interjections are used to express, in one or more words, the sudden emotions of the mind; they are, so to speak, but a singular exclama-

tion, which, however, frequently supplies the place of a whole proposition.

They may be divided and expressed as follows:

1. For grief or affliction :—

French.	English.
Ah!	*Ah!*
Hélas!	*Alas!*
Aïe!	*Ay!*
Ahi!	*Oh!*
Hé!	*O! O dear!*
Ouf!	*Pho!*

2. For joy and desire :—

Ah!	*Ah!*
Bon!	*Well!*
Vive la joie!	*Huzza!*

3. For fear :—

Ah!	*Ah!*
Hé!	*Oh!*

4. For aversion, contempt, and disgust :—

Allez!	*Away!*
Fi!	*Fie!*
Fi donc!	*Fie upon!*

5. For derision :—

Oh!	*Oh!*
Hé! zest!	*Pshaw!*

6. For admiration :—

Oh!	*Oh!*
Ha!	*Hah!*
Eh!	*Oh! Hah!*

7. For surprise :—

Oh!	*Oh!*
Miséricorde!	*Bless me!*
Bon dieu!	*Dear me! O dear!*
O ciel!	*O heavens!*
Ouais!	*Lack-a-day!*

8. For encouraging :—

Allons! çà! ho çà!	*Come on!*
Courage!	*Cheer up!*
Tenez ferme!	*Hold fast!*

9. To warn, and make people get out of the way :—

Gare!	*Clear the way!*
Hem!	*Hem!*

Oh!	*Oh!*
Voyez!,	*Look, look!*
Tenez!	*Lo!*
Ecoutez!	*Hark!*

10. To call :—

Holà!	*Hold!*
Hé!	*Soho!*

11. For silence :—

Chut! Paix!	*Hush!*
St!	*Hist!*

12. For salutation :—

Salut!	*Hail!*
Soyez le bien venu!	*Welcome!*

Observe.—Although *bon, vive la joie, allez, miséricorde, bon Dieu, allons, courage, tenez ferme, voyez, tenez, écoutez, salut, soyez le bien venu, O ciel, paix, tout beau,* be not Interjections of themselves, they become such when they are used to express sudden affections or emotions of the soul; so, also, these words, and several others of the same kind, used in Molière :—*Morbleu!* zounds! *parbleu!* in good faith! *diantre!* the deuce! &c. &c.

Note.—The Interjection *O* has not been specifically mentioned among the above, being seldom used but in conjunction with a Substantive, to express certain passions and emotions of the soul: as—*O siècle! O tems! O mœurs! O volupté suprême! O mon fils!* &c.

CHAPTER X.

OF THE FRENCH IDIOMS.

ARTICLE I.

Cases in which the different Tenses of to be *are expressed in French by those of* avoir.

General Rule.—1. When any Tense of the Verb *to be* comes before the Adjectives *hungry, dry, thirsty, hot, cold, ashamed, afraid,* it is expressed in French by the corresponding Tense of the Verb *avoir*, and the Adjectives *hungry, dry, thirsty, hot, ashamed, afraid,* are construed by the Substantives *faim, soif, chaud, froid, honte, peur,* as—I am thirsty, *j'ai soif;* he is hungry, *il a faim;* are you cold? *avez-vous froid?* no, I am very hot, *non, j'ai bien chaud;* she was ashamed, *elle avait honte;* were you afraid? *aviez-vous peur?*—as if it were in English: *I have thirst, he has hunger, have you cold?* &c.

If we wish to express that any particular part of the body is

affected with cold or heat, as—*My hands are cold, his feet are very hot,* we must then use the Verb *avoir* in the same Person as the Possessive Pronoun preceding the part of the body mentioned is in English, putting the compound article *au, aux,* or *à la, à l',* before the part of the body alluded to, as—My hands are cold, *j'ai froid aux mains;* his feet are very hot, *il a bien chaud aux pieds;* as if it were in English, *I have cold to the hands, he has very hot to the feet.*

2. When a Tense of the Verb *to be* comes before these expressions, *in the right, in the wrong,* it is also construed by the corresponding Tense of *avoir,* and *in the right* by the Substantive *raison, in the wrong* by *tort,* as—He is in the right, *il a raison;* she is not in the wrong, *elle n'a pas tort.*

3. When any Tense of the Verb *to be* is used in mentioning a person's age, it is expressed in French by the corresponding Tense of *avoir,* putting the Substantive *an* or *ans* after the number mentioned, although *year* be frequently understood in English; and if the Adjective *old* be used in English, omitting it in French: as—My sister will be twenty, or twenty years old, next Christmas, *ma sœur aura vingt ans à noël prochain,* and not *sera vingt ans.*

If the age of any person or animal be asked, the Verb *to be* is still expressed by the corresponding Tense of *avoir,* but *old* is then construed by *âge,* and *how* by *quel:* as—How old is your sister? *quel âge a votre sœur.*

4. When any Tense of the Verb *to be* is used in speaking of the dimension of any thing, it is expressed in French by the corresponding Tense of *avoir,* always putting *de* before the word which expresses either the length, height, depth, breadth, or any other dimension of the object mentioned: as—This church is forty feet high, *cette église a quarante pieds de hauteur,* and not *est quarante pieds.*

But if the dimension of any thing be mentioned without using the Verb *to be, de* must likewise be put before the Noun of Number preceding the words of measure, such as feet, inches, or any other of the same kind: as—A well forty feet deep, *un puits de quarante pieds de profondeur,* and not *un puits quarante pieds,* &c. I have a table twenty feet three inches long, *j'ai une table de vingt pieds*† *trois pouces de longueur,* and not *une table vingt pieds,* &c.

Observe.—The Adjectives used in English to express the different dimensions may also be expressed in French by the corresponding Adjectives, but the Substantives are always more elegantly used, and in any case *deep* must always be expressed by *de profondeur,* and never by *de profond.*

5. When any Tense of the Verb *to be* comes before this expression, *in vain for,* having for Nominative the Pronoun *it* used indeterminately, as—*It is in vain for you to repeat it; it will be in vain for him to go there;* the Verb *to be* with *in vain for* is sometimes expressed by the Verb *avoir beau,* which is put in the same Tense in French in which *to be* is in English, using the Noun or Pronoun following *in vain for* as the Nominative of the Verb *avoir,* and putting the next Verb in the Present of the Infinitive, without any Preposition, and without ever expressing the Pronoun *it* which precedes the Verb *to be:* as—It is in vain for you to

† *De* must not be repeated in French before the succeeding numbers preceding a fraction of the principal measure before mentioned: thus you could not say —*J'ai une table de vingt pieds,* de *trois pouces,* &c.

repeat it, *vous avez beau le répéter*, as if it were in English, *you have fine to repeat it;* sometimes also the above expression *in vain for* is expressed by *inutile*, and the Verb *to be*, by the corresponding Tense of *être* in French, with the Pronoun *il* taken indeterminately for Nominative, in the sense of *it* in English; in which case the Noun or Pronoun following *in vain for*, becomes the object of *être*, and the succeeding Verb is placed in the Present of the Infinitive, preceded by *de:* as—It will be in vain for him to go there, *il lui sera inutile d'y aller*.

EXERCISE.

I was so hungry and thirsty yesterday that I did not know
grand' si grand'

how (to quench my thirst) and satisfy my appetite.—She was
faire pour me désaltérer

ashamed to say that she was hot, and (having imprudently sat) in
de s'étant imprudemment assise

a draught, she caught cold and died (from it) within ten
courant d'air prendre le rhume mourir en [3] *après* [1]

days.—Are you afraid of me, that you will not speak to me? I am
[2]

not afraid of you, but I do not like to speak to strangers.—Are
aimer à étranger

your feet cold? No, my feet are not very cold, because I have

walked fast, but my hands are so cold that I cannot make
marcher vîte tailler

my pen.—It is in vain for you (to remonstrate with her,) she will never
lui faire des remontrances

allow that she is in the wrong, although she is fully
convenir sub. pr. *quoiqu'* sub. pr. *pleinement*

convinced that she is not in the right.—How old are your sisters? My
convaincu

eldest sister was twenty-five years old last month, and the youngest
dernier

will be fifteen next Christmas.—This room is a hundred feet
à prochain Noël

long, by fifty-five wide, and twenty high.——The steeple
longueur sur largeur hauteur

of that church is four hundred and twenty-five feet seven inches
pied pouce

high, and one hundred and thirteen in diameter.—There is a mine
de diamètre

in Peru fifteen or sixteen hundred feet deep, and a mountain
le Pérou profondeur

three thousand feet high and one thousand in circumference.—It is
de circonférence

in vain for him (to try) to obtain that employment, he will
faire ses efforts pour obtenir charge

never succeed, as he is not (duly qualified.)——Tell her
réussir parce qu' capable de la remplir

it would be in vain for* her to write to them in the country, as they
inutile à

set out to-morrow morning for the Continent, where they intend
partir où avoir intention de

remaining all the summer.
passer

ARTICLE II.

Cases in which the different Tenses of the Verb to be *are expressed in French by the corresponding ones of the Impersonal* y avoir.

General Rule.—1. When the different Tenses of the Verb *to be* are preceded by the Adverb *there*, they are expressed in French by the corresponding ones of the Impersonal Verb *y avoir*, which must always be put in the Third Person Singular, whether the Singular or Plural is used in English, as—There were many people, *Il y avait bien du monde;* were there many ladies? *y avait-il bien des dames?*

2. If any Tense of the Verb *to be* is used in speaking of the distance of one place to another in affirmative or negative sentences, as—*Windsor is twenty miles distant from London,* it is also expressed in French by the corresponding Tense of *y avoir,* although *there* is not used in English, as—Windsor is twenty miles from London, *il y a vingt milles de Windsor à Londres;* placing first, the Verb—second, the number followed by the word expressing the distance—third, the Preposition *de* before the first of the places mentioned, and *à* before the second, omitting the Adjective *distant,* if used in English.

3. The word *some,* coming before a Substantive Plural and a Tense of either *to be,* or of any other Verb, is expressed in French by *des,* which must be preceded by a Tense of the Impersonal Verb *y avoir,* using, before the succeeding Verb, one of the Relatives *qui* or *que,* &c. according as the Substantive going before is its Nominative or object: as—Some people think it is dangerous to go there, *il y a des personnes qui croient qu'il est dangereux d'y aller;* as if it were in English: *there are some people who think,* &c.

4. The Demonstrative Adjectives *these, those,* coming before a Noun of Number followed by the words, *years, months, weeks, days,* &c. to express how long it is since an event or circumstance before mentioned took place or happened: as—*she has been talking these two hours; he has been dead these twenty years,* are expressed in French by the Third Person Singular of the different Tenses of *y avoir,* putting

the Verb preceding *these* or *those*, in the Present of the Indicative, if the thing mentioned is still existing, and in the Preterite Indefinite if it is past, with *que* before it in any case: as—She has been talking these two hours, *il y a deux heures qu'elle parle;* he has been dead these twenty years, *il y a vingt ans qu'il est mort;* as if it were in English: *there is two hours that she talks; there is twenty years that he is dead.*

5. *How far*, used to ask the distance from one place to another, is expressed in French by *combien*, construing as before any Tense of the Verb *to be* which may be used, by the corresponding one of the Impersonal Verb *y avoir* in the Third Person Singular interrogatively used, if the sentence begins by *how far*, but affirmatively or negatively if it does not, placing, in any case, the Preposition *de* before the first place mentioned, and *à* before the second: as—How far is Calais from Paris? *combien y a-t-il de Calais à Paris?*

6. *How many*, placed before a Substantive Plural and a Tense of the Verb *to be*, to ask the number of any thing, is, likewise, expressed in French by *combien*, construing still the different Tenses of the Verb *to be* which may be used, by the corresponding ones of the Impersonal Verb *y avoir*, in the Third Person Singular interrogatively used, if the sentence begins by *how many*, but affirmatively or negatively if it begins by some other expression, with the Preposition *de*, in any case, before the Substantive in question: as—How many people were there? *combien de personnes y avait-il?* do you know how many miles there are? *savez-vous combien il y a de milles?* &c. But if the thing of which the number is required to be ascertained is understood, *en* must then be used between *y* and *avoir:* as—How many dozens were there? *combien y en avait-il de douzaines?*

7. *How long*, used to ask the time since any thing happened, is also expressed in French by *combien*, with the Impersonal Verb *y avoir*, in the Third Person Singular interrogatively used, if the sentence begins by *how long*, but affirmatively or negatively if it does not, and placed, in any case, in the same Tense in French in which the Verb *to have* or *to be* is in English, with *que* after, and the next Verb in the Present of the Indicative, if the thing in question is still existing, but in the Preterite Indefinite if it is past: as—How long has he been reading? *combien y a-t-il qu'il lit?* how long has the peace been made? *combien y a-t-il que la paix est faite?* 1. *Combien;* 2. the Verb *y avoir;* 3. *que;* 4. the Substantive or Pronoun; 5. the second Verb; 6. the remainder, as in English.

8. These expressions:—*Some days since, a week ago, a fortnight since, a month since,* and all similar ones, must be expressed in French by the Impersonal Verb *y avoir:* as—Some days since, *il y a quelques jours;* a week ago, *il y a une semaine;* a fortnight since, *il y a une quinzaine;* a month since, *il y a un mois,* &c.; as if it were in English:—*There is some days, there is a week, a fortnight, a month,* &c. &c.

EXERCISE.

There were so many people (in the) Park last Sunday, that you
tant de monde au *on*

could hardly move.——Were there many carriages? I should
pouvait à peine se remuer voiture
think there were at least, three or four hundred, and more than a
croire au moins
thousand gentlemen on horseback.——Have you been (to
à cheval aux
Kensington Gardens)? No.——You ought to* go; you would
Jardins de Kensington devoir y
see there several of the nobility, and some of the finest and
voir y quelques-unes
most fashionable ladies in England.——Some people are deceitful,
élégant d' gens pl. *trompeur*
and try to injure you as much as they can.——I
qui tâcher nuire autant que pouvoir
have been in business for* these fifteen years, and my father
affaires pl. *y*
had been for* forty years before; therefore, I am so well
c'est pourquoi
known that I do not care (what people may) say about
connaître se soucier de ce qu'on peut de
me.——How is Mrs. B***? I do not know; I have not
se porter
seen her these three months.——How long has she been married?
marier
These thirty years.——How many children has she? Four; two
sons and two daughters; and her eldest daughter has been married
aîné
these six years.—How far is it from Paris to Florence, and from
Florence to Rome? I do not know (exactly.)——Having
au juste
been all over England, can you tell me how far it is from
voyager 2 1*par*
London to Plymouth? A very long distance, madam; nearly
grand presque
three hundred miles.—How many inhabitants are there in London?
(There may be) ten or twelve hundred thousand.—Do you know
Il peut y en avoir savoir
how many members there are in the House of Commons
Chambre des Communes pl.
and in that of the Lords? There are five hundred in (the)
celle des

Commons, but I (am totally ignorant) how many there are in the
ignore totalement

Lords.——How many bags of corn were there in the last
sac

ship that arrived from France? Three thousand two hun-
bâtiment

dred and twenty-three.——Some years ago I was at

(Epsom Races,) where I witnessed a very melancholy accident
Courses pl. *d'Epsom être temoin d' fâcheux*

that happened to one of the spectators; he was unfortunately
arriver malheureusement

thrown from his gig, and (his head was so much
renverser cabriolet il se froissa tellement

bruised) that he died in an hour.—A friend of mine
la tête en tombant

received a letter from the country, (a week or a fortnight ago) by
il y a huit ou quinze jours dans

which (he was informed) that, although the rain had been very
on lui mandait bien que sub. pl.

abundant, it had not yet done any injury to the corn.—It is not a
de tort

month since you asked me to lend you fifty pounds; how
que prier de comment

can you come again (to make) a like demand, when you
pouvoir me faire pareil demande puisque

know that your father (has ordered me not) to give you any
m'a défendu de

money.—Mr. P*** died about two months ago (from the) cut of a*
environ d'un coup

sabre which he received on his head in a (scuffle) with a
sabre la combat qu'il eut

gang of thieves who attacked him, last winter, at ten o'clock
bande voleur attaquer hiver

(at night,) on the Dover-road.
du soir [4]*de Douvres* [1]*route*

ARTICLE III.

To be construed by *faire, se porter, en être,* &c.

§. 1.

Cases in which the different Tenses of the Verb to be *are expressed in French by the corresponding ones of* faire.

General Rule.—Whenever the Verb *to be* is used impersonally in the Third Person Singular of its different Tenses, in speaking of the different kinds of weather: as—*It is fine weather, it will be bad weather,* &c. *it is, it was, it will be,* &c. are expressed in French by the corresponding Persons Singular of the different Tenses of the Verb *faire,* with the Pronoun *il* taken indeterminately for Nominative, as—*Il fait, il faisait, il fera,* &c. in which case, *faire* is likewise employed impersonally, Ex.—It is fine weather, *il fait beau tems;* it will be bad weather, *il fera mauvais tems;* as if it were in English, *it makes fine weather, it will make bad weather.*

But if any Tense of the Verb *to be* have one of the words *weather, day, night,* &c. for Nominative, instead of being preceded by the Pronoun *it* used indeterminately, as—*The weather is very fine;* in this case the different Tenses of *être,* and not those of *faire* must be used in French: as—The weather is very fine, *le tems est très-beau,* and not *le tems fait très-beau.*

§. 2.

Cases in which the different Tenses of the Verbs to be *and* to do *are expressed in French by the corresponding ones of the Verb* se porter.

General Rule.—Whenever the different Tenses of the Verbs *to be* and *to do* are used to speak of or inquire about the health of any body, they are expressed in French by the corresponding ones of the reflected Verb *se porter:* as—How is Miss A...., *comment se porte Mlle A....?* she is not very well, *elle ne se porte pas très-bien.*

§. 3.

Cases in which the different Tenses of to be *followed by* with *are expressed in French by the corresponding ones of* être *preceded by* en *and followed by* de.

GENERAL RULE.—Whenever the Third Persons Singular of the different Tenses of *to be* are used impersonally with the Preposition *with*, as—*It is with, it will be with, it has been with*, &c., they are rendered in French by the Third Persons Singular of the corresponding Tenses of *être* likewise used impersonally, with *en* immediately before, that is, between the Pronoun *il* and the Verb, and *de* after, or if an article is also required, *du, de la, de l', or des*, as—It is with, *il en est de;* it will be with, *il en sera de;* it has been with, *il en a été de*, &c. &c.: ex.—It will be with him as with others, *il en sera de lui comme des autres.*

EXERCISE.

It is very fine weather this morning, but I am afraid it will rain
craindre sub. pr.

again before the evening.—How inconstant the weather has been all
Que

the summer; we have not had a single week of continued fine weather.
seul semaine continuel

—Do you think it will be dry to-morrow?—If the weather is not
sub. pr. *sec*

damp and the roads are not too dirty, we shall go into
humide que chemin sub. pr. *trop crotté à*

the country together.—It is very cold this morning, yet I do
ensemble cependant

not think it is quite so cold as it was yesterday and
croire, sub. pr. *tout-à-fait*

(the day before.)—No; it was terribly cold (the day before yesterday,)
avant-hier avant-hier

and even all last week.—What a* severe winter we have had!—
rigoureux hiver

I hope it will be fine this summer to indemnify us for this disagreeable
pour dédommager de vilain

weather.—The atmosphere is so changeable in this country that it is
atmosphère variable

sometimes the most (delightful weather) in* the morning, and,
beau tems du monde

two hours after, it is close, dark, and rainy.——Such
un tems lourd sombre pluvieux

is always the case in low countries, where the vapours arising from
bas pays qui s'élèvent

the marshes depress the air, and produce a kind of fog
marais épaissir produire espèce brouillard

which is very injurious to the health.—The days begin to
préjudiciable à

(shorten very much,) it is dark at seven o'clock.———
décroître rapidement nuit

How unpleasant it is (walking) when the pavement is so greasy and
mauvais faire marcher pavé gras

slippery.—If it be (day-light) we shall certainly set out at
si glissant jour certainement partir

four o'clock, that we* may get to the ship by eight.
afin de pouvoir arriver vaisseau à

—(How is the weather) to-day? I do not know, I have not been out.
Quel tems fait-il sortir

—The weather has been so unsettled for a month, that I am afraid
variable depuis craindre

we shall have no change before the new moon.—When
sub. pr. *changement nouveau lune Lorsque*

we were in town, last week, it was very bad weather, now we
maintenant que

are in the country it is very fine, and I am almost sure that if we
à sûr

(were to return) to town, it would be bad weather again.—How do
retournions 2 3 1*encore*

you do this morning? Very well, I thank you; and how is your

father and mother? They are (pretty well.)—Is Miss A * * * better?
passablement

No; she is still very poorly, and I begin to fear that she
toujours indisposée craindre

will never recover.—Have you seen your cousins lately?
sub. pr. *se rétablir depuis peu*

How are they all*? Not very well, sir; Miss I * * * has a very

(bad head-ache,) and her sister is still lame; I really
grand mal de tête encore boiteux réellement

think it will be with them as it has been with the Misses W * * *, for
des

they are so obstinate that they will take nothing.—Well!
opiniâtre vouloir

(did I not tell you) it would be with you as it has been with your
ne vous ai-je pas dit

sister? she *would* not follow my advice, and she has been
vouloir
(confined to) her bed, for two months.
obligée de garder le *pendant*

ARTICLE IV.

Cases in which the different Tenses of the Verb to be *preceded by* it *are expressed in French by* il est, il était, il sera, *&c. and* c'est, c'était, ce sera, *&c.*

General Rule.—1. Whenever any Tense of the Verb *to be* preceded by the Pronoun *it* taken indeterminately comes before an Adjective or a Participle, without any reference to any thing mentioned before, but with relation to something following, as—*It is difficult to do that; it is unfortunate that he has not succeeded,* &c. *it is, it was, it will be,* &c. are expressed in French by the Third Persons Singular of the corresponding Tenses of *être* used impersonally, with the Pronoun *il* taken indeterminately for antecedent: as—It is difficult to do that, *il est difficile de faire cela;* it is unfortunate that he has not succeeded, *il est malheureux qu'il n'ait pas réussi.*

But if *it is, it was, it will be, &c.* refer to something mentioned before, affirming or denying any thing of it: as—*It is very bad, it is very consoling*, meaning that what has been said or done is very bad or very consoling; *it is, it was, it will be,* &c. are then expressed by the Third Persons Singular of *être* preceded by *ce* or *c'*, before the Adjective or Participle, thus—*C'est, c'était, ce fut, ce sera, ce serait,* &c. according to the different Tenses in which *it is, it was, it will be,* &c. are in English, in which case the Verb always forms a complete sense with the Adjective or Participle following, whilst, in the preceding, the sense always leaves something to be expressed after: as—It is very bad, *c'est bien mal;* it is very consoling, *c'est bien consolant.*

2. *It is, it was, it will be,* &c. are likewise expressed by *c'est, c'était, ce fut,* &c. when they come before the Indefinite article *un, une,* or before any of the Cardinal numbers, *un, deux, trois,* &c. as also before the Ordinal, if they are preceded by the definite Article, as—*Le premier, le second,* &c. So, also, before a Substantive, a Pronoun, a Verb in the Present of the Infinitive, or the Prepositions *à, pour,* and a few others: as—It is a man, *c'est un homme;* it is the first time, *c'est la première fois;* it is Miss such an one, *c'est mademoiselle une telle;* it is I, *c'est moi;* it is he, *c'est lui;* it was you, *c'était vous;* it would be encouraging vice, *ce serait autoriser le vice;* it is not his, *ce n'est pas à lui;* is it for me? *est-ce pour moi?* &c. &c. and not *il est un homme, il est la première fois,* &c. &c.

3. If *it is, it was, it will be,* &c. come before the Substantive *time,* or before a Noun of number followed by the words *hour, o'clock, minute,* &c. they are then always expressed by *il est, il était, il fut,* &c. when we wish to express the time to do any thing, or merely what hour

it is: as—It is time to set out, *il est tems de partir*; it is four o'clock, *il est quatre heures.*—But if we intend to express that such or such a thing took or will take place at such an hour, *it is, it was,* &c. are then expressed by *c'est, c'était, ce fut,* &c.—Ex. It was at six o'clock, *c'était à six heures*; it will be for seven o'clock, *ce sera pour sept heures.*

Observe. —1. When *it is, it was, it will be,* &c. are used either affirmatively or negatively, and are followed by either a Substantive or a Demonstrative Adjective in the Plural, not preceded by any Preposition, as likewise by the Pronoun *they, (eux, elles,) ce sont* must then be employed instead of *c'est*—*c'étaient* instead of *c'était,* and so on, using the Third Person Plural of the different Tenses of *être,* preceded by *ce* or *c'* instead of the Third Person Singular: as—It was they who said so, *c'étaient eux qui le dirent,* and not *c'était,* &c.; it will be the kingdoms of France and England, *ce seront les royaumes de France et d'Angleterre,* and not *ce sera,* &c. But should the Substantive or Demonstrative Adjective be preceded by any Preposition; or should *it is, it was,* &c. come before any other Personal Pronoun than *they, (eux* or *elles,)* then *c'est, c'était, ce fut,* &c. must always be used, and not *ce sont, c'étaient,* &c. Ex.—It will be to those men I shall give it, *ce sera à ces hommes que je le donnerai,* and not *ce seront;* it is to them I speak, *c'est à eux que je parle,* and not *ce sont;* it was to you, *c'était à vous,* and not *c'étaient,* &c.

2. If *it is, it was, it will be,* &c. were used interrogatively, followed by the Pronoun *they,* as—*Is it they who . . . ? will it be they who . . . ? être* must then be used in the Third Person Singular of its different Tenses, although immediately followed by *eux* or *elles,* except, however, in the Imperfect and Conditional Present or Past, in which Tenses the Plural is always used, as—Is it they who . . . ? *Est-ce eux qui . . . ?* and not *sont-ce eux qui . . . ?* will it be they who . . . ? *sera-ce eux* or *elles qui . . . ?* and not, *seront-ce eux* or *elles qui . . . ?* But we say: *étaient-ce eux* or *elles?* was it they? *seraient-ce eux* or *elles?* would it be they . . . ? *auraient-ce été eux* or *elles?* would it have been they . . . ? and not, *était-ce, serait-ce,* &c. &c.

But if *it is, it was, it will be,* &c. used interrogatively, be followed by a Substantive Plural, instead of the Pronoun *they;* then *être* ought always to be used in the Third Person Plural of its different Tenses, except in the Preterite: as—Is it the honours which have been bestowed upon him that . . . *sont-ce les honneurs auxquels il a été élevé qui . . . .* &c. &c.

EXERCISE.

It is very uncertain whether I shall return to-morrow or next
incertain *revenir* *prochain*
week; therefore, if (it were not inconvenient to you,) I should
c'est pourquoi *cela ne vous incommodait pas*
thank you to take that money for me at my banker's.——Would
prier *de porter* *chez* *banquier*
it not be advisable to write to her (not to) send her son to France,
expédient de *de ne pas* *en*

as every communication with that country has been finally
tout *finalement*
suspended? —— It is certainly a very good thought; it
interdire *pensée*
(never occurred to me,) and may save her a great deal
ne m'était point venue *pouvoir épargner lui*
of trouble and expense.—Have you (heard) of the dreadful
peine *de dépense* *entendu parler* *horrible*
murder of Mr. W****; yes, it makes one* shudder with horror.—
meurtre *cela* *frissonner d'*
It is shocking that men (should give themselves up) to such desperate
affreux *s'abandonnent* *si* *barbare*
and inhuman actions.—Oh, heavens! what horror! what infamy!
si inhumain *O* *ciel*
Nothing but the thirst of gold and a life inured to wickedness, crime,
que *soif* *l'or* *endurcir dans méchanceté*
and irreligion, can prompt a reasonable being to (the perpetration
pouvoir porter *être* *à commettre*
of) a crime so revolting to human nature.—It was a very young lady
revoltant *fort jeune demoiselle*
who brought me the information, and the amiable child fainted
²apporter ¹m'en *nouvelle* *enfant s'évanouir*
in pronouncing the name of the unfortunate victim.—Was it not Mrs.
infortuné
N*** who scolded you so much at the review the other day? No, it
gronder *tant* *revue*
was her sister, who was (in a terrible passion) against me, because I
terriblement en colère
had said she danced like a country girl.—Is it the first time
qu'
you have seen her? No, I have accompanied her once before
auparavant
to Tivoli.—Mr. L*** (was) here this morning, and he desired me
est venu *a chargé*
to tell you that it is the second time he has called for his
de *le montant de*
little account. Well! tell him if he comes again that I will pay
mémoire *revenir*
him on* Wednesday next.——Is it you who mentioned it first?
parler *en*
No, it was she.—If it were my turn, I should be delighted to be
tour *charmé* *d'*
of the party.—— (Is this) for me or you? No, it is for neither
partie *Ceci est-il*

of us; it is for Mr. S's sister.—(If that man were not to be
*²de M. S*** ¹ Si l'on ne réprimandait pas*

reprimanded) for his infamous behaviour, it would be (encouraging)
cet homme sur infâme conduite autoriser

vice.—I think it is jealousy that makes you hold that language.—
croire jalousie faire tenir

What o'clock is it? It is eleven o'clock. Is it really so late?
tard

Yes. In that case I must leave you directly, for
il faut que sub. pr. *quitter de*

fear I should not be able to get in.—(Come,)
crainte que sub. im. *pouvoir entrer chez moi Allons*

gentlemen, awake, it is time to get up; it is almost eight
s'éveiller de se lever

o'clock. Eight o'clock! it is impossible; (it is only) three hours
il n'y a que

since we (went to bed.)——I saw Mr. D*** this afternoon,
que sommes au lit après-midi f

and inquired of* him at what o'clock the concert would begin;
ai demandé

he informed me it would be at nine or ten o'clock.—Was it
a dit que

not at twelve o'clock you came on Saturday? No, it was
midi que

about two in the afternoon.—It is not those who speak much
sur les de

that are the most esteemed.—It is the French and the Russians
Russe

who have begun this shameful and disgraceful war; but it is not
honteux déshonorable

they who will have the honour of finishing it.—Was it not to them I
que

lent that money?—It is for her to command, and for you to obey.—
à à d'

It is to him I speak.—Was it not they who saved your life
que ²sauver ¹vous

when your house was on fire? No, it was their neighbours, who
en

knocked (as hard as they could) at my door to awaken me, when
frapper de toute leur force pour éveiller lorsque

I was half stifled by the smoke.——Should it be they who
à demi étouffer par fumée

receive the money from the (Insurance Office)? No, it is
bureau d'assurance

Messrs. Stewart and Co.—Is it the honours (so unjustly bestowed
Cnie. *auxquels il a été si*
upon him) which render him so proud (as to) despise us?
injustement élevé *fier et le font mépriser*

ARTICLE V.

Avoir mal—*a, au, à la, à l', aux.*

General Rule.—We make use in French of the different Tenses of the Verb *avoir mal,* in speaking of any illness or indisposition of the body or mind, whatever may be the Verb used in English, with the Compound Article *au, aux,* or *à la, à l',* before the part affected with pain, instead of the Possessive *my, thy, his, her, our, your, their,* used in English, as—I have the head-ache, *j'ai mal à la tête;* she has the tooth-ache, *elle a mal aux dents;* I feel a pain in my side, *j'ai mal au côté;* I had a bad leg, *j'avais mal à la jambe;* he had a sore foot, *il avait mal au pied;* as if it were in English, *I have ill to the head; she has ill to the teeth,* &c. &c.

If the part of the body affected with pain be preceded by a Demonstrative Pronoun, as—*I feel a very bad pain in this arm,* the Preposition *à* should then be used before the Demonstrative instead of *au, aux,* or *à la, à l':* as—I feel a very bad pain in this arm, *j'ai grand mal à ce bras;* and not, *au ce bras.*

Note.—If the sentence be made with a Tense of the Verb *to be,* as—*My lips are sore,* the Verb *avoir mal* must then be put in the same Person in French as the Possessive Pronoun preceding the part of the body mentioned is in English, using the Compound Article *au, aux,* or *à la, à l'* before the part of the body alluded to, instead of the Possessive Pronoun employed in English, as—My lips are sore, *j'ai mal aux lèvres,* in which sentence *j'ai* is in the First Person Singular, because *my* preceding *lips* in English is of the First Person Singular.

EXERCISE.

I feel much pain in my eyes, arms, and
grand
side.——(What is the matter with) Miss H***? She
Qu' a
has a violent sore throat, and a great oppression on
mal de gorge *oppression de*
her* chest.——My lips are so sore that I can
poitrine *lèvre* *pouvoir*
hardly move them.—When I was young, I had often the head-
à peine remuer
ache; now I am old, my legs are so bad that I
maintenant que *grand mal*
cannot stand.——You (don't know) how painful my
se tenir debout *ne sauriez croire combien mon*

finger is;) I have done (every thing I could) to cure it,
doigt me fait mal *tout ce que j'ai pu* *pour guérir*
without any success; however, the doctor says I must
avoir pu réussir *cependant* *médecin*
go (to the sea-side,) and try whether sea-bathing
sub. pr. *dans quelque port de mer* *pour essayer* *si* *bain de mer*
will not afford me some relief.
faire *bien*

ARTICLE VI.

Of the Verb must, *expressed in French by the Third Person Singular of the different Tenses of* falloir *impersonally used, as*—Il faut, il fallait, *&c.*

General Rule.—1. The Verb *must* is generally expressed in French by the Third Person Singular of the different Tenses of the Impersonal *falloir*, preceded by the Pronoun *il* indeterminately used, and followed by *que:* as—*Il faut que, il fallait que, il faudra que,* &c. according to the Tense in which *must* is in English, giving its Nominative, whether Noun or Pronoun, for that of the following Verb which is put in the Subjunctive Mood: as—I must go out, *il faut que je sorte;* she must do that, *il faut qu'elle fasse cela;* they must pay, *il faut qu'ils paient;* as if it were in English, *it must that I go out, it must that she does that,* &c.

If the Nominative of *must* be taken in an indeterminate and general manner, as—*We must be prudent, children must be instructed,* then *must* is more elegantly expressed by *il faut, il fallait, il faudra,* &c. without *que,* putting the next Verb in the Present of the Infinitive instead of the Subjunctive, and placing the Nominative of *must,* if a Substantive, after the following Verb, but omitting it, if one of the Pronouns *we* or *they:* as—We must be prudent, *il faut être prudent;* children must be instructed, *il faut instruire les enfans.*

2. Whenever *must* is used before *have,* or when the Verb *want* is used to express that we are in want of something which we must have, as—*I must have some gloves; your brother must have a hat; I want a coat;* the Verb *must* with *have,* as also *want,* are then elegantly expressed in French by the different Tenses of *falloir* used impersonally as above, placing (when the Nominative of *must* is one of the Personal Pronouns *I, thou, he, she, we, you, they,*) one of the Conjunctive *me, te, lui, nous, vous, leur,* instead, between *il* and *falloir,* with the thing wanted after *falloir;* but if the Nominative of *must* or *want* be a Substantive, as—*Your brother must have a hat,* the Substantive is then placed at the end of the sentence after the thing wanted, preceded by *à:* as—I must have some gloves, *il me faut des*

gants; your brother must have a hat, *il faut un chapeau à votre frère;* I want a coat, *il me faut un habit;* as if it were in English, *it to me must some gloves; it must a hat to your brother; it to me must a coat,* &c.

Observe.—The Verbs, *to be necessary, requisite,* or similar ones, when used impersonally, are also generally expressed by the Third Person Singular of the different Tenses of *falloir,* sometimes without *que* after, leaving out the Preposition *for* which follows, and placing its object, if a Personal Pronoun, between *il* and *falloir,* with the next Verb in the Present of the Infinitive; sometimes also using *que* after *falloir,* with the Personal Pronoun object of *for,* as the Nominative of the next Verb which is then put in the Subjunctive Mood: as—It will be necessary for you to go there, *il vous faudra y aller,* or *il faudra que vous y alliez.* But if the object of *for* be a Substantive, it is always used as the Nominative of the next Verb which is put in the Subjunctive, and *que* is always employed after *falloir:* as—It is necessary for your brother to speak to him, *il faut que votre frère lui parle.*

The above Verbs may also be expressed by *être nécessaire,* requiring then *de* before the next Verb, if in the Infinitive Mood, and *que* if in the Subjunctive.

Note.—When *falloir* is not used in the Subjunctive Mood, it generally begins the sentence, as may be seen in the above examples; but if a sentence end in English as follows—*You do not behave as you ought; that is not as it ought to be,* or *as it should be,* &c.—these expressions—*You ought, it ought to be, it should be,* or similar ones, are then expressed in French by *il faut, il fallait,* &c. at the end of the sentence: as—You do not behave as you ought, *vous ne vous conduisez pas comme il faut;* that is not as it should be, *cela n'est pas comme il faut.*

EXERCISE.

Your sister must come and* look for* her book herself,
sub. pr. *chercher*

because I do not know where it is.—You must write to them
où

immediately, and inform them of the arrival of the Louisa,
tout de suite *arrivée* *Louise*

which brought us the melancholy intelligence of that
triste *nouvelle*

unfortunate bankruptcy.——A woman must be very
malheureux *banqueroute* sub. pr.

circumspect when speaking of herself.——My sisters are in the
en *à*

country; you must go there, if you wish to* see them.—
sub. pr. *y* *vouloir*

We sold our horse last week; we must buy another on
sub. pr. *acheter* *à*

the first opportunity.——I suppose it will be necessary to go
occasion

to Bath, to stop the payment of that bill.——Do you
arrêter *billet*

think it will be necessary to send a letter to Mr. N*** ?——
sub. pr. *d'*

We must be very cautious, and, (at the) same time, very atten-
prudent *en*

tive (to business,) (in order to) succeed in the world.
aux affaires pl. *pour* *réussir*

—Young men must be encouraged, and the old assisted.
Jeunes gens pl. *encourager* *vieillard* *assister*

——I must have a new coat, and my brother must have a

pair of boots, and two or three pair of shoes.——You must
paire *botte* *soulier*

have a pair of black gloves to attend the funeral, and
noir *gant* *pour* *assister à* *enterrement*

a pair of white for the Opera.—I do not believe it will
croire sub. pr.

be necessary for them to come before the end of the week.—If
sub. pr.

you thought it would be necessary for my nieces (to take)
sub. im. *que* *prissent*

a few lessons in French, I would engage a master.——
quelque *de Français*

(I have been told) that his daughters do not behave exactly
on m'a dit *se conduire* *tout-à-fait*

as they ought.——His wife always speaks of you as she

ought; (and I can add) with the greatest respect and
je puis même ajouter

(esteem.)
la plus grande estime

ARTICLE VII.

Of the Defective Verbs

***May*, *can*, *will*, *shall*, *would*, *could*, *should*, *might*, and *ought*.**

The words *will*, *would*, *should*, *may*, and *might*, which have hitherto been considered only as the distinguishing signs of the different

Tenses of Verbs, are also sometimes distinct Verbs of themselves, being expressed in French by the Tenses of the Verbs *vouloir*, *pouvoir*, and *devoir*, according to the following rules.

First General Rule.—When the words *will, would, may, can, could, might*, or *should*, are not connected with another Verb, but are the principal Verbs of a sentence, (which is generally the case when they are used in reply to a question), *will* and *would* expressing then determination, must be rendered in French by the different Tenses of *vouloir*, as—I will, *je le veux* or *je le veux bien*; I would, *je le voudrais* or *je le voudrais bien*; or if they are used in the negative, as—I will not, by *je ne le veux pas*, and—I would not, by *je ne le voudrais pas*, &c. according to the import of the sentence—*May, can, could*, or *might*, denoting possibility, are construed by the different Tenses of *pouvoir*; and *should* denoting necessity or duty, by those of *devoir*, as in the following examples:—Will you come to the country with me? yes, I will, *voulez-vous venir à la campagne avec moi? oui, je le veux bien*; why do you not write to them? because I will not, *pourquoi ne leur écrivez-vous pas? parce que je ne le veux pas*; why have you not been to see her? because I would not, *pourquoi n'êtes-vous pas allé la voir? parce que je ne l'ai pas voulu*; why does he not speak French? because he cannot, *pourquoi ne parle-t-il pas Français? parce qu'il ne peut pas*; have you lent him the money he asked you for? no, I could not, *lui avez-vous prêté l'argent qu'il vous a demandé? non, je n'ai pas pu*; is he acquainted with mathematics? I do not know, but he should be, *sait-il les mathématiques? je ne sais pas, mais il le devrait.*

The words *shall, will, would*, and *do*, when used in reply to a question, or to express an assent to the thing mentioned, are also frequently construed in French by the same Verb as that by which the question is asked, or simply by *oui, monsieur; oui, madame; oui, mademoiselle*; &c.: as—Will you do that? yes, I will, *voulez-vous faire cela? oui, je le ferai*; or, simply, *oui, monsieur, madame*, or *mademoiselle*.

But if the words *will, would, may, can, could, might*, or *should*, although preceding another Verb, be not the distinguishing signs of its Tenses, but Verbs distinct from it, intimating resolution, intention, &c. which is always the case when *will* can be changed into the Present of the Indicative of the Verbs *to be willing, desirous*, or similar ones—*would* into the Imperfect, Preterite, Conditional, or Imperfect of the Subjunctive of the same Verbs—*may, can, could*, or *might*, into the different Tenses of the Verb *to be able*, and *should* into those of *to be necessary*, or any other of the same signification, according to the import of the sentence, with *to* before the next Verb in the Present of the Infinitive, then *will* and *would* are always expressed by the different Tenses of *vouloir*; *may, can, could, might*, by those of *pouvoir*; and *should* by those of *devoir*, which are put in the same Tense in French in which the Verb *to be* is in English: as—He will not obey me; that is to say—he is not willing to obey me, *il ne veut pas m'obéir*; I could not go, meanin[illegible] was not able to go, *je ne pus pas y aller*; they could do it yeste[illegible] they were able to do it yesterday, *ils pouvaient le faire hie[illegible]* him, for—you are able to see him, *vous pouvez le voir.*

SECOND GENERAL RULE.—When the words *would, could, should, might,* or *ought,* are followed by the word *have* with the Past Participle of another Verb, as in these sentences—*he could* or *might have called on me;—you should have been there yesterday;—if they would have pursued him they would have caught him;—you should have paid her a visit since you knew she was returned;* they are expressed in French by the Imperfect or Conditional of the Verb *avoir* with one of the Past Participles *pu, dû,* or *voulu,* according to the import of the sentence, placing the following Verb which is in the Past Participle in English, in the Present of the Infinitive in French, if you speak of something past, as in the sentences already quoted; ex.—He could *or* might have called on me, *il aurait pu passer chez moi;* you should have been there yesterday, *vous auriez dû y aller hier;* if they would have pursued him they would have caught him, *s'ils avaient voulu le poursuivre, ils l'auraient attrapé;* you should have paid her a visit, since you knew she was returned, *vous auriez dû lui faire visite, puisque vous saviez qu'elle était de retour,* &c.

But if you speak of some thing future, as in the following sentences: *I could have arrived there before him, if I would; she could have written her exercise before you if she would;* you must then express *would, could, should,* or *might,* by the Conditional of one of the Verbs *pouvoir, vouloir,* or *devoir,* translating *have* by *avoir,* or *être,* according as either may be required, and putting the following Verb in the Past Participle in French, as it is in English: ex.—I could have arrived there before him if I would, *je pourrais y être arrivé avant lui, si je voulais;* she could have written her exercise before you if she would, *elle pourrait avoir écrit son thème avant vous, si elle voulait.*

Observe.—1. If the word *have* following *will* or *would* be accompanied by a Noun or a Pronoun, and a Verb in the Present of the Infinitive instead of the Past Participle, as in these sentences—*He will have you pay him immediately; I would not have her write to him*—*will* or *would* is to be construed by the different Tenses of the Verb *vouloir,* according to the import of the sentence, placing *que* or *qu'* immediately after, leaving out *have,* and using the Noun or Pronoun following, which is in the Accusative, as the Nominative of the next Verb which must be put in the Subjunctive Mood: as—He will have you pay him immediately, *il veut que vous le payiez sur le champ;* I would not have her write to him, *je ne voudrais pas qu'elle lui écrivît.*

2. The expressions *will have* or *would have,* used also as in these sentences—*which of these two books will you have? I would have them both;* are likewise expressed in French by the different Tenses of *vouloir,* without expressing *have:* as—Which of these two books will you have? *Lequel de ces deux livres voulez-vous?* I would have them both, *je les voudrais tous les deux.*

3. The Verb *can,* used in English in the sense of *to know,* is generally expressed in French by *savoir:* as—I can read and write, *je sais lire et écrire.*

4. The defective Verb *ought* is always construed in F[...]ch by either the Present, Imperfect, or Conditional of *devoir* [...]ding to the import of the sentence: as—You ought to [...] *vous devriez vous en souvenir.*

Remark.—As the words *would, could, should,* and *ought,* can equally be employed for the Imperfect, Preterite, and Conditional, in English, whenever a doubt arises in which Tense their corresponding Verbs *vouloir, pouvoir,* and *devoir,* should be used in French, *would,* as before observed, should be changed into the Imperfect, Preterite, Conditional, or Imperfect of the Subjunctive, of the Verbs *to be willing, desirous,* or any other of the same signification; *should* and *ought,* into those of *to be necessary,* and *could,* into those of the Verb *to be able,* according to the import of the sentence, putting the corresponding Verbs *vouloir, pouvoir,* and *devoir,* in the same Tense in French, in which the Verb *to be* is in English, and the difficulty will then vanish: Ex.—You ought to do that, that is to say, it would be necessary for you to do that, in which case *it would be necessary* being in the Conditional, must likewise be construed by the Conditional in French: as—You ought to do that, *vous devriez faire cela;* following the same method for any other sentence in which those Verbs occur.

EXERCISE.

Will you lend me the book which I mentioned to you some
dont parler
time ago? Yes, I will, provided you return it to
pourvu que sub. pr. rendre
me (in the course of) two or three days.—Why has not Mr. F***
dans
taken again the goods which he sold Miss P*** last
reprendre marchandise vendre à
month? Because he would not; and I think he was right.—
avoir raison
Will you (give me leave to visit) the Royal Arsenal? No; cer-
me permettre de voir
tainly, I will not.——Do you speak Italian fluently? No, I
coulamment
(cannot,) though I understand it very well.—I would mo[re]
ne saurais sub. pr.
willingly oblige you if I could; but money is so scarce that
pouvoir rare
I can hardly procure enough for myself.——Is* that
en trouver
young man (thoroughly acquainted with book-keeping?) I
sait-il-bien tenir les livres
do not know, but I think he should be, after he has had
so much experience.——You will have the goodness to read
de
the rules twice over, and then write the two
d'un bout à l'autre puis
exercises. [illegible] I will.—I (cannot impress too strongly upon
ne saurais trop vous recommander
your mind, [illegible]nt the public places of amuse-
lieu

ment, such as, the theatres, the operas, &c. No, madam,
tel que
you may rest assured that I will not.——Would
être certain
you have the kindness to put that letter in the post
à
for me? I would with pleasure, if you could lend
faire
me an umbrella.——(You must) tell him that he
parapluie Il faut
ought to* take you to the play three or four
devoir mener spectacle
times a year.—If you would have studied French, whilst
par pendant
you were in France, you might have learnt it in
que
(a short) time.—If the French would have pursued the
peu de
Russians, they might have taken all their ammunition.——You
munitions pl.
should have sent that to me, since you knew my direction.—
adresse
I could have finished my exercise yesterday as soon as
aussitôt que
you if I had been willing; but then it would not have
alors
been so well written as it is.——He ought to have
qu' l'
paid her a visit, being informed of her return.——I
instruire retour
know I could have finished my work before her if
que
I would; but of what use would it be?——Do you
utilité ce
think he could have sealed his letter in time, if he
sub. im. *cacheter*
would?——If I were in your stead, I would have him
pay me immediately, although I would not have him
sub. im. *sur-le-champ* sub. im.
suffer (by it.)——Well! which of these tw[...]tches will
en
you have? They are really so p[...]uld have
them both.—He is so ignora[...]ither read

nor write.—That storm lasted so long, and was so violent,
tempête durer
that you ought to rememb[illegible] I do not think he
se souv[illegible] sub. pr.
ought to* forgive his s[illegible] she asks his pardon.
sub. pr. *lui*
——Have you any idea that she would come with
sub. im.
us if I (were to ask her?) Yes, I am sure she would
l'en priais
not refuse you.—Is it probable you (could have obtained)
eussiez pu obtenir
the consent of her father, if I had not spoken in your favour?

END OF VOL. I.

MARCHANT, PRINTER, INGRAM-COURT, LONDON.